

P.F. 31868

UNIVERSITAT DE VALÈNCIA
Facultat de Filologia

Departament de Filologia Anglesa i Alemanya

RE-ENTRY PATTERNS IN BRITISH
BROADSHEET EDITORIALS



DOCTORAL THESIS

Presented by:

Barry Pennock Speck

Directed by

Dr Antonia Sánchez

Macarro

UMI Number: U603011

All rights reserved

INFORMATION TO ALL USERS

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted.

In the unlikely event that the author did not send a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.



UMI U603011

Published by ProQuest LLC 2014. Copyright in the Dissertation held by the Author.
Microform Edition © ProQuest LLC.

All rights reserved. This work is protected against
unauthorized copying under Title 17, United States Code.



ProQuest LLC
789 East Eisenhower Parkway
P.O. Box 1346
Ann Arbor, MI 48106-1346

①. 742748
x. 742761

Acknowledgments

First and foremost I would like to thank Dr Antonia Sánchez Macarro, the director of my thesis, for all her help in the choosing and collection of bibliography, the advice on the organization of this present work, and the critical reading of the many stages of this dissertation.

I would also like to mention the invaluable help given to me by Dr. Patricia Bou, Carmina Gregori and Dr María del Mar Martí who helped me with their comments on what I have written on topic, genre and repetition respectively. I would like to thank them for carrying out the laborious task of reading the proto-chapters of my thesis and their suggestions with a view to improving them.

Many thanks also to the lecturers in the English Language Unit for their encouragement and help especially Dr Miguel Fuster and Dr Juan José Calvo.

My greatest thanks, however, must go to my wife and children who have patiently borne the many hours I have been locked away in my study reading and writing this dissertation.

INDEX

I. INTRODUCTION

II. GENRE

II.1. Preamble	1
II.2. Genre, Register, Language	2
II.3. Newspaper Genres	7
II.3.1. Broadsheets and tabloids	9
II.3.2. Genres within newspapers	12
II.3.2.1. Editorials	14
II.4. Conclusion	23

III. TEXT, DISCOURSE, COHERENCE AND COHESION

III.1. Preliminary Comments	24
III.2. Text and Non-text	26
III.3. Textuality and Grammaticality	28
III.4. Surface Forms Versus Underlying Structure	29
III.5. Coherence	32
III.5.1. Text normality	33
III.5.2. Sequencing of events	37
III.5.3. Text completeness	38
III.5.4. Genre	40

III.6. Topic	41
III.6.1. Sentence Topic	42
III.6.1.1. Topic and subject	42
III.6.1.2. Sentence topic and theme	44
III.6.1.3. Concluding remarks on sentence topic	45
III.6.2. Discourse Topic	46
III.6.2.1. The nature of discourse topic	50
III.6.2.2. The importance of text-initial discourse topic	58
III.6.2.3. Discourse topic and text comprehension	61
III.6.2.4. Discourse topic & storage in long-term memory	62
III.6.2.5. Topic change and development	63
III.6.2.5. Sub-topics	69
III.6.2.6. Concluding remarks on DT	70
V.7. Concluding Remarks	70

IV. COHESION

IV.1. Cohesion and Repetition	74
IV.2. Cohesion and Text Organization	79
IV.3. Cohesive Relationships in Cohesion in English	79
IV.3.1. Referential cohesion	80
IV.3.1.1. Pronouns	82
IV.3.1.3. Comparatives	82
IV.3.1.4. Substitution	84
IV.3.1.5. Ellipsis	85
IV.3.1.6. Conjunction	86
IV.3.2. Critical review of <i>Cohesion in English</i>	87
IV.4. Lexical Chains in Language, Context, and Text: Aspects of Language in a Social-Semiotic Perspective	96

IV.5. A Comparative Study of the Writing of Scientific Texts. Focusing on Cohesion and Coherence.	103
IV.6. Patterns of Lexis in Text	105
IV.7. Concluding Remarks	116
V RE-ENTRY DEVICES	
V.1. Preamble	117
V.2. Re-entry and Style	118
V.3. Re-entry Through Pronouns or Noun-phrases	123
V.3.1. Pronouns as re-entry items	129
V.4.3.1.1. "It", "this" and "that"	130
V.4.3.1.2. Sentential "it"	130
V.4.3.1.3. Demonstrative Pronouns	133
V.3.2. Re-entry through noun phrases	134
V.3.2. 1. Lexical equivalence & repetition	134
V.3.2.2. Semantic re-entry with determiners	135
V.3.2.3. Re-entry with determiners: Classifiers	136
V.3.2.4. Frame-based Anaphora	138
V.3.2.5. Meronymy	138
V.3.2.6. Semantic field anaphora	139
V.3.2.7. Indirect Anaphora	140
V.3.2.8. Lexical Equivalence with Determiners	143
V.3.2.9. General nouns	145
V.3.2.10. Determiners preceding nouns	149
V.3.3. Problem Areas of Co-reference	153
V.3.3.1. Antonymy	154
V.3.3.2. Derivatives	154

V.3.3.3. Anaphoric Islands	155
V.3.3.4. Verbal antecedents	160
V.3.3.5. Substitution and Ellipsis	161
V.4. Conclusions	162
VI Approach adopted in this thesis for the analysis of the corpus	
VI.1. Preamble	163
VI.2. Personal Taxonomy of Re-entry Devices	166
VI.2.1. Pronouns	166
VI.2.2. Lexical repetition	167
VI.2.3. Text Equivalents	171
VI.2.4. Hyponyms and Superordinates	172
VI.2.5. Synonyms	173
VI.2.6. Determiners Noun-Determiners	173
VI.2.6.1. Lexical Repetition with Determiners	174
VI.2.6.2. Texts Equivalents with Determiners	175
VI.2.6.3. Hyponyms and Superordinates with Determiners	176
VI.2.6.4. Synonyms with Determiners	177
VI.2.7. Pro-forms	177
VI.2.8. Demonstrative Pronoun Reference	178
VI.2.9. Substitution and Ellipsis	178
VI.2.10. Comparatives	180
VI.2.11. Pseudo-cohesive or “connex” relationships not included in the analysis	180
VI.2.11.1. Collocation	180
VI.2.11.2. Homophoric reference	181
VI.2.11.3. Exophoric time expressions	182

VI.2.11.4. Resemblance to previous expression	182
VI.2.12. Untriggered elements	183
VI.3. Concluding remarks	183
VII RESEARCH HYPOTHESES AND OBJECTIVES	
V11.1. Preamble	184
V11.2. Hypotheses	185
V11.3. Objectives	185
V11.4. Objectives	189
VIII RESEARCH METHODOLOGY	
V111.1. Preamble	190
V111.2. Selection of the Corpus	190
VIII.2.1. Computers and the analysis of the corpus	194
VIII.3. Methodology of Analysis	197
VIII.3.1. Elements accompanying re-entry devices	203
VIII.3.2. Discovering the relative weight of re-entry items and syntagmatic association	205
VIII.4. Concluding remarks	209
IX ANALYSIS OF THE DATA	
IX.1. Preamble	210
IX.2. Types of re-entry items	210
IX.2.1. Differences between broadsheets	213

IX.3. Re-entry Patterns and Information Structure	213
IX.3.1. Differences between broadsheets	216
IX.3.2. DTs and re-entry devices	217
IX.4. Other Factors Influencing the Patterns of Re-entry	220
IX.4.1. Ellipsis	221
IX.4.1. Hyponyms	221
IX.4.3. Pronouns	222
IX.5. Metadiscursive Nouns	222
IX.5.1. Metadiscursive and non-metadiscursive a-noun headwords	224
IX.5.2. Non-metadiscursive A-nouns	227
IX. 5.3. Demonstrative pronoun reference	231
IX.6. Length of text and re-entry	233
IX.7. Pronouns and Paragraph Boundaries	236
IX.8. Syntagmatic Association and Re-entry	237
IX.9. Concluding Remarks	240

X CONCLUSIONS

X.1. Differences between broadsheets: correlations between linguistic and extra-linguistic factors	241
X.2. Patterns of re-entry in broadsheets	243
X.3. DT and re-entry	248
X.4. Metadiscursive nouns	249
X.4. Re-entry items and length of text	255
X.5. Syntagmatic Association	256

X.6. Pedagogical Implications of this dissertation 250

X1 BIBLIOGRAPHY 264

Appendix 1 304

Appendix 2 366

Appendix 2 562

I. INTRODUCTION

This doctoral thesis, from a taxonomic point of view, can be included in the field of general linguistics that has come to be known as discourse analysis. More precisely it belongs to one of the sub-fields of studies on discourse, i.e., coherence and cohesion. As discourse is a term that covers a multitude of different manifestations of linguistic communication, which are beyond the scope of any one researcher, I have centred my attention on one particular kind of written discourse within a genre known as newspaper discourse, namely, newspaper editorials.

The first question one might ask could be: Why study newspaper texts and not others? This is answered admirably by Wallace (1977: 49 [Cited in Jucker 1992]):

The restricted language of newspapers, *journalese*, is an excellent subject for empirical research into register variation, because it forms a large convenient corpus, contains several registers, all associated by certain shared features, and is recognized as such by those who use it. Thus we can examine not only the variation in features, but also how the users of this language view what is appropriate to it.

My starting point for the dissertation is that newspaper editorials are not only different from other newspaper sub-genres but from all other types of written communication. In fact this could be said of any genre. It is also my belief that one of the factors that distinguishes newspaper

editorials from other types of written communication is their structure and how said structure affects the type and number of cohesive devices. This belief underlies a hypothesis of a general kind that if genres exist, they must at some, or all, levels be manifested by surface features peculiar to one particular genre or sub-genre. The fact that sometimes these surface phenomena are implicit does not, in my opinion, make this statement any less true. In stylistic studies the absence of a feature may be just as significant as the presence of one.

The range of fields that I have covered in this dissertation has had to be, perforce, eclectic as the area under analysis covers several areas of linguistic research and goes from genre analysis to the study of cohesion and coherence. The emphasis on surface structure, mentioned in the last paragraph, has also affected the choice of approach with which to tackle the analysis of the corpus.

There are still —due to the enormous output over the last twenty to thirty years— basically two main ways of looking at text/discourse in modern linguistics, the one propounded by the textlinguists, among them van Dijk (1972, 1977), Bernárdez (1982, 1987), de Beaugrande & Dressler (1981) to mention just a few, and the approach adopted by British linguists, notably Halliday & Hasan (1976), Hoey (1991), Francis (1986, 1995) and McCarthy (1994). The latter group represents a less mentalistic view of text and discourse which attempts to find the keys to what is expressed in the text itself, rather than looking at a more abstract deep structure.

Of course, both approaches have moved closer together over the years and have taken on board, or at least taken into account, many ideas

from pragmatics, relevance theory, research on Artificial Intelligence, Schema theory, etc. However, as the British approach lends itself better to the stylistic bias of this dissertation, it is the one I have chosen.

To carry out my analysis I have chosen a corpus of newspaper editorials from four weekly British broadsheet newspapers: *The Times*, *The Telegraph*, *The Independent* and *The Guardian*. The first reason for carrying out analysis on a single sub-genre is that in this way it is possible to look at more texts and go into more detail than if various are chosen. Another reason is given by Jucker (1992: 12):

The texts that are to be compared have to be sufficiently similar as far as their context of production is concerned in order to allow for a valid comparison.

Many studies have been carried out on single genres. In the case of newspapers, Jucker (1992) mentions that some researchers analyzed only one newspaper, e.g., Carter (1988), Ghadessy (1988), Bolívar (1994, 1995). Another of the advantages of doing a detailed analysis of one genre, or sub-genre, is that later comparative studies can always be carried out on other genres.

At this point I feel it might be useful to the reader to know the motivations that have led me to choose the topic of coherence and cohesion in discourse. The present work is the culmination of several years of interest in the study of why written texts cohere and the means at our disposal to achieve this end. In this respect, I would hope that my research will be useful in broadening the knowledge we have of the way texts hang together, not only on a theoretical level, although as academics, we are, *ex-officio*, interested in knowledge for its own sake,

but also on a practical level, that is, in our teaching of English as a foreign language and in the teaching of linguistics.

I am firmly convinced that the traditional study of phonology, morphology, syntax, lexis and semantics must be complemented by the, at this point in time, almost traditional fields of discourse analysis, pragmatics, psycholinguistics, and cognitive linguistics if we are to come to a fuller understanding of how languages work.

Resistance to a holistic view of language has had the effect of atomizing linguistic research into and converting the vast study of language into hermetically closed compartments where linguists carry out their work in separate “hives” to use Ventola’s term (1996). Research on linguistics is plagued with dogmas new and old. To carry on with Ventola’s analogy, only the honey produced by the hive we belong to is good honey and that produced by others is ignored.

For instance, what constituted the only supposedly serious study of language not so long ago, the sentence and its parts, has been followed by the study of human discourse beyond the sentence, which itself has almost become the new dogma.

The old dichotomy between sentential linguistics (for want of a better term) and discourse linguistics has, in part, been forgotten and indeed ought to be forgotten as linguists should be interested in all aspects of human language, even if they specialize in only one. The present study is, among other things, an attempt to use both the sentential perspective, the parsing of each sentence in the editorials, with the

discourse perspective to come to a greater understanding of how texts hold together.

A corollary of this stance on linguistics is the belief that the writer of the text is not the only one responsible for the meanings it contains. The role of the reader in creating meaning, although still a source of polemics, is now generally held to be of capital importance. This point of view is tacitly supported by most researchers and is supported by Hind's (1987) view that texts may be "reader-responsible" or "writer responsible", i.e., in some texts the onus is on the reader to supply the organization of the text while in others it is the writer who does all the work for the reader.

The study of written texts can be said to have gone through at least three stages, in the first stage it was the author of the text, usually male, who was responsible for the meaning therein —clearly showing the literary origins of genre studies. In consequence, the meaning of texts was sought not only in the text itself but in the life and times of the author. In the next stage, roughly coinciding with the rise of the study of semiotics, it was the text itself which became the centre of the attention of researchers. This was partly due to a reaction against the research done in stage one. The third stage, at the forefront of which can be found Iser (1975), emphasizes to varying degrees the importance of the reader in creating meaning. A fourth approach, which I think is implicit in all three former stages, is the need to take into account all three stages, or at least the last two, when attempting to arrive at the meaning in a text. Although this dissertation will centre on broadsheet editorial texts themselves, the reader, albeit implicitly, will be lurking in the background.

There are two main purposes for writing this dissertation and both have to do with the dual nature of our work as researchers and teachers. The first is to make a contribution, however small it may be, to our knowledge about the myriad manifestations of language, and more specifically, to the study of the English language. This aim is what I will look at in the next few paragraphs. Secondly, one of the professional objectives of any teacher should be to improve our knowledge of language so as to impart classes more efficiently and professionally.

The main aim of this dissertation, with regards to improving, or widening our knowledge of language, is to show that broadsheet newspaper editorials, as a genre (or sub-genre) do share similarities with regards to the cohesive patterns that are manifest in them and attempt to identify these patterns. The idea of looking at cohesion with a view to analyzing a genre stylistically is not original. Hendricks (1976), in *Grammars of Style and Styles of Grammar*, reviews the way various authors have tackled the subject of cohesion in the study of stylistics. Two of the authors he mentions, Halliday & Hasan, in the seminal work, *Cohesion in English* (1976), point out that one of the major differences between written and spoken language derives from the cohesive devices used.

the forms taken by the cohesive relation will differ: texture in informal conversation is quite unlike that in formal written language, which is one reason why the former looks strange when written down and the latter sounds odd when read aloud.

(1976: 25)

However, in spite of identifying the contribution of cohesive devices to the style of texts, Hendricks and the authors he mentions do not carry

out an exhaustive analysis of newspaper texts or other genres with regards to anaphoric devices but simply outline what coherence relations might exist in them.

The fact that I am considering anaphoric relations in newspaper editorials does not mean that the aim of the analysis is to prove that said texts belong to a particular genre. That they do form a genre is obvious even to the least linguistically aware layperson. The similarities between broadsheet editorials as regards length of the articles, graphological devices, lexical items, and syntax when compared to tabloid editorials is clear from a short glance. The rationale behind my analysis is to show that cohesive patterns are stylistically relevant and that patterns of use do appear.

In this sense my hypothesis is that any analysis of newspaper editorials from the point of view of the cohesive patterns that can be found therein, should point to a difference not only between two different kinds of newspapers —those belonging to the quality press and those usually called tabloids— as these are quite obvious—but also to differences between the broadsheets themselves.

Notwithstanding that fact, my second hypothesis is that all broadsheet newspaper editorials do have enough in common to form a branch of the sub-genre “editorial” and that one of the many reasons that sets them apart from their tabloid counterparts, or other genres for that matter, is their unique use of cohesive devices.

I am aware that when looking at the cohesive strategies used in broadsheets, the interesting features that I may bring to light, if any,

will be rather subtle and may amount to little more than slight qualitative differences due to quantitative variations, which may, in turn, not be very large. In other words, I expect to find similar features in all the broadsheet editorials under scrutiny but one feature may be much more, or slightly more, common in one editorial than in another. A feature which is only found in one type of text, or found in greater numbers, is, *per se*, a stylistically relevant feature and would, therefore point to a relevant stylistic difference. Features such as these are what I am looking for. For instance, one of my hypotheses is that certain types of cohesive devices, e.g., “metadiscursive anaphoric nouns”, will be predominant in editorials.

A further hypothesis is that the notion “discourse topic” will be a significant player in the use of cohesive devices in newspaper texts as discourse topic is, in my opinion, an important part of text coherence.

I also suspect that length of text will be of import when looking at the use and relative number of cohesive devices. This also applies to the number of paragraphs per editorial and mean sentence length.

With regards to the second aim of this investigation, I believe that notwithstanding the enormous progress achieved by those who have done research into discourse analysis, there is still lots of room for improvement with regards to making the theoretical advances that have been made in this area useful to students of English through their incorporation into our teaching practice. The study of anaphoric relations in a text, which is closely connected with a text’s rhetorical structure, still has a long way to go to become an efficient tool in the teacher’s armoury.

From a pedagogical point of view I feel that anaphoric relationships in the shape of linking devices, pronoun reference, anaphoric nouns, and other devices, are important in any genre and therefore of interest to both teachers and students of general and specific kinds of English. In the light of a genre-analysis approach, our teaching will be more effective if we make the student aware that language is always bound to specific contexts, specific communicative goals, and specific intended audiences.

What remains of this introduction will consist of an outline of the structure of this thesis, which has been divided into ten chapters. I will describe each of these chapters and attempt to show where they fit into the organization of this dissertation in order to justify the appropriateness of the literature that I have consulted and the procedure followed in this research.

This doctoral dissertation follows the traditional methodology of empirical research in which a corpus is chosen and analyzed using the methodology and approach that have been designed by the researcher after the study of the pertinent scientific literature. It can, therefore be divided into four main sections, e.g., the review of the literature chapters III, IV and V, the preparation of the empirical research and its fruition, chapters VI, VII and VIII, the conclusions gathered from the results of the analysis, and finally the bibliography and appendices.

The second chapter starts with an introduction to the study of genre, followed by a look at the definitions of genre, register and language. Firstly I discuss the importance of genre when analyzing any type of

text. In this respect I see genre as what Hendricks (1976) calls “group “styles”, that is, styles shared by the writers of a particular kind of written or oral language, which normally bring with them their own goals and aims.

Next I look at the differences between terms that are often used synonymously such as genre and register and how extra-linguistic factors such as the society our discourse is carried out in may help to differentiate these terms. I identify two main groups of practitioners in genre theory, those who work mainly in the fields of ESP such as Widdowson (1978) and Swales (1971) and the systemic model pioneered by Kress (1985, Martin (1992), Ventola (1984) and Downing (1995). A third approach embodied by the work of Fairclough (1995) is also identified.

The question of variety within the newspaper is tackled next. It is, clear that there are different audiences made up of different socio-economic groups and that newspapers can be identified as belonging to one socio-economic group or another based literally, in this case, on the type of paper they are written on, in other words, the smaller tabloids are down-market and the larger broadsheets cater for the upper echelons of society. At the same time, I also look at various ways that tabloids and broadsheets can be identified using linguistic criteria.

The section that follows describes the newspaper genre and how it is perceived as a separate extra-linguistic entity by the public in general. Linguistic criteria is, of course, also taken into account to differentiate newspapers from other kinds of genres (Jucker 1992).

I continue by tackling the issue of different genres that exist side-by-side within the newspaper genre. Common to all newspapers, no matter what social group they appeal to, are sub-genres within the newspaper format. The existence of these sub-genres leads to a large amount of linguistic heterogeneity as the texts to be found in newspapers can be radically different. Many authors: Crystal & Davy (1969), Bell (1991), and Bhatia (1983) have pointed this out.

The final section of this chapter is devoted to editorials and some of the characteristics that make them different from other sub-genres within the newspaper genre. For this task I use insights provided by Bhattia (1988), Bolívar (1994), Goatley (1994) and Fowler (1991).

Chapter III is, as I have already pointed out, is an introduction to chapters IV and V, on cohesion, and re-entry, respectively. In chapter IV I start by reviewing the notions of text and discourse, seen mainly from a discourse analysis and text-linguistic point of view. This is followed by a description of what constitutes a text and the importance of the notion of coherence as a means of identifying it.

The next sections are dedicated to a more detailed description of coherence and coherent texts. Such notions as “text normality”, temporal linearity, sequencing, completeness and genre are discussed. These sections are followed by a description of the term “topic” and “discourse topic”. Several sections are dedicated to these concepts due to their importance vis-à-vis the notion of coherence and the concept of re-entry in this dissertation and due to the fact that these concepts are often confused with others.

Chapter IV is, in a certain sense, a continuation of the last chapter. Cohesion and coherence are so tightly linked that it is almost impossible to talk about one without mentioning the other. In the first section of this chapter, I go over the differences between coherence, cohesion, and connex expressions. This is followed by a section on repetition, an important issue in the study of cohesion.

The sections that follow are slightly different from the previous ones in the same chapter and from chapter III in that they attempt to summarize four important pieces of research into cohesion carried out by British linguists. The first is Halliday & Hasan's (1976) *Cohesion in English*, which serves as an introduction to anaphoric ties. The second is a review of *Language, Context, and Text: Aspects of Language in a Social-Semiotic Perspective*, focusing especially on cohesive chains. There follows a review of Parsons' (1990) *A Comparative Study of the Writing of Scientific Texts. Focusing on Cohesion and Coherence*. In this monograph Parsons puts into practice Hasan's (1985) lexical chains to analyze whether certain foreign-learner texts are coherent. Finally, I review Hoey's (1991) *Patterns of Lexis in Text*. In this book Hoey explores the coherence of text through lexical relations

Chapter V is the final chapter in the trilogy beginning with chapter III. In it I describe and discuss the many types of re-entry items that exist and limit the scope of the thesis by excluding other kinds of cohesive phenomena.

After the introductory paragraphs, I review what several authors, especially Hendricks (1976), Dillon (1981) and Padueva (1968) have to

say about re-entry and style, one of the pillars of this thesis. I also discuss in more detail, the concept of “group styles”, that is, genre, and its relation to re-entry.

The following sections are dedicated to the description of the various kinds of pronoun and noun-phrase re-entry devices. I look at the consequences of using pronouns instead of noun-phrases and *vice-versa*. As re-entry with noun-phrases includes several types of semantic relationships, these are dealt with in depth. Finally, the issue of problematic cases of re-entry is looked into.

Chapter VI is a bridge between the review of the literature and the preparation for the analysis of the corpus. In it I state the approach that I feel is most suitable for my purposes. The approach chosen, which I described above, is a result of my research into coherence, cohesion and re-entry coupled with my interest in genre.

Due to my interest in the analysis of cohesive devices in discourse, I tend towards the British branch of Discourse Analysis initiated by Halliday & Hasan (1976, 1985) and continued by Hoey (1991), Francis (1986, 1995), McCarthy (1994) and many others. I explain, however, that this bias is tempered by my interest in other schools, notably that of Textlinguistics, exponents of which are van Dijk (1972, 1977, 1978, 1983, 1986, 1988a, 1998b, 1998c), Charolles, Petöfi & Sözer (1986), Giora (1984, 1985) and others.

I also propose a personal taxonomy of re-entry devices that I have selected to carry out the analysis. I am heavily indebted to Halliday &

Hasan (1976, 1985), Hoey (1991), McCarthy (1994) and Francis (1986, 1995) for their insights.

Chapter VII is the first of three chapters concerned with the various stages of the design and analysis of the corpus. It deals with the hypotheses that have arisen during my reading of the literature on genre, coherence, cohesion and re-entry. It also states the objectives of the dissertation that come about as a response to the need to prove or disprove the hypotheses that precede them.

In chapter VIII, I explicate the methodology that I have used to carry out the analysis of the corpus. The first sections describe the process I have chosen to select the corpus of broadsheet editorials. The rest of the chapter details the different types of analysis I intend to apply to it. These include the search for the discourse topic of each editorial and the parsing of each text to discover the re-entry items contained in them. I also describe how the Excel spreadsheets are used and provide examples from them.

Chapter IX contains the results of the analysis which show whether my hypotheses are well-founded or not. The data I have collected mainly takes the form of tables and graphs which are generally based on the Excel spreadsheet data that can be found in appendix 1. The data gathered during the statistical study I carry out is then subject to a preliminary interpretation as data, without interpretation, is worthless, as Butler (1985: 150) points out in his description of the study of correlation:

It must never be forgotten ... that the statistical study of correlation merely tests for a significant *mathematical* relationship between values for the variables concerned. It will not tell us how such correlations should be interpreted; still less will it give us direct information about causes and their effects.

The last chapter, chapter X, describes the conclusions that I have come to. These conclusions, of course, compare the expectations that I describe in chapter VII with the results of the interpretation of the analysis. I also discuss the design of the analysis and the methodology used. At the end of chapter XI discuss the pedagogical implications of my research with a view to improving the way I impart my classes .

Finally, I include the bibliography employed in the writing of the dissertation and three appendices. I have included both the bibliography cited in the thesis and the books and articles that have helped me to form an opinion in its writing but which I have not cited explicitly.

The first appendix includes the editorials that make up my main corpus. All the editorials have been scanned and converted into Microsoft Word documents. The reason for this is that it is easier to parse and analyse the texts in electronic form. The second appendix comprises the result of the parsing of the editorials using Microsoft Excel spreadsheets. This has been done to analyse the re-entry devices and carry out a statistical analysis on them. The third appendix includes a series of tables and graphs that complement chapter IX.

II. GENRE

II.1. Preamble

In this chapter I propose to review what I consider to be the pertinent literature in the field of genre starting with a justification of the use of this concept. The importance of the discussion of genre in this dissertation cannot be overestimated. The study of any kind of text or discourse is implicitly or explicitly based on the notion that there are different kinds of text/discourses which can be grouped together in a more or less clear-cut fashion. What is more, it is generally acknowledged that each set of texts that we feel belongs together share (i) cognitive elements: themes, goals, plans, schemata; (ii) situational elements: context of situation and participants and (iii) linguistic elements. The linguistic elements cover all levels, phonological, morphological, syntactic, lexical, semantic and textual.

In the present dissertation I will be concerned mainly with the lexicogrammatical level, the textual level and the rhetorical structure of written interaction as seen in the research carried out in studies on ESP and from within the Hallidayan tradition. Once I have come to a definition of genre I will attempt to outline what makes the different types of newspaper genres different from other genres and what separates the editorial from other kinds of journalistic language.

II.2. Genre, Register, Language

Genre has traditionally been seen as an exclusively literary term¹ and only in the last twenty or thirty years has it been used in non-literary spheres. Various terms are used to describe the area of study generally attributed to register or genre analysis. Biber (1985, 1986, 1988, 1995, Biber & Finegan 1994) has published widely in the field of register studies. He states that “there is no general consensus within sociolinguistics concerning the use of *register* and related terms such as *genre* and *style*” (Biber 1995: 8).

The linguistic study of genre overlaps considerably with several disciplines such as sociolinguistics (Trudgill 1974, Wardaugh 1986), which analyzes occupational varieties of discourse; stylistics, which covers both literary and non-literary texts (Sinclair 1966; Crystal & Davy 1969; Halliday 1971; Hasan 1975; Widdowson 1975; Carter & Nash 1990); and text typology (Bühler 1934; Reiß 1976; Newmark 1988), which is widely used among researchers in translation. All four of these disciplines are interested in the differences between genres and the essential make-up of each particular genre. The main difference between Genre Analysis and the three earlier disciplines is the onus on genres as social entities, which we shall be looking at later on in this chapter.

There are two main research branches in Genre Analysis. On the one hand, several British and American researchers work on genre from

¹ “A French term for a kind, a literary type or class” (Cuddon, J. A. 1977: 285).

within the field of ESP: Ewer, J.R. (1979); Lackstrom (1978); Selinker (1979); Swales, J. (1981, 1985, 1990); Widdowson, H.,(1975). On the other, researchers in the systemic-functional tradition, based mainly in Britain and Australia, have also looked at genres within the systemic-functional paradigm Kress (1985), Ventola (1984); Martin (1992), Eggins (1994), Downing (1995), Vázquez (1995). The main difference between those researchers working from within the field of ESP and those working in the Systemic-functional is the type of discourses that they study. Moreover, the former seem more interested in the empirical study of genre analysis while the latter delve more deeply into the nature of genre in general. However, both disciplines have enough in common for their conclusions to be complementary and non-contradictory.

Several authors (Kress 1985; Dixon 1987; Todorov 1991, Ventola 1984) emphasize that genre is a socially defined concept. Kress calls genre a “linguistic-social category” (1985: 35). As such, genre exists in the minds of the producers of any language even before a text is written. This is the view forwarded by the literary critic, (Todorov 1991:17-18):

In a given society, the recurrence of certain discursive properties is institutionalized, and individual texts are produced and perceived in relation to the norm constituted by that codification. A genre, whether literary or not, is nothing other than the codification of discursive properties.

That genre is a social phenomenon is beyond question, what, however, remains to be agreed upon is the exact nature of genre and its relationship to both register and language. Recently some of the most

interesting work on genres has been produced in systemic-functional circles (Ventola, J. R. Martin, Egginton, Downing, Vázquez, etc). However, before the term genre² became common usage in systemics, register was the concept that was felt to unite linguistic and extra-linguistic levels. According to Hasan (1978) variation in language can be explained by cumulative variables in field, tenor and mode of discourse together with the situational context.

At first glance genre might be thought to be explained sufficiently by field -the nature of the social action taking place- but the participants (tenor) and the channel (mode) are also important variables. Each instance of the interaction of field, tenor, mode and the situational context make up the contextual construct. Constructs of this kind have extra-linguistic contextual configurations called generalized structural formulae which determine the compulsory elements and their sequential ordering³.

In the Hallidayan tradition genre has ousted register as this term was felt to be an inadequate tool to describe all variations in language. Downing (1995: 23) mentions sports commentary in which the sporting event taking place is one field while the commentary on it is another field, and at the same time, mode. Martin (1994) claims that genre is on a more abstract level than register, which, in turn is on a more abstract level than language.

² Both in Hasan (1978) and Halliday and Hasan (1980) genre and register are used as synonyms. The reason why register was used more extensively was probably due to the feeling that genre was a literary term.

³ Ventola (1987) argues that a more dynamic view of view of genre is needed and should include the possibility of the omission of certain "compulsory" elements and should also take into account recursiveness. She also claims that the role of non-linguistic systems should be accounted for.

My position is that language does form a separate level from register. Field, mode, and tenor all influence the language we use in a particular context of situation, but not to the extent that they dictate the exact surface forms used. Language is, therefore, the non-automatic verbal instantiation of each configuration of register in a “specific extralinguistic situation” (Hasan, 1978: 231). This view allows us to see language as what it is -yet another variable, which is, intrinsically connected to a particular genre, or register, but also separate from them. This means that in identical communicative situations the surface forms used may be, and normally are, different every time.

How genres such as travel agency service-encounters, commercial letters or research articles are instantiated in language constitutes a complex issue as we have to take into account so many variables. The language used in a genre is hardly ever predictable because of the mediation of register and thus explains the problems we come across when we “attempt to make social categories match up with linguistic patterns” (Downing, 1995: 25).

Vázquez (1995: 28) argues that the missing element in the systemic view of genre is the intention of the speaker or writer, namely, his or her goal in communicating in the first place. He explains that this may be due to Halliday’s reluctance to use terms found in the field of pragmatics. Downing (1995: 24) agrees and claims Halliday has “consistently avoided admitting to a psychological construct such as purpose or intention”. According to Downing (1995), other authors,

Goatley (1994) and Martin (1992), assign purpose (a synonym of goal) to field and genre respectively.

At this point it is important to differentiate the goals that an author has and the goals that a participant or character in a text may have. In the first case, goals exist presumably before a text or discourse exists and in the second case only once a text or discourse has been produced. Once a goal exists the attention of the language producer must be focused on those plans, or courses of action, verbal or otherwise, that are needed to carry out his or her purpose. Such plans, for instance, the wish to convince a reader of a particular opinion, must be instantiated in language, which, in the case of written texts⁴, means words, sentences, paragraphs and topic, to mention but a few of the elements.

One of the hypotheses expressed in the introduction states that each genre must have typical ways of being instantiated. This means that many times we can map our goals onto particular rhetorical and verbal strategies. I would argue that topic development is an example of how the authors' goals in the editorial genre have typical realizations that are peculiar to that kind of text. Hypothetically it is also possible that patterns of cohesion are also molded by the genre.

A rather different view of the relationship between language and genre is supplied by Fairclough (1995). Although he uses much of the systemic-functional terminology he sees genre, "a way of using language which corresponds to the nature of the social practice that is being

⁴ We must bear in mind that in written texts the author does not know if the goal has been achieved at every stage so, of course, no compensatory action can take place.

engaged in” (Fairclough 1995: 76). In other words, genre is made up of “discourses”, which pertain to “knowledge and knowledge construction” (Fairclough 1995: 56). His definitions of genre and discourses are quite confusing and seem to fly in the face of the systemic view. For instance, he says

discourse types often draw upon two or more genres -some types of job interview, for instance, have developed a discourse type which mixes interview genres with informal conversation

(Fairclough 1995: 76)

This must mean that discourse types comprise genres that comprise discourse types. Of course, Fairclough needs the notion of discourse to forward his view that all discourse (in the usual sense) constitutes ideology. Fairclough, however, does supply one very useful insight, namely that there are discourses which are “closely modeled on single genres” (Fairclough 1995: 76). It is easier to understand this if we say that there are genres that can include other genres and those that do not. Fairclough mentions the party political broadcast, which can include interviews, fireside chats, etc. as an example of the genre-within-the-genre type; and other genres that are normally less complex in this respect, for instance, the editorial.

II.3. Newspaper Genres

If we were to ask almost anyone who speaks English to mention different styles of language it would be very strange not to hear newspaper language mentioned. Most people in the English speaking language community would be able to distinguish the language of a newspaper article from a recipe or a prayer, for instance, without any

difficulty. Many authors tacitly or explicitly recognize the fact that newspapers form a genre by themselves, for instance, Crystal and Davy (1969), Hughes (1984), Carter & Nash (1990), Bell (1991), Fowler (1991), Jucker (1992), Bhatia (1993), Biber (1988, 1995), Bolívar (1995). Jucker (1992) claims that this must be because journalese has certain characteristic linguistic patterns:

Newspaper language is a variety to the extent that it has linguistic features that distinguish it from other varieties. It is obviously part of the larger variety of media language as a whole, and -on a different level- it is part of the variety of written language.

(Jucker 1992: 25)

Many ordinary readers would be capable of mentioning specific kinds of newspaper language, such is the popularity of this written form of communication. It is also true that language alone is not the only factor that separates newspapers from other genres. In fact, language, might not even be the most important factor that characterizes newspapers. Jucker (1992:3) states that

... all newspapers share a large number of non-linguistic discourse features. The language is transmitted in printed form, and it is public in that it is intended for a very large audience.

Jucker therefore tacitly agrees that genre is a social phenomenon instantiated through language.

In Britain, furthermore, most newspaper readers would be able to place newspapers in categories according to the audience they are designed for. As I wish to begin the task of distinguishing newspaper genres in order to analyze them more efficiently I shall start, in the next

section, by looking into the difference between the two major types of British newspapers, the so-called quality newspaper and the tabloids.

II.3.1. Broadsheets and tabloids

The first thing that anyone would notice about upmarket and downmarket newspapers is not the style that they use, however different this may be, but their actual physical appearance, which accounts for one set of names given to these two newspaper-types: broadsheets and tabloids. As the names imply, the broadsheets are larger in format than the tabloids. I believe that the size of each type of newspaper is not completely independent of their content, the news, for example, in tabloids is often shorter than in broadsheets.

The format of the tabloids can be described as “flashier”, while the broadsheets are more conservative, no matter what their political stance may be. According to Hughes (1984), tabloid journalism is known for being “superficial, sensationalist, limited, bigoted and cheap in all senses” (1984: 129). He summarizes the differences between the two:

Certain broad generalizations can be made about the news-style of the “quality” press; as opposed to the “popular” press. The “popular” press relies on a sensational treatment of a small segment of the news, one which may be banal or momentous. This it achieves by emphasis on a few “stories” arranged hierarchically on the front page, with top priority given to “human interest” or rarity items. These are dramatized by large headlines, powerful emotive language and the impact of sizeable, close-up photographs invariably “cropped” out of their original shape. Contrariwise, the “quality” paper attempts to give a more balanced and sober “spread” of news with emphasis on world

events presented in neutral language, with smaller, rectangular photographs being used to create interest, but not drama.

(Hughes, 1984: 131-2)

While agreeing that the two types of newspapers exist, Jucker (1992) criticises the use of the terms "quality" and "popular" as the first is a value judgement and the second is erroneous as the "qualities" are popular too. Both newspaper types share the same kind of content, news reports, editorials, film and theatre reviews, advertisements, cartoon strips, etc. It is true that tabloids feature national news much more than broadsheets. In general, the broadsheets include more sections than the tabloids. As far as goals are concerned, Crystal and Davy (1969: 174) claim that their aims are quite similar:

they are both concerned to present a certain number of facts in as interesting a manner as possible to audiences whose constitution they are fairly clear about. Also, the general pressures working on the authors are the same —the need for compression of the information into a limited space, the need for clarity, the avoidance of ambiguity, and so on.

Jucker (1992: 2) points out that tabloids and broadsheets aim to inform their readers and entertain them at the same time but that entertainment is a higher priority for the tabloids.

In order to explain the differences between the two main styles from the producer's point of view, Bell (1991: 104-106) mentions two approaches that analyze "style shift", **audience design**, forwarded by Bell himself (1984b) which is based on the work done by Labov (1966, 1972a) and **accomodation theory** defended by Giles & Powesland (1975); Thakerer et al. (1982); Giles et al. (1987); and Coupland et al. (1988). Audience design looks at two parameters which influence the

style of a speaker. The first is that of the “inter-speaker” which corresponds to characteristics of a social kind: age, gender, social class of the speaker. The second factor, the “intra-speaker” dimension, has to do with the way speakers adapt their speech to the kind of listeners they have. The proponents of the second approach, accommodation theory, claim that the primary factor in the style that speakers adopt is the influence of their audience. In both approaches the target audience is the main factor which determines which style a speaker, or, in the case of newspapers, the journalists use.

The influence of the reader in newspaper style is supported by the research carried out by Bell (1977, 1985, 1988) and Jucker (1989). Bell (1991: 107-108) states that, in his studies on the deletion of determiners in appositional naming expressions, this practice was more common in papers like *The Sun*, *The Mirror*, *The Express* than in *The Telegraph*, *The Guardian* and *The Times*. The deletions were found in greater numbers in papers catering for lower socio-economic classes.

After studying the deletion of determiners Jucker (1989) was able to divide British newspapers into the three categories below. He found that determiners were deleted more often in Downmarket papers than in Midmarket papers. There were relatively very few deletions in the Upmarket papers. He was able to correlate a difference in style with a certain type of reader. Jucker (1989) divides British newspapers into three categories.

Upmarket:	The Times, Financial Times, Guardian, Independent, Daily Telegraph
Midmarket:	Daily Mail, Daily Express, Today

Downmarket: Daily Mirror, Star, Sun.

The writers mentioned in this section all maintain that that tabloids and broadsheets are different in almost every way. This would seem to lend support to my view that such variations warrant comparing the discourse in the two newspaper-types to discover the differences between them and/or study either type to find out what makes them unique.

II.3.2. Genres within newspapers

In the rest of this chapter I shall look at the various genres found in newspapers. Stylistically all newspaper genres are supposed to be couched in a type of language known as "journalese". However, Crystal and Davy (1969:173) warn that the very fact that there are several identifiable genres within the pages of a daily newspaper makes journalese a rather heterogeneous style:

It seems that the concept of 'the language of newspaper reporting' is not as meaningful as is generally assumed. There is not one, but a number of 'journalese' that can be found between the pages of the daily and weekly press; and while they do have a certain amount in common, their overall styles are very different.

That such a thing as journalese exists is doubted by no one although once we begin to analyze the content of newspapers beyond headline language, we find that it is often not such an easy task to differentiate one genre from another as we might think. According to Bell (1991), a former journalist, there are two main genres in newspapers, "editorial"

and “advertising”. He states (1991: 13) that editorial content is divided in the following way:

We can divide editorial copy into three broad categories: service information, opinion and news. Service information consists of lists rather than continuous copy: sports results, television programmes, share prices, weather forecasts. (...) Opinion copy includes what are often called ‘editorials’ or ‘leaders’ - a statement of the newspaper’s own views on an issue, usually appearing on an inside page under a reduced banner of the paper’s ‘masthead’.

The best known genres in newspapers are editorials and news reports. My interest in the former is obvious as it is the object of this dissertation, however, the latter are also important as editorials generally rely on the news reports to supply the reader with information about which the editorial will give the newspaper’s opinion. Therefore, with regards to content, the editorial or editorials will normally be similar to that of one or more news reports in that day’s issue of the newspaper. News reports are divided into hard news, feature articles and special topic news which includes coverage of sports, finance, arts, etc. (Bell, 1991: 13). Both are apparently very different but keeping a news report objective is often a difficult task, especially in feature articles, which deal with subjects in more depth.

By journalistic tradition, opinion and news reporting are supposed to be kept separate. (..) Although numerous media researchers have shown that fact and opinion are by no means easy to separate, this has made little difference to how newswriters perceive - or newspapers present - these categories.

(Bell 1991: 13)

Bell's view of newspapers is influenced by the fact that he knows how journalists categorize different genres. The approach towards newspaper genres that I suggest is not concerned primarily with the point of view of the producers of newspapers. I am interested in analyzing texts, and more specifically, editorial texts, with a view to understanding how ordinary readers might perceive them.

The arrangement of rhetorical structures is carefully designed to guide the way a reader receives the information in a text. As Bell (1991: 13) states above, the possible differentiation between the two genres based on the dichotomy fact/opinion is often blurred, so it is my hypothesis that the main difference between them are to be found in the rhetorical structure. In this sense, Bhatia (1993:168) claims that the news report, in the form of an inverted pyramid, is the only genre that uses the the rhetorical strategy of presenting the solution first as this way the freshest news is presented first: *solution* → *situation* → *problem* → *evaluation*. In contrast, editorials use the more common strategy of *situation* → *problem* → *solution* → *evaluation*; and *situation* → *problem* → *evaluation*; *situation* → *evaluation*.

II.3.2.1. Editorials

The main goal of most editorials is to get the editor's views on important issues across to the reader as clearly and as concisely as possible. To conform to this goal various strategies are used. Digressions, or dramatic topic shifts, for instance, are normally avoided. The repetition of ideas, or phrases, however, is allowed to a certain extent if

it is needed to transmit the desired information or to satisfy a rhetorical need.

The embodiment of the twin goals of conciseness and clarity can also be seen in a particular rhetorical strategy that editorials share with many other kinds of written texts, that is, the way in which a topic is set out, normally at the beginning of the text, and adhered to throughout, although this pattern is not adhered to blindly. Finally, formal language, due to its unambiguity, is the norm in editorial texts although the odd stretch of colloquial language is not unknown. There are, conceivably, many other ways that the information in this kind of text could be organized but these strategies are the ones that most writers in our culture follow for this particular kind of text.

In accordance with our view of genre, the goals of editorials and these general strategies, which are used to implement them, eventually lead to certain surface forms, be they lexical, syntactic, rhetorical, etc. becoming the preferred way to get the job done. Such forms are either learned or acquired within a particular communicative situation and so a particular textual device becomes associated with a text designed for a specific goal, i.e. curricula, letters of application, abstracts. So, surface forms pertaining to the language level become associated with the more abstract concept -editorial genre. This view of how genre eventually affects textual strategies is shared by Fowler

Now, it is intuitively obvious that there exist within newspapers distinct genres of writing: editorials, reviews, financial reports, sports, accounts of parliamentary proceedings, etc. Presumably, each genre employs certain textual strategies which cue readers

to expect a particular kind of discursive experience, a particular view on some specialized portion of the represented world.

(Fowler 1991: 227)

This does not mean that there is a mechanical determinism involved in genre to such an extent that genre dictates the language or even, in many cases, the style to be used:

... there is no 'standard form' and style for editorials: they employ many different kinds of textual procedures, though a number of features recur (*but not all, nor every time*): certain kinds of modality, certain pronouns, high diction or alternatively vernacular diction, hypotaxis, syntactic parallelism, etc. Editorials are presumably a kind of Wittgensteinian family recognizable by options from a set of cues and such families provide a complicated descriptive task for the taxonomist of genre.

(Fowler 1991: 227)

Fowler apparently suggests that a textual strategy is not instantiated by a particular surface structure but that there are sets of options that can be activated. Using insights supplied by Schank and Abelson (1977) we might envisage, in a simplified way, the writing of an editorial being made up of a series of verbal strategies realized by an editor, whose aim is to write about an issue which is currently in the news. To fulfil such a goal, he or she may use a plan, that is, a series of actions in chronological order that are triggered by contextual stimuli, bottom-up information, and/or scripts, which are default (unmarked) courses of action that rely on top-down information or world knowledge (Schank & Abelson, 1977: 89). Scripts are normally preferred to plans whenever possible as they are more economic, in terms of processing and are usually effective in a given context. So, to use the, by now, famous restaurant script as an example, it is easier and more effective to follow the restaurant ritual, than use our imagination in the quest for a more creative way of

obtaining food as this will probably take more effort and might end in failure.

In the case of editorials, a script would include choosing one topic only and a fixed sequence of verbal events: title, introduction, body and conclusion. Nevertheless, the language used in each piece of expository writing, unlike that of a restaurant script, is very diverse due to the unique "problems" that the writing of each new editorial brings. Every time we wish to get an idea across we are likely to come up against problems, rather like what sometimes happens in restaurants when a script does not go entirely as planned, that is, "obstacles", in Schank and Abelson's terms (1977: 51). Scripts, as I said earlier, rely on top-down processing but each problem that we come across when writing an editorial at a local level normally requires a plan which is determined by the bottom-up information that is encountered.

Thus, at a global level it is my hypothesis that editorials conform to a finite number of rhetorical structures depending on the specific goal of the editor when writing each leader. Each type of editorial could be likened to the different scripts needed when we go to a MacDonal'd's, a drive-in, or an elegant Italian restaurant. At a local level, I believe that each strategy to successfully achieve a goal must be instantiated by a finite set of verbal structures. The scripts or plans used to carry out the goals at both levels are constrained by the general nature of the editorial⁵ genre as depicted below:

⁵ The "family" resemblance of editorials is similar to that found in the different types of restaurant scripts.

Editorial Genre

<u>Field</u>	expressing views, opinions, predictions, suggestions on current issues as identified in newspaper articles.
<u>Tenor</u>	journalist/editor to newspaper reader, hierarchical: respected authority as writer to non-expert readers, social distance: quite high.
<u>Mode</u>	language role: rather constitutive channel: visual: print; processing time for addresser greater than for addressee, designed to be read once; rhetorically expository. [What!2];
<u>Goal</u>	To convince or influence the reader

Adapted from Goatley (1994: 24-25)

Bhatia (1988: 165) claims that as editorials are concerned with giving the reader the newspaper's position on the stories that have been covered in recent newspaper reports, they normally follow the formal schema below:

- 1 Presenting the case, which concerns actual events, i.e., what is or what was in the world of everyday events. It may be seen as framing issues, clarifying choices or defining areas of concern.
2. Offering the argument, where the editor discusses the possible alternative worlds, i.e. what was not or what might have been and can be seen in terms of Kinneavy's (1971) confutation and confirmation.
3. Reaching the verdict, which concerns the world of desired events, i.e., what would be or what should have been and is generally seen as the writer's conclusion.
4. Recommending action, where the writer is seen as suggesting how the desired world of events can be realized.

(Bhatia 1988: 165)

Bhatia's schema seems to be saying that all editorials follow the same structure. Other authors suggest that this is not the case. Bolivar (1995) claims that there are several kinds of editorials depending on the goal of the author. Central to Bolívar's (1995) view of editorials, based on research by Tadros (1981) and Sinclair (1983), is that even written texts are designed to take into account interaction and that it is possible to find evidence of traces of such interaction in editorials. In other words,

interaction informs the structure of the editorial. She claims that written and oral discourses do not differ essentially in that both are molded by social conventions that "govern social interaction" (1994: 72 [my translation]).

According to Bolívar, all discourse is the use of language to cause some effect in those listening or reading or to react to something we hear or read (1994: 73). Following work by Sinclair and Coulthard (1975) on oral exchanges in the classroom between teacher and students, she claims that interaction is manifested in editorials by a triadic structure made up of initiation, follow-up and evaluation. Of the three, evaluation is the most important. She quotes Labov and Waletzky who define evaluation as "that part of the narrative which reveals the attitude of the narrator towards the narrative by emphasizing the relative importance of some narrative units as compared to others" (Labov and Waletzky 1967: 37). Bolívar claims that editorials are divided into two or three-parts called "movements". The first movement describes the situation (Winter 1977, 1980; Hoey 1979, 1983), the second, shows how the situation might develop and the third, which is optional, refers to the world "that should be". Internally, movements are generally made up of two or three "triads" the first triad expresses "Situation", the second, "Development", and the third, "Recommendation". Finally, the triads themselves are composed of **lead**, **follow**, and **valuate** which mirror the functions of the movements.

Most editorials in Bolívar's corpus are made up of two complete movements and a third movement of two triads (1995: 291). However, she notes that editorials that occupy the first position on an editorial

page are normal the most complex (1994: 156) and also that shorter editorials have a simpler structure than longer ones (1994: 157).

Movement 1	Movement 2	Movement 3
Triad 1 = Situation	Triad 1 = Situation	Triad 1 = Situation
lead	lead	lead
follow	follow	follow
valuate	valuate	valuate
Triad 2 = Development	Triad 2 = Development	Triad 2 = Development
lead	lead	lead
follow	follow	follow
valuate	valuate	valuate
Triad 3 = Recommendation	Triad 3 = Recommendation	
lead	lead	
follow	follow	
valuate	valuate	

As the editorial is often used to give the opinion of the newspaper, it is not surprising that the valuate turn is of great importance. Bolívar claims that valuates can act as “concluders” showing logical and temporal conclusions or results, prophecies and directives, which can be either direct or indirect, i.e. implicit (1995: 291-292).

Research in corpus linguistics is useful when shedding light on the characteristics of a particular genre. Biber (1988, 1995) looks at genres, which he calls registers, from a multi-feature point of view. That is, instead of comparing one feature in various genres, Biber takes a series of features grouped into what he calls dimensions, that is, situational or functional parameters such as formal/informal, interactive/non-interactive, literary/colloquial, restricted/elaborated. He claims that such parameters “can be considered as dimensions because they define continuums of variation rather than discrete poles” (Biber 1988: 9).

Using multiple dimensions Biber is able to distinguish the genres; he claims that this would not be possible using just one feature. Below, I have summarized the features in each dimension. I have also signalled the prototypical registers of each with brief comments on how editorials relate to each dimension:

Dimensions

Dimension 1: Involved versus Information Production

Characteristic linguistic features: Verbs like *think*, *wish*, *feel* are found more in **Involved** production, as are features such as THAT deletion, copula verbs, the IT pronoun, contractions. **Informational** production is characterized by a higher number of nouns, greater word length, less repetition.

Characteristic registers: Telephone conversations are typical of the involved pole whereas official documents are typical of the informational pole.

Editorials: are nearer the informational pole than the involved pole.

Dimension 2: Narrative versus Non-Narrative Discourse.

Characteristic linguistic features: **Narrative discourse** has the following distinguishing features: past tense verbs, third person pronouns, perfect aspect verbs, etc. **Non-Narrative** discourse is characterized by present tense verbs and attributive adjectives.

Characteristic registers: Romance fiction has the most narrative features, whereas at the non-narrative extreme we find broadcasts.

Editorials: are nearer the non-narrative pole than the narrative pole.

Dimension 3: Situation-dependent versus Elaborated reference.

Characteristic linguistic features: The features which are characteristic of **Situation-Dependent** registers are: time and place adverbials and adverbs. The features found in **Elaborated Reference** production are WH-relative clauses on object positions, nominalizations, phrasal coordination, etc.

Characteristic registers: Broadcasts are typical of Situation-Dependent discourse whereas official documents are characteristic of Elaborated Reference.

Editorials: are almost neutral with regard to this dimension.

Dimension 4: Overt Expression of Argumentation

Characteristic linguistic features: Infinitives, prediction modals, suasive verbs, conditional subordination, necessity modals, split auxiliaries.

Characteristic registers: Professional letters are overtly argumentative whereas broadcasts are negatively marked for the linguistic features above.

Editorials: are heavily marked for this dimension.

Dimension 5: Abstract versus Non-abstract Style

Characteristic linguistic features: Agentless passives, past participial (passive) adverbial clauses, *by*- passives, past participial (passive) postnominal clauses (e.g. *the textbook [which was] used in that class*, etc.

Characteristic registers: Telephone conversations are non-abstract whereas technical and engineering prose is abstract.

Editorials: Neutral.

Dimension 6: On-line Informational Elaboration Marking Stance⁶

Characteristic linguistic features: *that*- complement clauses on verbs, *that*- complement clauses on adjectives, *that*- complement clauses on object positions.

Characteristic registers: Prepared speeches show common use of the above features whereas Mystery and Adventure fiction is negatively marked with regard to them.

Editorials: are positive on the scale.

(Biber 1995: 144--167)

None of the above dimensions are sufficient to characterize any genre but the cumulative effect of all six is enough to enable us to distinguish between genres.

The editorial genre is distinguished from spoken discourse as it has few of the features of such discourse, i.e., deletion of the relative pronoun "that", contractions and overt markers of personal opinion. Editorials have a certain amount of the features common to narratives, third person pronouns, for instance, but they are nearer to the non-narrative pole with regards to the use of the tenses. However, what characterizes editorials most of all is dimension 4, the manifestation of "overt argumentation and persuasion" (Biber 1995: 258). Editorials usually present various points of view but they "seek to convince the reader of the advisability or likelihood of one of them" (Biber 1988: 148). Biber (1988) furthermore states that:

⁶ The features pertaining to this dimension "are typically used to provide informational elaboration while at the same time explicitly presenting the speaker's stance or attitude towards the proposition" (Biber 1995: 167-168)

Institutional editorials, which are the official opinions of a newspaper, generally make no attempt at objectivity: they are overt expressions of opinion intended to persuade readers.

(Biber 1988: 195)

II.4. Conclusion

From the preceding pages it seems evident that there is a consensus with regards to the existence of the editorial genre (or register according to the terminology used by certain researchers). That the editorial is recognized both from a social point of view and has also been analyzed linguistically proves that the analysis of editorials from a linguistic perspective may shed further light on its social dimension and will definitely enrich our knowledge of the genre as a linguistically differentiated manifestation of language.

III. Text, Discourse, Coherence and Cohesion

III.1. Preliminary Comments

This chapter will be an attempt to come to working definitions of the terms *text*, *discourse*, *coherence* and *cohesion* through a review of the work of several linguists who have themselves attempted to come to definitions of these terms. We will look at text and discourse first as most of the literature on cohesion and coherence depends to a great extent on these notions.

The two main approaches to text/discourse and indeed to suprasentential relations that I have consulted in this dissertation are **Textlinguistics** and **Discourse Analysis**. This is not a product of fate or personal preferences but is simply because most of the literature on suprasentential relations has been produced within these two schools. The boundary between the two is not as clear and unambiguous as might be thought and there is ample reason to justify a comparison of the two schools with a view to using the insights they provide to come to common definitions of important concepts.

According to Edmonson (1981: 4) there are several tendencies that differentiate the two schools. Textlinguists, like Dressler (1978), Petöfi (1988), Werlich (1983), Charolles (1986), van Dijk (1972, 1977, 1983, 1988), Bernárdez (1982, 1987, 1990) have based their studies on non-interactive written language (monologues). Discourse analysts, on the other hand, Halliday and Hasan (1976), Brown and Yule (1983), Coulthard (1992, 1994), Sinclair (1988) Sinclair & Coulthard (1975), have analysed written texts and speech in institutionalized settings together with conversations between two or more interlocutors.

Furthermore, according to Stubbs (1983), textlinguistics tends to study short texts, while discourse analysis concentrates on lengthier stretches of language. Finally, Stubbs (1983) states that textlinguistics is a European linguistic school—in the sense of continental Europe—whereas discourse analysis was based originally in Birmingham, England and has been exported to other European and Australian Universities. Edmonson (1981) goes on to say that while Textlinguistics, originally an attempt to carry on Chomsky's work at a discourse level, is model-centred, theoretical, and especially interested in the encoder's competence, Discourse Analysis is data-centred, descriptive and more interested in the encoder's performance.

The textlinguistic/discourse analysis distinction may have been a clear-cut absolute opposition originally but this opposition has been eroded over time. Currently the edges of the two schools are so fuzzy as to be practically indistinguishable. None of the tendencies mentioned above are

now limited to either school; we can see practical and theoretical studies on both written and oral material from researchers who originally belonged to both schools.

III.2. Text and Non-text

Before looking at the term *text*, we must look at the differences, if any, between text and discourse as both are to be found in the literature. According to Stubbs (1983), van Dijk saw discourse as the realization of text. *Text* is to *discourse* what *competence* is to *performance*, or *langue* to *parole*. However, most of the researchers whose work I have referred to treat these terms as synonyms although *discourse* is employed to cover both oral and written language while *text* is preferred when written material is being discussed. Moreover, most researchers that I have consulted use the terms *text* and *discourse* without a determiner to refer to the abstract constructs that we will be looking at in the following sections, and preceded by a determiner, to the products of either a writer or a speaker.

One of the main issues in Textlinguistics and Discourse Analysis is to differentiate between **text** and **non-text**. If there is such a thing as text, it must have some kind of structure. According to Hoey there are three views of text organization held by various schools.

- 1, that there is none;
- 2, that text has organization but does not have "the status of structure, a structural description being one that permits one to make predictive statements about the data under examination".
- 3, that text does permit of full structural description:

(Adapted from Hoey 1991: 13)

Which of these options is the best? I know of no authors who believe that texts are completely bereft of any kind of organization, so we can safely discard option one. Option two is the one that Hoey (1990) propounds as the texts he has analyzed show definite patterns. Option three was held to be true by van Dijk (1983) and other textlinguists such as de Beaugrande & Dressler (1981), Petöfi (1988), at the beginning of their investigations due to the influence of transformational-generative grammar. Hoey also affirms that option three is the one taken by Halliday and Hasan (1985), Martin, (1985) and Ventola (1987). I would agree with Hoey that genre theory, from the systemic grammar point of view, holds that texts and discourses can be described thoroughly.

However, I believe that one thing is a thorough description of discourse and text and another a complex algorithm that would produce all possible coherent texts of the kind suggested by the pioneers in textlinguistics. In any case, it would seem that both the discourse analysts and the textlinguists have come to a compromise that is nearer option two than option three. In other words, texts and discourses obviously have organization of some kind but that at the present time no linguist is anywhere near to discovering all their secrets. Option two is also the view supported in this dissertation, in fact, the object of the present work is to

attempt to shed more light on some aspects of text organization. Several concepts have been used to differentiate text from accidental groupings of sentences. In the following sections I will be looking at these concepts.

III.3. Textuality and Grammaticality

According to Randquist (1985), **textuality**, what makes a text a text, goes beyond sentence grammar to include notions such as context, or the extra-linguistic elements which make up the environment of the sentence or sentences. To illustrate this she rejects van Dijk's claim that the following much cited sentence is not a text because it is ungrammatical:

Ex. 1 We will have guests for lunch.

Calderon was a great Spanish writer.

(van Dijk, 1972: 40)

For Dahl & Dahl (1974), Edmondson (1981), Randquist (1985), and Charolles (1985), this example only needs a suitable context to become perfectly grammatical. That is, it would be perfectly plausible to imagine a family that always invites people to lunch on, let us say, the anniversary of Calderon's death.

We must remember, however that in a particular context at a particular time, an utterance could be perplexing, no matter how perfect its structure was found to be *a posteriori*. For instance, due to L1 interference Spanish

speakers are sometimes heard to say *goodnight* when they enter the classroom leaving the teacher to wonder whether they are coming or going.

Brown and Yule suggest that a text can be quite ungrammatical, like the piece of learner English below, and still be perfectly comprehensible because of our ability to infer what an encoder is “trying” to say.

Ex. 2 Slim is beautiful

Many reasons are there for people to want a slim body. All become very lighter and lighter but it's very difficult to held a normally weight.

Nowadays, in our country, Sweden, there is so well of all sort of eating that man light come to big overweight. What to doing?

(1983: 234-5)

Any teacher of English has probably seen many texts of this kind and is able on most occasions to decode what the student is saying. Grammaticality, therefore, is neither necessary nor sufficient for us to view a series of sentences as acceptable.

III.4. Surface Forms Versus Underlying Structure

Many of the attempts to define text have been attacked for being too “surface-oriented”, that is, some researchers give too much importance to surface markers in their definitions of textuality. Halliday and Hasan (1976), for instance, claim that a text is a semantic unit rather than a structural one, and that texts do not consist of sentences but are *realized*

by them¹. The difference between a text and a random collection of sentences is that the former has **texture**, that is, "it functions as a unity with respect to its environment" (1976: 2). For Halliday and Hasan (1976) texture is provided by the explicit relations of cohesion that exist between anaphoric elements and the elements that they refer to.

Werlich's (1983) view of text is similar to Halliday and Hasan's (1976) in that it is based on elements found on the surface of discourse. A text is made up of:

an extended structure of syntactic units such as words, groups, and clauses and textual units that is marked by both coherence among the elements and completion.

(Werlich 1983: 23)

Werlich (1983) sees text as a process in which a **thematic text-base**² - roughly equivalent to a topic sentence - is expanded in a linear fashion using **functional sequences**: reference items (pronouns, articles, conjunctions and bound morphemes of tense and number), substitute words, and **topical sequences**: synonyms, near-synonyms, words from the same semantic field, and so on.

Brown and Yule (1983), on the other hand, do not believe that a text must *explicitly* reveal some features of cohesion to be considered a text.

¹ See also Halliday (1975b: 24)

² Werlich, Egon 'a text-initial linguistic unit which both structurally and semantically permits expansion into a text by sequences of coherent and completed linguistic units.'(1983: 27).

There are texts which have no explicit cohesive ties but due to the fact that one sentence follows another on the page, the reader assumes that they do form a text and will do all he or she can to interpret it as such. The example below is coherent, or can be interpreted coherently without showing any sign of an explicit cohesive tie.

Ex. 3 Thank you for comments about voicing. I will eventually get back to that lesson.

Brown and Yule (1983) insist that surface connecting elements are not a sufficient requirement for a text to be regarded as such and offer an example from Enkvist (1978: 10) to demonstrate this fact:

Ex. 4 I bought a Ford. A car in which President Wilson rode down the Champs Elysées was black. Black English has been widely discussed. The discussion between the presidents ended last week. A week has seven days. Every day I feed my cats. Cats have four legs. The cat is on the mat. Mat has three letters

Brown and Yule (1983) state that surface ties are useful in making a reader regard a text as a text, but that readers tend to look first for what the authors call "the underlying semantic relations" in the sequence of sentences or utterances that they are attempting to decode. They conclude by saying that a text is what readers and hearers regard as text. This view is shared by other authors, among them Tyler, Morgan and Sellner (1980), Green and Morgan (1981), and Green (1989). They argue that Halliday and

Hasan (1976) do not take into account the reader's interaction with the discourse.

Hoey (1991) coincides with Brown and Yule in that surface ties are neither sufficient nor necessary for a text to be coherent. He too talks about the semantic relations in text that go beyond what Halliday and Hasan (1976) call reference:

It takes more than the presence of ties to make a reader find a text coherent and, conversely, in conversation their absence need not result in the participants finding their talk incoherent. One reason is that, in addition to perceiving ties between words in the sentence we encounter, we also see relationships between the sentences as whole units. Two sentences may be understood as being in contrast with each other; one sentence may be seen as providing a reason for an earlier one ... a whole group of sentences or clauses may be interpreted as exemplifying an earlier ... and so on.

(Hoey 1991: 12)

While agreeing with Brown and Yule (1983) and Hoey (1990), surface elements do seem to be at least a symptom that a chunk of language is a text although the notion of text goes beyond what is found on the surface and the underlying relationships between elements in a text must be taken into account.

III.5. Coherence

Most authors agree that textuality is defined to a great extent by how coherent a text is. Coherence covers many aspects, such as what we

consider to be “normal”, the sequencing of events, completeness and intertextuality or genre.

III.5.1. Text normality

In van Dijk's opinion the semantic coherence of a discourse is conditioned cognitively by the **assumed normality** of the worlds involved, that is, “our expectations about the semantic structures of discourse are determined by our **knowledge** about the structure of worlds in general and of particular states of affairs or courses of events” (1978: 99). This definition would cover both fictional worlds and the *real* world. Thus, in a science-fiction text we would accept as *normal* events or states that would be considered impossible in the world that we live in. Randquist claims that **knowledge structures** “which contain the prototypical, sociocultural determined knowledge about a particular part of the world,” (1985:193) are a make or break factor when deciding if a text is grammatical or acceptable. An illustration of this is the example below taken from Schank & Abelson (1977:40):

Ex. 5 John went to a park. He asked the midget for a mouse. He picked up the box and left.

According to the authors, this particular text would not be acceptable in a *normal* world but could be possible in a text-world of the science-fiction type.

Van Dijk (1972)³ claims that a lot of our knowledge of the world is organized in **frames**, that is, data structures which represent stereotyped situations, and **scripts** which denote prototypical actions and events in a determined order, i.e. buying a pizza in a pizza parlour⁴ (Randquist, 1985: 204). An **office-frame** would include a set of typical office individuals (people and objects) and the prototypical activities that take place in an office. Compare this with the example from Schank and Abelson above.

The frame theory deals quite successfully with simple situations like the one above, but as Brown and Yule (1983) point out, there are texts which could contain a frame, which, in turn might contain one or more frames. Besides this fact, it is often difficult to define exactly what kind of frame we are dealing with, as in example 6 below.

Ex. 6 The Cathedral congregation had watched on television monitors as Pope and Archbishop met, in front of a British Caledonian helicopter, on the dewy grass of a Canterbury recreation ground.

(The Sunday Times, 30 May 1982)

Brown and Yule wonder which frame would be selected in the above passage. There are various possibilities; among others, we could pick from: a **Cathedral** frame, a **television-watching** frame, and a **recreation-ground** frame. Moreover, they (1986: 240-1) go on to say that a

³ According to Brown and Yule (1983), much of the work on Frames and Scripts comes from research on Artificial Intelligence: Wilks, 1977; Winston, 1977; Findler (ed.), 1979; Metzger (ed.), 1979. Also from Minsky (1975), who did research on visual perception and visual memory

⁴ The midget example above uses "weird semantics", to use Randquist's (1985) terms but is really only a

recreation-ground frame could contain "a large number of sub-frames covering endless aspects of our stereotypic knowledge of **recreation** (which) would have no function in our understanding of this text." This is precisely the weakest part of the frame theory. Where is the limit to the amount of knowledge that is foregrounded in our minds? This is an important question as the whole frame theory was constructed to offer a plausible method of limiting the amount of information activated in the brain at a given moment. Van Dijk (1972) recognizes this problem and comments that a **selection** is made from the "possible information" available but, unfortunately, offers no clues as to how this selection is carried out, which is exactly the kind of drawback Brown and Yule refer to.

Hatakeyama et al. regard the coherence of a text as depending on its **interpretability**. This means building a bridge between the text and the real world we live in. The first thing that an interpreter has to do to achieve this goal is to form a **mental representation** of the text. To do this he assigns a **canonical syntactical representation**, that is, the syntactic structure of the text. Next, he constructs the **canonical representation of the signification**, which includes (a) the canonical text, i.e. the "unambiguous canonical representation of the syntactic and semantic structure of the text to be interpreted", and (b) "the canonical representation of those hypotheses (presuppositions, inferences, implications) which the interpreter constructs with regard to the states of affairs in the text" (1985: 52-3). The interpreter then constructs the representation of the world (world fragment) that he believes to be

variety of purchasing script.

manifest in the text. This representation is given the name **text world**. Then, the interpreter uses all his knowledge, beliefs, assumptions, and so on, to interpret the text with regard to the *real* world. In other words, he assigns models to the sense component of the text. The final step is "to determine which **world fragment** (extra-linguistic correlate), considered as being acceptable by the interpreter, can be assigned as an interpretation to the text to be interpreted" (1985: 54). If no world fragment can be assigned to the text, the interpreter can change his models or construct new ones in order to interpret it. Coherence is, therefore, a property of a text world, which depends on the interpreter and the interpretation model of the interpreter.

III.5.2. Sequencing of events

In the case of scripts, prototypical actions have prototypical sequences. Randquist (1985) states that for certain texts, i.e., narratives, the basic building block of coherence is **temporal linearity**. She goes on to say that functional sequences are basic for textual cohesion. Violations of temporal linearity and other functional sequences are more likely to cause a written or spoken chunk to be deemed a non-text than violations of topical sequences. That is "weird" semantics is tolerated to a greater extent than "weird" syntax. Winter (1979) states that clauses or other stretches of language need to be logically and/or temporally ordered and that surface cohesion, that is, repetition, etc. are often not necessary for a text to be deemed coherent.

One of the conditions for sequences of linguistic units to be considered discourse is that they must form a "whole", that is, the discourse must be complete. Van Dijk, like Werlich, states that the description of states or events must contain "all the facts constituting a certain situation..." (1972: 108). Nevertheless, he admits that complete descriptions, although theoretically possible, are practically impossible. In an **office-frame**, for

¹⁰For Wales (1989), however, it seems that it is the term 'theme' which typically covers the concept of givenness.

example, it might suffice to mention the word **office** and/or **desk** for the reader or listener to obtain a mental representation of the frame being used.

III.5.3. Text completeness

For van Dijk (1972) for a text to be considered coherent there are **degrees of completeness** and **levels of completeness**, that is, on one level, for example, the description of an individual's actions during a certain period of time, may be quite complete, but on another level, let us say, the descriptions of the surroundings or the person's thoughts may be sketchy or even omitted.

Moreover, a description would be **over-complete** if it is too specific at levels that are not relevant to the topic of discourse. On the other hand, **under-completeness** refers to descriptions that omit essential information as in the following example:

Ex. 7 He put his hand in his left pocket and searched for the key.
He turned the lock. He opened the door.

The sentence *missing* here would refer to the placing of the key into the lock. Nevertheless, I feel it is an exaggeration to say that this information is essential; any competent reader would be able to grasp what is happening in this passage due to the cognitive processes outlined by van Dijk himself. A more convenient way to explain under-complete or over-complete texts

would be to treat them as a stylistic variation of more *normal* texts. Werlich (1983) defines completion on a purely surface basis, that is, the **initiation** and **termination** of text is signalled by grammatical forms such as the indefinite article at the beginning of a text or prepositional phrases: **An old man...**, **To begin with**; or lexical markers like **first(ly)**, **initially**. The termination of a text can be signalled by prepositional phrases like **to conclude**, **to end**, or lexical items such as **finally**. Werlich (1983: 24) adds that completion may be inferred in certain cases. For example, when the description is of how ink works its way to the end of a fountain pen, the noun phrase, **the nib**, would serve as what Werlich calls the **topical terminator**.

Hatakeyama, Katshuhiko, Petöfi and Sözer (1985) see completion as the **closedness** of the **world fragment** or extra-linguistic correlate of the text. They state that the properties of coherence and closedness of a world fragment are not inherent to it but depend on what the interpreter knows, believes or imagines about the world fragment. Therefore, the **states-of-affairs**, i.e. the contents/themes of a world fragment are judged to be complete if they are interpreted as such by the reader. Nevertheless, this view of completion would leave the matter entirely in the hands of the reader, which seems to contradict the feeling that most readers have that certain texts are intrinsically more complete than others. Coherence and completion seem to be easier to achieve than incoherent and incomplete texts as we have seen above. Most of the texts that we come across, except, perhaps, students' essays and fictional works, i.e. *The Sound and the Fury* or *The Inheritors*, are both coherent and complete to the majority of

readers. This is true even in those cases in which we have to infer the relations that obtain between elements in a text like the one that follows:

Ex. 8 I'm not going to the congress tomorrow. There has been heavy flooding in the Barcelona area.

III.5.4. Genre

We have to come back to the notion of genre at this point as it is an important part of the notion of coherence. Coherence is both a functional and conceptual notion which refers to the interrelations of **Subject (S)** = subject matter; **Medium (M)** = spoken or written text; and **Text Type (TT)** = genre. Thus if a **Producer (P)** wants to communicate a piece of gossip (S) to a neighbour **Interpreter (I)**, he or she will normally do so in the form of spoken dialogue (M). and this will be carried out in everyday narrative (TT) in most cases. These concepts are related to the notion of **Intertextuality** or "the relation/s between the individual text and the bulk of conventionalized TTs past and present" (Hatakeyama et al 1985: 202). This means that an individual text becomes coherent against the background of a series of **canonical texts** which we could envisage as a theoretical construction. Thus each TT is made up of TT schemata. So, when we write a letter, to a certain extent we imitate an abstract unit called a canonical letter.

In the same way, as decoders we expect, for instance, a newspaper article to follow certain rules -the inclusion of only essential information in

the first paragraph of a report. Our expectations would be unfulfilled if a text, X, strayed too far from the canonical text. If the violation of the rules were extreme we would be forced to question whether the text in question were really of the type we believed and we would be obliged to look for another type of canonical text to which it were better suited. The concept of completion, therefore, would merely be a part of our expectations of a coherent text.

III.6. Topic

The present section will deal with the notion of topic which I believe to be one of the most important elements of text organization and one which is connected to both the overall coherence of a discourse and to the cohesive elements that are its physical manifestation. The term "topic" has, because of its ambiguity, caused many problems of a taxonomic and empirical nature. Topic, it seems, is many things to many linguists. The first distinction that one has to make is between the terms **sentence topic** and **discourse topic** as these two entities are completely different in nature. Hopefully, it will become clear throughout the chapter why I am interested only in the latter.

The problems we face when we study sentence topic arise because there appear to be two terms in particular: subject and theme, which vie with topic for practically the same conceptual space. The problem is compounded by the fact that each of the three words mentioned are

defined differently according to the linguistic school each researcher belongs to. In the first part of the chapter, therefore, I will briefly review the definition of sentence topic and several other rival terms mainly to discriminate between them and leave the way clear for a definition of discourse topic, which, I must forewarn the reader, is my main intention.

With regard to discourse topic, its very nature has been doubted. As this study is about discourse itself most of this and following sections will be spent looking at the different definitions of discourse topic and deciding on an adequate definition which will serve the purposes of this study.

III.6.1. Sentence Topic

As I outlined in the introduction to this chapter, my task here is to define **sentence topic** and draw the line between it and the terms **subject** and **theme**. To begin with, I will contrast **subject** and **sentence topic**, as they seem to be the least problematic.

III.6.1.1. Topic and subject

Subject in English normally occupies initial sentence position except in interrogatives (Chalker 1984: 18; Reinhart (1981), Quirk, *et al.*: 1985; Sinclair (ed.) 1990: 402). In that aspect, it is similar to sentence topic (Li

1976: 465), which is sentence-initial due to its role as the vehicle for given information. The biggest difference between the two is concordance.

Concordance between the subject and the verb is found in all variants of English and for Chalker (1984: 16) such concordance is the subject's defining feature. In contrast, Li (1976: 461) claims that concordance is not necessary between the sentence topic and the verb as the examples he offers demonstrate:

Subject	Predicate
John	hit Mary
As for education,	John prefers Bertrand Russell's ideas.
Topic	Comment

Another major difference, according to Li (1976: 464), has to do with the issue of definiteness. The topic needs to be definite because it is 'constant' across sentences whereas subject may be indefinite. However, Li's comments are problematic because subject is not a discourse notion and therefore any comparison between subject and topic beyond the sentence is of doubtful utility. The similarities between subject and topic are superficial primarily because of the semantic nature of topic, as van Dijk (1977: 94) points out.

it will be assumed that the notions of topic and comment cannot possibly coincide with or be identical to particular syntactic categories, and that they must at least have a semantic status

Moreover, if we look at Li's example, we will see that "As for education" cannot be called definite at all and only becomes so if the topic *education* is followed up in subsequent sentences.

Li (1976: 466) sums up the differences between topic and subject by drawing our attention to the discourse nature of the topic and the sentential nature of the subject:

In conclusion, the topic is a discourse notion, whereas the subject is to a greater extent a sentence-internal notion. The former can be understood best in terms of the discourse and extra-sentential considerations; the latter in terms of its functions within the sentence structure.

In practice there can be a certain amount of overlap between the notions of subject and topic but the fundamental differences seen in the preceding paragraphs even at the sentential level are enough to justify the existence of two independent terms.

III.6.1.2. Sentence topic and theme

The overlap between the terms topic and theme is so great that they are often used as synonyms, even in books which take pains to attempt to separate them. An example of this can be found in Quirk et al: (1985: 726), where they say "The subject is typically the theme (or topic) of the clause". However, further on (Quirk et al, 1985: 1362) they seem to favour *theme* over *topic*: "Some linguists use the distinction 'topic'/'comment' for *our*

'theme'/'rheme' . . . ". To give another example, Chalker (1984: 17) in one sentence, has topic and theme joined by an explicative *or*, suggesting that they are synonyms.

Halliday (1994: 31) defines theme as the psychological subject, 'that which is the concern of the message'. The function of theme is the "point of departure for the message" (1994: 34). The reason Halliday chooses the term theme instead of topic is that the latter is ambiguous and can mean 'point of departure' or 'given'¹⁰. The sentence-initialness of theme is not accidental, it is what the speaker/writer chooses to start the clause with.

The main characteristic theme, topic and subject share is that they appear in sentence-initial position. Sentence-initialness is especially important for theme, because the most common definition of theme is usually "what comes first" in a sentence. Quirk, *et al.* (1985: 1361) describe theme as "the initial part of any structure when we consider it from an informational point of view". So theme is a semantic entity, it is part of the information structure of the sentence. The theme of a sentence is usually the given information -a feature shared with the topic.

III.6.1.3. Concluding remarks on sentence topic

To sum up the differentiating characteristics of the terms sentence topic, theme and subject we can say the following:

- Sentence topic is typically sentence-initial and refers specifically to the concept of given information, it is a semantic entity.
- Theme is what comes first in the sentence, it is semantic in nature and its main role is in information management.
- Subject has a selectional relationship with regards to the predicate of the sentence, it is a grammatical unit.

I suggest that we can safely say that subject is a very different entity from both theme and topic as its nature is purely grammatical. The answer to the topic/theme distinction, however, is practically unsolvable at the sentence level because theme/rheme and topic/comment are practically identical in isolated sentences. Halliday even goes so far as to say that sentence theme can become the topic of a paragraph. My position is that theme is essentially a sentential concept although theme progression can be found throughout a text, whereas topic has practically no useful function at a sentence level. I suggest that sentence topic is an unnecessary concept as most texts are made up of more than one sentence -this is acknowledged implicitly by Li (1976: 464)- and so discourse topic is a better term even when it is used to define the aboutness of a sentence which occurs in isolation - a rare occurrence indeed.

III.6.2. Discourse Topic

Discourse Topic is a complex phenomenon and the research on it covers areas such as the production and processing of written and oral communication, how processed information is stored and the type of information that is normally recalled. It also includes how information is

structured in discourse and the differences between different genres with regard to this procedure. With these facts in mind I have decided, wherever possible, to set myself two limitations: first, to look at Discourse Topic (henceforth DT) only in written discourse and second, solely from the reader's point of view. The first limitation is due to the fact that there exists a clear division between how DT is manifested in oral and written discourse. A tacit acknowledgment of this fact is that most researchers study either oral discourse or written discourse, but not both.

The most obvious division between oral and written discourse is, of course, the mode of transmission of the communication and although both types of discourse may share similarities with regard to field (the nature of what is being communicated) and tenor (the identity of the participants) there are enough differences between the two to make the division of labour mentioned above a sensible solution. Each type of discourse has its own specific problems.

The greatest problem a researcher comes across in oral discourse when attempting to ascertain the DT, is how to segment what is being communicated into topics. In oral discourse, it is often difficult to decide where one topic ends and another begins, decisions often being made based on elements peculiar to speech such as intonation and pauses. These types of complication normally do not exist with written discourse in general¹¹ and are uncommon in the case of genres such as expository essays or

¹¹I do not include here heavily structured oral discourse such as formal speeches or sermons as I consider them to be written-to-be-read texts.

newspaper editorials, which are planned before being written and published and whose information structure should be easily perceived.

Given the clear differences between the two types of discourse, and the fact that my dissertation centres on a written genre, newspaper editorials, I shall refer to spoken discourse only when it might shed light on the nature of DT in written discourse genres.

The rationale for confining my research on topic development in newspaper editorials almost exclusively to the standpoint of the reader stems from the fact that writing and reading are very different skills and would require different research methods as research into reading has proved, see Anderson & Schiffrin (1980), Brewer, (1980), Huggins & Adams (1980), Rumelhart (1980), Spiro, Bruce & Brewer (1980), Woods (1980), Webber (1980). The motor processes involved in each activity, for instance, are vastly different (Daneman 1987). The time needed to decode a text as opposed to the time invested in encoding it is also usually very different (Goetz & Armbruster 1980, Colley 1987).

More specifically, the way an author constructs a DT is a very different process from the way a reader perceives it. A measure of this is the fact that we cannot even be certain that the author's DT will be the same as the one the reader or readers perceive.

It is clear, notwithstanding, that even if one wished to eschew the role of the author altogether, as Barthes (1988) and other members of the semiotic

movement did, and conceding that the birth of a text entails the death of the author, the (re)construction of meaning in a text by the reader is molded and constrained to such an extent by the writing process (Goffman, 1981: 287) that it would be impossible to ignore this facet completely. Moreover, even though I confine my analysis to that of the reader's part in the (re)construction of DT, in the process of doing so I will, inevitably, according to some views of text creation, throw some light on the writer's role in its creation.

In the following sections I shall endeavour to arrive at a working definition of DT after looking at differences between it and other terms. I use the term "working definition" as I believe that DT is similar to a kindred concept "text" in that, although it is of the utmost importance if we wish to understand other terms such as coherence or connectedness, it is, in the words of Brown and Yule (1983: 68): "very difficult to pin down". Despite the difficulties involved in coming to a viable definition of DT, the reason innumerable researchers use this concept is that there is simply no other alternative. DT is a heuristic which explains other textual elements, which may themselves be heuristics.

The situation the discourse analyst/textlinguist finds himself/herself in is analogous with that of the many branches of linguistics. We are no nearer to an airtight definition of DT and other kindred concepts such as "text" and "discourse" than we are to the definition of other concepts such as "language", "dialect", "word", "sentence" belonging to other disciplines within linguistics.

Given this situation, many authors understand and employ the term “topic” in the same way as I employ DT, but do not feel that they need to explain it. They do this because of DT’s intuitive appeal (van Dijk, 1988: 13) and because of the influence of the layman’s term “topic”, meaning “subject of a discussion, talk, programme” (Oxford Advanced Learner’s Dictionary: 960).

I shall use the term Discourse Topic to distance myself from the layman’s term and because it is preferable to “topic”, which is easily confused with “topic” in the sentential sense. A more serious taxonomic problem arises when the discourse meaning of “topic” is used as a synonym of “theme”. This is true even in articles or books where both terms are central to the authors’ theses¹². I argued in Section III.6.1.2. that “theme” is a useful term when referring to the sentence but that “topic” or DT should be the only terms used at a discourse level.

III.6.2.1. The nature of discourse topic

Text linguists were some of the first to attempt a more “scientific” definition of DT. Van Dijk has dealt with DT extensively in several publications (van Dijk: 1977, 1983, 1988). In the first of these, *Text and*

¹² See Agar (1987) and van Dijk (1988) to mention just two examples.

Context (1977), he forwards a semi-formal definition of “macrostructure”¹³, which is a synonym of DT (1977: 133-4):

a concept or a S conceptual structure (a proposition) may become a discourse topic if it HIERARCHICALLY ORGANIZES the conceptual (propositional) structure of the sequence.

Van Dijk (1977), therefore, claims that the DT is a propositional structure, that is, a kind of summary of the discourse, but may not be totally explicit. In other words, it may belong the deep structure.

Giora (1985) also claims that texts are organized semantically around DTs. The pivotal difference between a text and a random group of sentences, well-formed or not, according to her, is that the sentences making up the former can all be assigned to a DT. Support for the concept of DT also comes from the transformational-generativist tradition, Rigau (1981). Rigau claims that the sentences below, which are all about books, do not form coherent discourse as there is no apparent discourse topic.

Ex. 9 Els llibres són necessaris. El llibre de matemàtiques és damunt la taula. Un llibre és un bon amic. Els meus llibres tenen cobertes grogues.

A discourse may have more than one topic (assumpte) but coherence can be maintained in a discourse if the various topics are related to what

¹³ In a later publication van Dijk assigns the function of DT to the Macrostructure which “makes explicit the overall topics or themes of a text and at the same time defines what we could call the overall coherence of a text as well as its upshot or gist” (1980: 13).

she calls a main topic (assumpte principal or hyper topic (hiperassumpte). The implication here is that DT organizes the meaning of a text and does not have to be identified by a particular group of words. Thus, no single surface form or set of surface forms has, necessarily, to be linked isomorphically to a DT. DT forms part of a deep structure with myriad possible surface instantiations, a view shared, as we have seen, by van Dijk (1977).

An example of how a text may be coherent without having any explicit surface cohesive elements such as referential links or sentence connectors because there is a clear underlying DT organizing the text semantically is offered by Giora (1985: 17).

Ex. 10 Every person constructs a world of his own, from his illusions and hopes, from his love and weakness. Kafka's Prague was only the Prague of his thoughts and eyes, Nahum Gatman's little Tel Aviv was created by his hands, Nathan Atterman invented a Jaffa of his own poem... Everyone lives in his own Israel, according to his powers and talents¹⁴...

The organizing DT of this text can be construed as being about the way each person tends to create his/her own world.¹⁵ The propositions that follow confirm this fact: each new clause is an exemplification of what is stated in the first sentence. We have, therefore, a hierarchically organized semantic relationship of superordinate and hyponyms. It should be noted

¹⁴ For a similar example see Bransford and Johnson (1973: 400).

at this point that although there is a lack of overt sentence connection in the excerpt above, it is not totally lacking in surface cohesion as there is lexical cohesion between the terms “every person” and the human participants mentioned and between “world” and the various geographical locations referred to.

One seldom finds written discourse in which no surface connection at all is found. Lack of overt connection is more common in oral discourse. For instance, to understand that B is warning A not to go on a walk in the following sentences: A: *I'm going for a walk.* B: *It's raining,* one has to rely entirely on implicature.

Although DTs do not have to be explicit, in most cases of written discourse of the informative type -editorials, newspaper reports and expository essays- they are normally manifested by surface forms. This being the situation, it is important to identify the forms surface DTs can take. Giora (1985) explores the ways in which DTs can be made explicit and is particularly interested in what constitutes the minimum surface form of a DT.

If there is an explicit DT, Giora suggests that its minimal expression is a noun phrase and “a subsuming predicate” (1985: 17). This is the view held by Keenan & Shieffelin, who say that the DT is always a proposition, not just a noun phrase (1976: 380). Giora argues that noun phrases, are insufficient to embody a DT. The following chunk of text is incoherent

¹⁵For a similar example see Bransford and Johnson (1973: 400).

because the noun phrase **Mary** is not a strong enough connection to become a DT and this would explain why the example below is incoherent.

Ex. 7 They say Mary's very smart. (sic) Yeah, she has a nice handwriting and she lives with her uncle und she dyes her hair every now and then.

(1985: 21)

If a noun phrase was sufficient to form a DT the fact that all the sentences refer back to **Mary** would be sufficient for the text to be coherent, which it clearly is not. We must take into account, therefore, not only the noun phrase, but its predicate, to be able to affirm that the extract is coherent.

Giora's view of DT is more amenable to some researchers than van Dijk's. Brown and Yule (1983) criticize van Dijk's idea that text can be reduced to the kind of propositions seen in logic. They explain that such semantic reductionism will in fact create a string of propositions which will be, paradoxically, longer than the actual text analysed. What is more, they explain that the reduction of sentences to propositions amounts to nothing more than an "interpretation" of the text and is therefore subjective and will vary depending on the researcher (Brown & Yule, 1983: 109-110). This is a serious drawback to those who share van Dijk's views as the formal analysis of DT should be as objective as possible.

I agree with Brown and Yule in that a formal approach to textual analysis can offer insights into textual processes but that beyond such

insights it will not explicate a text any more than other kinds of exegesis. However, if we can understand van Dijk's "proposition" not as it is understood in logic, that is, the relation between a predicate and its arguments, nor as a synonym of sentence, but as one and only one semantic representation per clause or sentence, van Dijk's view of DT is a useful one. We must have some kind of mental representation of text, whether it is propositional or not and my view is that a DT would comprise mainly propositional information.

Brown and Yule (1982: 113) criticize van Dijk (1977) and Kintsch (1974) precisely for suggesting that DTs only express propositional content and not the textual and communicative content of discourse. I have to agree with Brown and Yule that, at least in spoken discourse, we often remember someone's attitude rather than the semantic content of the communication. But, with regards to the meaning that can be gleaned by the reader from the way a text is structured, my view is that it is similar to syntax in that it is secondary to propositional and attitudinal meaning both from the point of authorial goals and what eventually gets stored in memory¹⁶.

Can DT include textual and attitudinal meanings? Certainly it seems improbable that any meaning can be divided neatly into propositional, attitudinal and textual. All sentences have propositional meaning of some kind and if we look at a DT in the context of a text we may discover that it has attitudinal meaning. Even if this meaning is discovered *a posteriori* it

¹⁶ See (Steinberg, David D. 1982) for a comprehensive view of the superiority of semantic-based grammars over those based on syntax.

would be difficult to say that the DT did not “contain” it but that it was not evident at first sight. With regard to textual meaning, the name DT itself implies textual meaning of some kind. I will argue later on in this chapter that the textual meaning of DT with regard to position in the text is clear.

Trabasso et al. (1995: 211), in their study of story narratives, radically oppose what they see as the localist point of view of authors such as van Dijk, Kintsch, Giora, Reinhart, or indeed any of the authors that come from a text linguistics background. They claim that DT has nothing to do with surface elements and is a purely cognitive phenomenon. Surprisingly their view of DT is based on a the definition of topic held by a text-linguist, Reinhart (1980), namely her connectedness, consistency and relevance criteria. In the following extract they refer to the coherence of a story narrative:

The connectedness was established by semantic, causal-temporal, and logical relations between states and actions. Consistency was achieved by recurrent evaluation of goals, actions, and outcomes in terms of their fit to the overall goal/plans, and relevance was achieved by the use of the goal/plans as the topic throughout the discourse

(Trabasso et al. 1995: 211)

According to Trabasso et al. the reader continually contrasts the actions and outcomes and further goals expressed in the text with the original goals and plans in order to evaluate if they are consistent. They identify the topic with the hierarchically most important goal in the text. There are several problems that arise when topic is equated with goals.

The most important problem with the view of DT held by Trabasso et al. (1995) is that, although it may express a goal, this is not the only thing it does. All the thoughts which a speaker or writer may wish to express, not only DTs, are made up of two basic elements, *purpose*, which would include attitude, and *propositional content* (Steinberg, 1982:124). What is more, it might be true in a narrative that we perceive the goal or goals of a fictional participant but this is not true of the author's goals.

In editorials the goal of the writer is to communicate the point of view of the newspaper as regards certain events even though these goals may not be evident to the readers. The writer of novels may have other goals, he or she may want to make money, become famous or have a chance to express his or her views but this is very rarely made explicit. Indeed, it is often impossible to guess what the goals of a novelist are as it is not part of that particular genre to make them apparent. On the other hand, from the DT of an editorial or an expository text we can often infer the writer's goal(s) and the "purpose" of what is written.

It is my view that DTs in editorials normally express propositional content in an explicit manner while the author's goals remain implicit. Secondly, while DTs are a cognitive phenomenon the fact is that most DTs are made explicit in many genres, including the editorial genre. In the next section we will look at how and where DTs are made explicit.

III.6.2.2. The Importance of text-initial discourse topic

Many authors hold that a DT is normally found in text-initial position (Ervin-Tripp 1968; Hinds 1979; Werlich 1983; Giora 1985). The implication is, therefore, that most DTs are, as we suggested above, are explicit. Such DTs coincide with what have been called “topic sentences”, a concept which originated, according to Halliday (1994: 387), in American composition theory (1981: 76). We must bear in mind, however, that even in genres where DTs are made explicit, they are optional. Van Dijk (1988: 136) warns that topic sentences need not always occur but “are often given to emphasize the topic”.

Why is it that DT is so often found in discourse initial position in the form of a topic sentence? It appears from experimental evidence that initial position -in a sentence, in the case of theme, or in discourse, in the case of DT- is very powerful from a cognitive point of view as it makes the reader focus on one entity or idea -even though this may lead to a misinterpretation of a chunk of text -what Mitchell (1987), calls the garden path effect. Sanford and Moxey (1995: 172) prove in experiments that the function of certain surface forms e.g. definite noun phrase, pronouns, is to give instructions to the processor (reader or listener) on how to interpret subsequent text rather than adding declarative meaning. Although the topic sentence is different from items of this kind in that it supplies declarative information, its function, nevertheless, is also textual and forces the reader to “address partitions of memory” (ibid.), with a view to making text processing easier.

For van Dijk (1977: 151-152), the notion of the topic sentence limiting what can go next is important as DTs “determine for a discourse or part of it the range of possible CONCEPTS which may be used and thus are a global constraint on lexical insertion”. Similarly, Eggington and Ricento (1981) see the function of the topic sentence as creating the right frame for the subsequent text: “The first sentence creates a culturally shared **mind-set** about what the set of acceptable second sentences might be” (1981: 76).

Well chosen topic sentences reduce the amount of processing the reader has to do by making the reader focus on a set of concepts suggested by the explicit DT. Therefore, it is logical that they should go in initial position. According to Hinds (1980), topic sentence position is a cognitive strategy to aid text comprehension:

Clearly then, the purpose of placing topic sentences in paragraph initial position is to allow the reader to activate any collateral knowledge of this topic, along with knowledge of related information, in order to facilitate comprehension.

(Hinds, 1980: 124)

Further confirmation of the importance of the text-initial position of DT may be found in schema theory. Schemata are knowledge structures, “the organized background knowledge which leads us to *expect* or predict aspects in our interpretation of discourse” (Brown & Yule, 1983: 248). According to van Dijk following van Dijk and Kintsch (1983), the processing of text using schemata has a strategic nature. For van Dijk (1988: 20)

Unlike grammatical rules or formal algorithms, strategies are flexible, goal directed, and context dependent. They analyze various types of incoming information and handle internal representations in a tentative but effective way. Strategies allow parallel processing, that is, analysis of partial and incomplete information from various sources at the same time. Thus, the central interpretation processes that define discourse comprehension make flexible use of textual surface structures (i.e. morphophonological, syntactic and lexical), contextual information from ongoing interaction, properties of the social situation, and various types of knowledge representations in memory.

Colley, (1987) claims that most schema hierarchically organize memory; schemata vary from general to specific and have variables, or slots, which are filled or instantiated when they are “used to encode or process information” (1987: 116). So schemata guide the inferences that we make and are used to interpret “incoming sensory information, retrieve information from memory and guide the sequence of processing” (ibid.). The first part of the process is “data-driven”, therefore the nearer a DT is to the beginning of a text, the easier it will be for it to guide the reader in the right direction.

III.6.2.3. Discourse topic and text comprehension

The concept of DT ties in with what many authors now see as the reader's active participation in the reading process. Silberstein (1994: 12) claims that the reader "is an active, problem solving individual who coordinates a number of skills and strategies to facilitate comprehension".

Giora (1985) proposes that tying propositions to a DT is a dynamic concept from the reader or listener's stance and is based on the assessment and storage model of Reinhart (1981). In this model, the reader *constructs* a DT, which is normally found at the beginning of a text and when new propositions are encountered, they are confronted with those that have been stored. The new propositions are either added to the pool of propositions or rejected depending on whether they are compatible with the topic or not. Thus the construction of a DT is a cooperative venture between the producer and the interpreter.

Giora (1985: 20) sees DT as "an instruction from a writer to a reader on how to construct a discourse model". This view of text comprehension is fully compatible with that proposed by Rumelhart (1980: 37) who sees schemata as theories or hypotheses constructed by the reader, which if found successful can be used to understand incoming data and make predictions about what is coming. We must not forget that schemata are not absolutes, they vary from one individual to another which may explain why one person may understand one thing and another person something quite different.

III.6.2.4. Discourse topic & storage in long-term memory

Further evidence of the importance of DTs is found in the research on how processed texts are remembered. This is connected to an important property of DTs, whether they are made explicit or not, in that they normally entail other propositions and, as a corollary of this, can be used as summaries of the texts that they form part of.

given a discourse sequence S_i , and a proposition a , a is the topic of S_i , iff S_i , ENTAILS a . (...) In general the definition must also hold, however, for those sequences where a is not an element of S_i . In that case we require that the ordered sequence S_i of propositions JOINTLY and non-trivially entails a .

(van Dijk 1977:134)

The ability to sum up texts is an important cognitive property of DTs. Jarvella (1971) pointed out the fact that content is retained long after wording, i.e., form, is forgotten. So meaning is often all that remains in the long-term memory. Van Dijk (1983: 32) states that "the overall concept (...) is most readily retrieved in memory". We tend to remember meaning over form and, what is more, the higher the meaning is in the hierarchy or macrostructure, the more likely we are to remember it. This means that DT, which is at the top of the memory heap (Brown & Yule, 1983), is what we recall more frequently because it is what gets stored in our long-term memory:

The strategic processes of analysis and interpretation take place in working or short-term memory. The result of these online operations are then stored in episodic memory, which like semantic (social) memory is part of long-term memory.

(Van Dijk, 1988: 21)

This importance of DT in the structure of a text is supported by Carrell (1987). In research on “content schemata”, that is, the “knowledge relative to the content domain of a text” and “formal schemata”, i.e., “knowledge relative to the formal, rhetorical organizational structures of different types of texts” (Carrel, 1987: 461), she finds that knowledge of the world helps speed up text comprehension but when it comes to remembering “top-level” content, the rhetorical organization of the text is more important.

III.6.2.5. Topic change and development

We saw earlier that if a proposition can be subsumed by a DT it is felt to be coherent and can then be stored and added to what Stalnaker (1978) calls a context set. On the contrary, when an incoming message content “is no longer subsumable under a given DT, it either opens a new entry under which subsequent information will be stored, or it is signalled as unrelated’ (Giora, 1985: 22). The “new entry” Giora refers to may mean an independent DT or a sub-topic, she does not make this issue clear.

However, she does state that the difference between DTs and digressions hinges on the fact that the latter are made up of propositions that are only

felt to be connected to the rest of the discourse when they are preceded by digression markers, such as “by the way”. She adds that unrelated propositions are deemed to be incoherent if not preceded by such markers.

According to J. Allen (1987: 399), topic change can be signalled by “cue phrases”¹⁷ such as the one above and others like *anyway, in any event, so,* etc. It can also be signalled by tense switch, or more subtly by changing from the description of what are perceived as actual events to those of a hypothetical nature. All these cases normally appear in spoken discourse and informal written discourse such as personal letter writing. From what we have seen above, Giora and Allen seem to be suggesting that topic change has to be introduced by digression markers while sub-topics, although they do not define them, do not.

For van Dijk (1977: 94) change is not only possible but necessary as we cannot just go over the same things again and again. In fact too much repetition or tautology (Wittgenstein 1918) is a sign of an incoherent text. However, a better term for the kind of change van Dijk refers to would be “discourse development”. For discourse development to take place in a coherent fashion there are constraints on how new elements can be introduced into the text. Van Dijk (1977) claims that “individuals” which have just been introduced into the discourse are required to be:

related to at least one of the individuals already 'present'. Similarly we would also expect assigned properties to be related to properties

¹⁷ These are called “framing moves” by Sinclair and Coulthard (1975)

already assigned." And finally a change of world or situation will also be constrained by some accessibility relations to the world or situation already established

(Van Dijk, 1977: 94)

Topic development depends on the existence of a relation, explicit or implicit, between given or old information and new information. All the propositions in a text should be connected either through surface elements or because they are related semantically to the same DT. Normally, a coherent text would include propositions belonging to sub-topics, which, in turn are connected to a DT.

Van Dijk (1977: 97) claims that there are several requirements for discourse development to be coherent in descriptions or narratives. First, unless otherwise indicated, temporal and causal order in the description of events should correspond to the linear ordering in discourse; second, there should be "continuity with regards to individuals" (van Dijk, 1977: 98) in a particular discourse; and third, there should be coherence between "the assumed normality of the worlds involved" in the discourse and "our knowledge about the structure of worlds in general and of particular states of affairs or courses of events" (van Dijk, 1977: 99).

Van Dijk acknowledges that our descriptions of places, people and events may not be as simple as we have just described. A writer may choose to alter the canonical order of events or write about things that have never happened nor could ever happen. In such cases, for the development of the

text to be considered coherent the deviations from the norm must be signalled.

Another aspect to take into consideration when deciding if the development of a text is coherent or not is the level of description, that is, an event or state can be under-complete, i.e., omit essential information, or overcomplete, i.e., too specific (see section III.5.3.). The level of description is not an isolated phenomenon but depends on "the topic of conversation and, in a wider sense, on the purposes of the communicative act" (van Dijk, 1977: 110). The writer must give the reader sufficient clues in each sentence, or paragraph, for the reader to be able to progress smoothly through the text.

The word "change" seems to imply that we may say things that are totally unconnected as long as digression markers are used. Certainly, one may talk about the most varied of subjects when conducting a conversation, but presumably they all have to do with the people taking part in the conversation, if nothing else.

We must not forget that a communicative event like a conversation is a lot more than just what is said. In this sense, topic is connected to the goal of the genre of conversation, that is, maintaining communication. Very often the things we talk about are the least important part of such a social event. So, from a wider perspective, even the widest ranging conversation would have a DT, i.e., the "topics held to be of interest to the participants". I

prefer the term “topic shift” (Brown & Yule, 1984: 69) as it has a less abrupt meaning more in accordance with reality.

Gardner (1987) claims that there are several ways of modifying topic that are not as radical as topic change. Such a modification of topic is **topic shift**. In conversation, this is connected to **topic introduction** and **topic continuation**. The first refers to the initial topic after the greeting stage is over, the second is when “the primary presupposition in an exchange is linked directly to the primary presupposition entailed in the utterances of the immediately preceding exchange”. Topic shift itself

“occurs if the primary presupposition entailed in the utterances of an exchange cannot be linked to the previous exchange, but can be linked to an earlier exchange which is linked to that previous exchange by topic continuation.

Gardner (1987: 138)

Gardner (1987: 139) lists three types of topic shift (i) if the topic comes to an end, an earlier topic can be returned to; (ii) “topic shading”, when the scope of the topic is increased; (iii) “topic fading” is a chunk of discourse which refers both back to earlier topics and forward to a new topic.

Gardner (1987: 139) also mentions **topic recycling** and **topic reintroduction**. Both refer back to earlier topics but the first is linked to a previous sequence through topic shift while the latter is not. Finally, **topic change** only exists when a new topic has no links to previous exchanges in the discourse.

At a more local level “change of topic” is often used in a confusing way. A case in point is the use of the term by Givón (1995: 72). She claims that there are local coherence devices (“discontinuous” anaphoric devices, i.e. stressed pronouns and full lexical nouns) that signal new elements, “topic change”, in a discourse. In the following text, such change is signalled by italics and continued activation of “topic” by bold type:

"...**He** circled it wearily as a wolf, [Ø] studying it from all angles, and when finally **he** stopped within a dozen feet of *the dead man*, **he** knew much of what had happened at this place.

The *dead man* had ridden a freshly shod horse into the playa from the north, and when [Ø] shot **he** had tumbled from the saddle and *the horse* had galloped away. *Several riders* on unshod ponies had then approached *the body* and *one* had dismounted to [Ø] collect the weapons..."

(Givón 1995:72)

It is clear that the cases of topic change here do not mean a complete departure from the previously activated topic or topics. The stressed pronouns or full lexical nouns do not tell us enough of the “aboutness” of a text to be called a DT. Givón (1995) seems to be referring to how one can focus on a particular participant in order to signal it as important – Beaugrande (1980) uses the term “topic change” in a similar sense. In any case none of the words in bold type are the DT of the text, which is how a man finds a dead body. DTs are semantic entities whereas focus on participants in a text is meaning of a completely different kind, textual meaning. Brown & Yule (1984: 135) following Perfetti & Goldman (1974)

refer to this phenomenon, characterized by the foregrounding of one particular entity, as “topic entity”. They also make it clear that such a phenomenon is not the same as DT.

III.6.2.5. Sub-topics

Some authors, van Dijk (1977) and Nathinger & Decarnco (1992), claim that there is an intermediate textual structure between DT and “topic entity”, that is, an element that makes up the DT such as an argument. Such a structure is a sub-topic. Van Dijk (1977:139) states that when a proposition, or series of propositions cannot be assigned to any of the previous sub-topics, a predicate is “thematized” and “acquires independent topical character”.

A rather different term from sub-topic, but one which has the same type of function is “staging”, mentioned by Brown and Yule (1984: 134). Staging refers to the way a particular element becomes prominent in a segment of discourse. They suggest that this “must have a significant effect both on the process of interpretation and on the process of subsequent recall” (ibid.).

That there are entities in a text that constitute sequences of the DT is plausible. Such sub-topics however, would be made up of an argument, normally a noun-phrase, and a predicate but would only entail a sub-set of propositions and not all the propositions in the complete text. The use of the term “sub-topics” implies that there is a hierarchically superior entity

to which it belongs, which in turn, means that sub-topics can be accommodated in a coherent text, that is, a text with a DT. All the sub-topics in a text would, in other words, be entailed by the DT. Nathinger & Decarnco (1992: 96) see sub-topics as “local organizers” which “serve as development and support for the topics” and aid top-down processing, i.e., the activation of world knowledge that helps the reader to understand the text.

III.6.2.6. Concluding remarks on DT

The notion of discourse topic is of paramount interest to anyone involved in looking at cohesion and cohesive elements in a text. Without a DT, a text is just a random set of sentences and the re-entry items, or *consecutio temporum* to mention just two markers of coherence would be of very little use to the reader or listener when trying to come to a mental representation of a text. We will see in the next chapter that cohesion is intimately related to coherence and in my view cohesion could be seen mainly as the surface manifestation of coherence of which DT is such an important part.

V.7. Concluding Remarks

I will now attempt to summarize what coherence is. Most, if not all, researchers agree that coherence goes beyond the text *per se*. That is, it belongs both to the text and to the minds of the decoders. We interpret

what we hear and read from our knowledge of the world, encyclopaedic knowledge and the context. As each individual has different quantities of knowledge and the context may change everything we hear and read will be interpreted differently. What is coherent in one situation might not be in another.

It has been proved that coherence does not depend on surface markers. It is always possible to find examples where surface markers are not present. However, it would be difficult to find a text of more than two sentences without any markers of cohesion at all. This depends to a great extent on what genre a text belongs to, i.e., it is clear that the here and now of casual conversation requires fewer markers than, for instance, an essay. As surface markers, usually covered under the term *cohesion*, are important, the next section will be an attempt to come to a working definition of this term.

IV. COHESION

Hatakeyama *et al* (1985) place cohesion between coherence, an abstract property of texts which is hierarchically at a higher level, and what they call **connex expressions**, which are at a lower level. They define **cohesion** and **connexity**, as elements of the verbal, i.e. non-abstract, construction of a text. An expression is described as **connex** when all its independent units have, for instance, the same rhythmic or syntactic pattern (irrespective of their meanings), or when the same word is present in all the independent units, and so on.

Hankamer *et al.* (1985) state that cohesion constitutes **strong connexity** and that connex expression may become cohesive when their sense-semantic thematic structure fulfills certain conditions:

(a) the themes of the (syntactically well-formed) independent units of the subsequences of an expression must be united to a subsequent theme by means of sense-semantic (sic) relation, and the subsequences must also be well-formed with regard to the theme and/or rheme progression; (b) the subsequence themes must be united to the theme (or theme complex) of the expression by means of sense-semantic relations

(Hankamer *et al.* 1985: 68-9)

Hatakeyama *et al.* do not offer examples of cohesion but my interpretation is that they mean that pairs or chains formed by an antecedent and subsequent anaphors must maintain semantic identity

relations not only between themselves but between different pairs or chains and ultimately to the topic of the discourse.

For most researchers cohesion is a much less problematic term than coherence and most agree in general that coherence is an abstract term and cohesion a more tangible one.

Coherence	Cohesion
Coherence is defined as “the relationship between illocutionary acts (Widdowson 1978: 28).	“the overt linguistically-signalled relationship between propositions” (Widdowson 1978: 31)
“concerns the ways in which the components of the textual world, i.e. the configuration of concepts and relations which underlie the surface text, are mutually accessible and relevant” (Beaugrande and Dressler 1981: 3-4)	“concerns the ways in which the components of the surface text, i.e. the actual words we hear or see, are mutually connected within a sequence” (Beaugrande and Dressler 1981: 3)
Coherence is “subjective and judgements concerning it may vary from reader to reader ... coherence is a facet of the reader's evaluation of a text. (Hoey 1991: 12)	“cohesion is a property of the text, and ... is objective, capable in principle of automatic recognition” (Hoey 1991: 12)

Basically, we can see that for the authors above coherence is a more abstract term and refers to connections between elements in the discourse made by the reader or listener, which may be implicit or explicit. One drawback to the above definitions is that cohesion is seen as a purely surface phenomenon. Hoey talks above about “automatic



recognition". Stoddard's definition (1991) is nearer to reality as she states that both the notions of coherence and cohesion should be viewed from the reader's point of view. "Cohesion" is a mental construct resulting from reader processing" in which "linguistic signals indicate no more than the potential for cohesion" (Stoddard 1991: 17).

She adds that coherence differs from cohesion in that although both are a product of reader-processing, coherence relies less on syntactic elements. Many cohesive elements need reader-processing to exist at all. For instance, the pronoun *he*, may refer to either of the men in the following example:

Ex. 1 President Bush met comedian Rowan Atkinson last week.
It was the first time that he had met the "Mr Bean" in person.

To correctly interpret the pronoun *he*, we would have to know that Rowan Atkinson is Mr Bean in order to discard the interpretation that *he* refers to Rowan Atkinson. Such interpretations can only take place if we treat cohesion as a reader-construct. Our definition of cohesion could be, therefore: "surface markers which are judged by the reader to be connections between different propositions".

IV.1. Cohesion and Repetition

Repetition and its connection to cohesion has been dealt with by many authors: Foucault 1972, Winter (1974), Rimmon-Kenan (1980), Fries (1982), Johnstone (1987), Bublitz (1988), Pennock (1994), Tyler (1994).

The term "repetition" must, perforce, appear many times in a dissertation that deals with text coherence and is even more closely linked to the phenomenon of cohesion. This does not mean that repetition only concerns questions of coherence and cohesion. Tannen states that

... repetition is at the heart of language. From fixed expressions, through proverbs to phonemes and morphemes, language is structured by repetition because repetition is structure
(Tannen 1989: 20)

However, it is in the field of textual cohesion in which many linguists have observed a close relationship between repetition and coherence. Johnstone (1987: 212) states that repetition is a mechanism for assimilating the new to the old. Hobbs (1979) maintains that repetition - what he calls elaboration- is a sign of coherence because "there must be some reason for saying it again" (1979: 73). This brings up the question of intentionality. As Tannen (1987) points out: "Every aspect of discourse analysis raises questions of intentionality" (1987: 27). Hattim & Mason (1990) agree that language use is motivated and that repetition, which they call "recurrence" is not accidental.

But do speakers and writers deliberately use repetition to get across more efficiently what they want to communicate or is it simply that when we stick to one particular subject, words have to be repeated? According to Tannen (1987), lexical repetition is used to set the topic of the conversation and so repetition has a very important role in making a text coherent and being a surface phenomenon must be, therefore, a sign of cohesion (Tannen 1987: 73). Repetition is a form of "discourse

management” according to Goffman (1981), who goes on to say that discourse is organized through the following requirement: “that a theme once established, be adhered to throughout a segment of discourse” (1981: 287). This is corroborated by Hattim & Mason (1990: 199) who claim that “the cohesive devices at play are not random; they are motivated by overall rhetorical purpose”.

Moreover, is repetition merely a sign of cohesion? Tannen claims that repetition “evidences a speaker’s attitude” (Tannen 1989: 50). Shepherd (1990) states that repetition is often the device chosen to bring a theme (or speaker) to the attention of the other participants is (Shepherd 1990: 630). According to Beaugrande & Dressler (1981: 55) repetition is “prominently used to assert and re-affirm one’s viewpoint”. Repetition can “serve the purposes of showing listenership and humor, and making more talk possible” (Tannen 1987: 27). As Shepherd (1990) notes episodes in the oral tradition of story telling are opened and closed with repetition (1990: 635). Repetition is also a question of genre, for instance, legal language is well-known for using as little repetition as possible.

Foucault (1972) suggests that all text is intertext or, in other words, all discourse is structured by repetition. Repetition also has to do with the culture one belongs to. Certainly, Spanish writers seem to avoid repetition as far as is humanly possible, whereas writers in English do not seem to be as worried about this aspect of discourse rhetoric. Having said this, too much repetition is avoided in written texts in English too. Tannen remarks on the “bad press” that repetition suffers. It is almost

universally criticized in our culture and has to do with the fallacy that all discourse should be used to convey information (1987: 585).

What exactly does repetition refer to, i.e., does it mean exact repetition of form, is derivation allowed, for instance? Do we mean the repetition of meaning, i.e., synonymy? To count as repetition, should we require repetition of both form and meaning? And if a repeated term is accompanied by other words, is that counted as repetition? Bublitz (1988) uses both semantic and formal criteria. Repetition for him is, therefore, the word-for-word reproduction of an element, frequently a sequence of words, which occurs, if not in the immediately preceding vicinity, then at least in the immediately preceding contribution of either the speaker himself, which is a special case, or his fellow-speaker (1988: 356). He does admit that reference shift and minor changes or variations of form can be tolerated. This is just as well as such restrictions would reduce repetition to the mere reiteration of proper nouns.

The definition of other researchers is considerably wider. Tannen (1989) states that there are two poles of repetition: 'exact repetition' and 'paraphrase'. Normally however, "repetition occurs with variation - repetition with variation, such as questions transformed into statements, statements changed into questions, repetition with a single word or phrase changed, and repetition with change of person or tense." (Tannen 1989: 54)

We now have to ask ourselves whether repetition is cohesive or not? Some consider the mere act of repeating a word as a sign of text

cohesion, a type of lexical cohesion. A stricter view of lexical cohesion, which I hold, would only consider that the repeated term is cohesive if it refers specifically to a particular antecedent or group of antecedents. This question is linked to the issue of whether repetition presupposes intentionality. I maintain that researchers have no choice as to whether they should include all the repetition in a text as potentially cohesive because it would be almost impossible to decide whether the author of a text has used repetition deliberately or not.

The act of writing in itself has intentionality, and is made up of communicative goals. However, it is very difficult to decide exactly which structures or words have a particular intentionality behind them. Can re-entry of a word be considered repetition if the word has been altered slightly or if it is accompanied by modifiers or by new modifiers? Again, my answer would be that it can but only if the re-entered word refers back to a specific antecedent. For example if a sentence such as *Mr Blair won the election* was followed by *Mr Blair's wife was very pleased*, I would consider the second underlined expression as repetition of the first. If however, the sentence *I met a very interesting man last week* was followed by *He is the first person to live on a man-made moon orbiting Venus* I would not deem the second *man* to be a case of repetition, nor cohesive. I do not feel that synonymy or any other kind of repetition should be given that name as it would cause confusion.

IV.2. Cohesion and Text Organization

In this section we will be looking at the way the notion of cohesion has been applied to the analysis of the organization of texts. Although research into text structure has been carried out by authors of several tendencies, I have decided to concentrate on the work of three researchers within the British school of discourse analysis. This is because there has been a clear and, in many aspects, fruitful evolution in the analysis of texts that cannot be found in work by researchers from different schools. The result of their work is the production of better and more sophisticated tools for text analysis.

We will look first at the work of Halliday & Hasan in the seminal publication *Cohesion in English*. Next, I will look at later developments by these same two authors followed by Parsons, a disciple of Hasan, Hoey and Francis.

IV.3. Cohesive Relationships in Cohesion in English

As we saw in the last chapter, for Halliday and Hasan (1976) texture, that is, what differentiates text from non-text, is provided by the relations of cohesion that exist between anaphoric elements and the elements that they refer to. Cohesion is defined as a semantic concept which refers to the meaning relations that exist within the text and which define it as a text. It belongs to one of the three functional semantic components of language -the Textual, or text-forming component in the linguistic system. This is made up of theme and information structures which cover the speaker's organization of the

clause as a message and the non-hierarchical organization of information on the basis of whether it is new or old.²

Cohesion implies that one element in a text depends for its interpretation on another. That is, one element presupposes the existence of another. The term used to refer to a single instance of cohesion is a "tie" (Halliday & Hasan 1976: 4). The cohesive relationships that hold between sentences in the text, or ties, are divided into five main types: reference, substitution, ellipsis, conjunction and lexical cohesion.

IV.3.1. Referential cohesion

Referential cohesion is realized by personal pronouns, including possessive determiners and possessive pronouns, demonstratives, the definite article³ and comparatives. It is characterized by what Halliday & Hasan call "continuity of reference", that is, "the same thing enters into the discourse a second time" (1976: 31). So in the following example:

Ex. 2 The birds flew down to the trees below. Soon *they* could be heard cooing quietly to each other.

² The other components are the IDEATIONAL component concerned with the expression of content, which is itself divided into the experiential and the logical, and the INTERPERSONAL component concerned with the social, expressive and conative function of language, that is, which expresses the speakers' attitudes, judgements and motives.

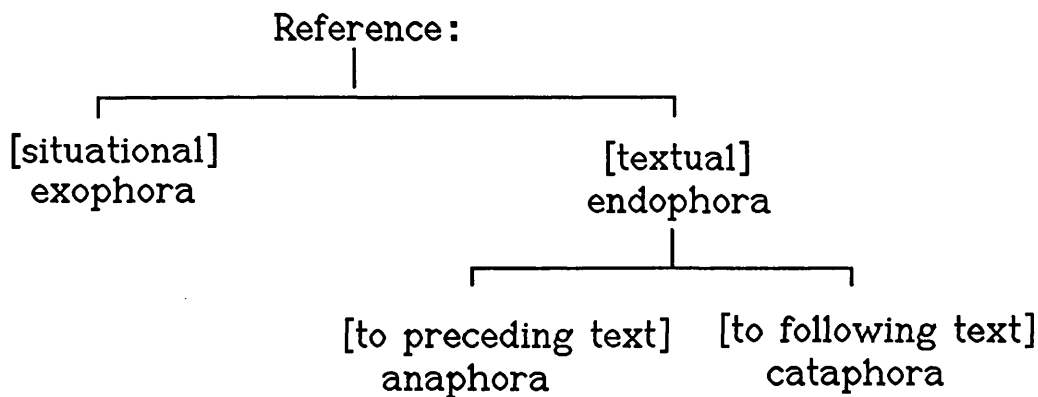
³ Stoddard disagrees with HH's claim that the definite article is anaphoric by itself. She says the definite article is only a part of a definite noun phrase. In fact the noun is what maintains the semantic connection with the antecedent. (Stoddard 1991: 34)

the pronoun *they* does not refer to any birds but to the birds that have previously been mentioned. It would not matter either if the referential item used were not, as in the case above, nominative. The reference in the second sentence could be carried by a possessive determiner as in (2) or an objective pronoun as in (3):

Ex. 3 Soon *their* quiet cooing could be heard.

I could see *them* cooing quietly to each other.⁴

Halliday & Hasan (1976) distinguish two main kinds of reference. The main division being between **exophoric**, or situational reference, and **endophoric**, or textual reference:



(1976: 33)

According to Halliday and Hasan (1976: 37) a reference item is neither inherently endophoric or exophoric but merely **phoric**, i.e. it has the **property of reference**. This means that a reference item may be either endophoric or exophoric or both. Halliday and Hasan (1976) deal

⁴Possessive pronouns are doubly anaphoric in that they are both referential and elliptical. In the sentence: *Theirs*

with exophoric reference sparingly as, according to them, only endophoric reference is capable of creating texture.

IV.3.1.1. Pronouns

Personal pronouns are inherently cohesive as they normally refer anaphorically to a preceding item in the text. First and second person forms are normally interpreted exophorically, except in cases of quoted speech like the following:

Ex. 4 Before he left he had written a note. It said, "I have gone to the shops, I'll be back in a minute."

Although all third person pronouns can be either exophoric or endophoric, Halliday and Hasan (1976) claim that they are assumed to be anaphoric unless they are clearly not so.

IV.3.1.2. Demonstratives

Demonstrative reference is according to Halliday & Hasan (1976), a form of **verbal pointing**. The speaker identifies the referent by locating it on a scale of proximity. They differentiate between the selective modifiers/heads: *this, these, that those* ; the adjuncts: *here, there, now, then*; and the non-selective modifier: *the*. The items *this, these, here* and *now* are near on a scale of proximity, and *that, those, there*, and *then* are far. The item *the* is neutral in this aspect.

are beautiful, theirs refers to a possessor and the thing possessed.

Halliday & Hasan claim that if a demonstrative is used with a noun, the meaning is always identical to that of the antecedent. However, this seems to contradict what they say about the "meaning" that words like *this* or *that* provide, i.e. the sense of proximity or distance. See example 5. Moreover, they suggest that *this/these* is preferred when the referent "is in some way associated with the speaker" Halliday and Hasan (1976: 59-60) as in example 6.

Ex. 5 "Give me that car, at the back."

Ex. 6 These are my favourites.

Halliday & Hasan (1976: 64) highlight the important cohesive role played by the demonstratives, when they are used as heads. Instead of referring to a particular item or items, they refer to "the general class denoted by the noun, including but not limited to the particular member or members of that class being referred to in the presupposed item."

IV.3.1.3. Comparatives

Halliday & Hasan (1976) include comparatives in the category of referential cohesion. There are comparatives of identity, similarity, difference, quantity or quality:

Ex. 7 "When £8,00 is a minor matter, it must be really large-scale crime that is in question?"

"Bigger rackets go on."

(1976: 83)

They (1976: 79) also include “such” among the comparatives as in example

Ex. 8 “I see nobody on the road,” said Alice. “I only wish I had such eyes,” the King remarked, “To be able to see nobody - and at that distance too!”

However, none of the examples in my corpus seem clear cut comparative as the above and are semantically more akin to the determiners “the” and “this”. In example 9 from *A New Spin on Pay Policy* the anaphor “such choices”, which re-enters “Labour will freeze top salaries in the public sector for its first year in office”, seems to be a synonym of “these choices” rather than a comparative.

Ex. 9 underlying such choices there is a genuine wish to redistribute spending in accordance with a set of socially progressive priorities.

IV.3.1.4. Substitution

The items covered under the term **substitution** are *one(s)*, *so* and *not, the same, do, do so*. Halliday & Hasan (1976: 88) claim that the main difference between substitution and reference is that the former is a “relation in wording”, and the latter, in meaning. So, for these authors, the relation between a substitute and its antecedent is grammatical and essentially textual, whereas the relation between a reference item and its antecedent is a semantic one. The differences between these two forms of textual cohesion can be seen in examples 10, 11, and 12:

Ex. 10 Peter went for a walk. He didn't get back till late.

Ex. 11 Peter went for a walk. His father didn't see him.

Ex. 12 Peter's car is too slow. He must get a faster one.

In 10 the reference item *He* coheres with *Peter* due to their semantic identity. This identity would hold even if the function of the antecedent were different from that of the reference item as in 11 in which *Peter* is subject, whereas *His* and *him* are possessive and complement respectively. Moreover, in 10 and 11 the reference items refer to one particular person, not just anyone called Peter. In 12, however, *one* has, necessarily, the same structural function as its antecedent. Semantically, *one* does not totally identify with its antecedent. In 12 *one* does not mean *Peter's car* but a car which is faster than the one Peter has. In this way substitutes always introduce a modification of some kind or as Halliday & Hasan (1976) put it, they repudiate a part of the antecedent.

IV.3.1.5. Ellipsis

According to Halliday & Hasan, ellipsis and substitution are similar in that both are fundamentally relations between parts of a text. The authors claim that ellipsis is really a case of **zero substitution**. Thus, they classify ellipsis according to the kind of items involved: nominal ellipsis, verbal ellipsis and clausal ellipsis. They are careful to distinguish between ellipsis, in which something structurally necessary is omitted, and structurally complete linguistic chunks which leave certain pieces of

information unsaid. In 13, for example, we have a sentence which abounds in any natural language:

Ex. 13 She left after the concert.

Although we might ask ourselves who *She* is and what kind of concert she went to we can hardly say that the sentence is incomplete structurally.⁵

IV.3.1.6. Conjunction

According to Halliday and Hasan (1976), cohesion realized through conjunctive expressions is classified on semantic grounds as additive, adversative, causal and temporal. Expressions of this kind are not primarily cohesive but presuppose the presence of other elements in the text or discourse. Conjunction specifies the way two parts of a sentence, or two sentences are systematically connected (my emphasis).

Halliday & Hasan (1976) do not discuss conjunction within the clause as it does not act, according to them, as a cohesive element. They include prepositions + reference items, such as *after that, despite this*, etc., among the conjunctions proper. They argue that many conjunctive adverbs contain primitive reference items and that the analytical forms such as *therefore*, and *thereby* are an amalgam of two cohesive forces, i.e. conjunction and reference. As many expressions have two forms:

⁵ Mathews (1981) differentiates between incomplete sentences such as "Don't you think you were driving to fast? *Certainly I was.*" (My italics) and incomplete utterances, where a sentence is not finished for pragmatic reasons as in "Please, would you mind opening...?" He states that this truncated sentence might suffice if we point at a window while saying it.

after that/afterwards, it would be strange to state that they are examples of different types of cohesion.

IV.3.2. Critical review of *Cohesion in English*

The work done in Halliday & Hasan (1976), has had a great influence on linguists inside and outside the Systemic-Functional world. Nonetheless, it also came in for extensive criticism especially from linguists from the transformational-generativist school, an example being Huddleston (1978), and from discourse analysts such as Brown and Yule (1983). Huddleston (1978), in his review of *Cohesion in English*, does not accept Halliday and Hasan's use of the word **reference** when what is meant is the cohesive relation between a pronoun and its antecedent. This is due to the fact that **reference**⁶ is traditionally used in the philosophy of language and in most linguistic writings with the meaning of signalling or picking out "a certain entity about which something is being stated" (Huddleston, 1978: 336). So, in the example below:

Ex. 14 Look at him!

the pronoun *him* refers, in the traditional sense, to a non-linguistic entity. Halliday and Hasan (1976) would classify this as a case of exophoric reference between the pronoun and its antecedent.⁷

⁶From this point onwards, Reference spelled with a capital letter will signify the traditional sense of the word and not Halliday and Hasan's.

⁷Brown and Yule (1986) agree with Huddleston that H & H's (1976) choice of wording is confusing to say the least.

Ex. 15 John did not come. -Was *he* ill?

In a sentence like 15, Huddleston states that *he* is Anaphoric to the linguistic expression *John* but "refers" to John, a non-linguistic entity that is outside the text, in the "situation". For Halliday & Hasan (1976), both the relation between *he* and the linguistic expression *John*, and *he* and the person John, are referential. Huddleston (1978) argues that Halliday & Hasan's use of the term "reference" is confusing and obviates the difference between antecedent and referent.

Huddleston (1978) next objects to Halliday and Hasan's rigid division of "phoric" relations into reference, substitution, ellipsis and lexical cohesion. As we saw above, for Halliday and Hasan (1976) reference involves a relation on a semantic level and substitution a relation between forms. Therefore, a referential anaphor and its antecedent need not have the same syntactic function, whereas in the case of substitution this is a necessary requirement. Moreover, they also state that replacement of anaphors by their antecedents is not always possible with referential anaphora but it is in the case of substitution. So, in 11 *His* could not be replaced by its antecedent *Peter*.

Examples like 11 above are unconvincing, according to Huddleston, as they "depend on purely "surface" identification of anaphor and antecedent" (1978: 342). If the possessive element in *his* was abstracted

away, leaving the lexeme HE, replacement would be possible.⁸ In example 16 replacement is possible but this is not always the case.

Ex. 16 You must tell her. -I've already done so.

(1976: 342)

As we can see *tell her* could not replace *done so* without some kind of modification. More evidence against Halliday & Hasan's (1976) claim that replacement is not always possible is provided by the following examples of ellipsis

Ex. 17 What legs she had! - Yes, didn't she(?)

Ex. 18 What are you doing? - Trying to find my glasses.

If what is presupposed by substitution is merely the "wording" the result of "filling out" 17 would be the following:

<i>Didn't she have what legs</i>	= ungrammatical
<i>Didn't she have legs</i>	= not the same meaning
<i>Didn't she have gorgeous legs</i>	= an approximate paraphrase

In 17 we cannot fill out the sentence with the words *you* and *are*. We would need both the person and the verb: *I am trying to find my glasses*. Huddleston (1978), therefore, argues that substitution and ellipsis often involve identity of a rather more abstract kind than Halliday & Hasan admit to.

⁸ This difference in opinion is natural as Huddleston is a linguist from the Generativist school. His hostility towards systemic grammar is barely disguised in his criticism of various aspects of *Cohesion in English*.

Halliday & Hasan's (1976) assertion that there is total identification between a referential anaphor and its antecedent is questioned by Huddleston (1978), who claims that anaphors can contain elements of meaning which are not expressed in the antecedent whether they are pronouns or definite noun phrases.

Ex. 19 The Dean is at home. She has sprained her ankle.

Ex. 20 John walked into the room. The young reporter had a wild look in his eye.

In 19 the pronoun *She* gives us extra information i.e. the gender of the grammatical subject. The definite noun phrase in 20 tells us that *John* is a *young reporter*.

Huddleston (1978) further claims that the opposition between referential anaphora and substitution, which Halliday and Hasan (1976) base on the fact that the former involves identity of reference and the latter does not, really depends on the type of noun phrase acting as antecedent. Although substitutive anaphors are never referring expressions and therefore cannot be co-referential with their antecedents, they may signal implicit reference as in 21. This is because John is a referring expression and we understand implicitly that Bill likes the same person as Max likes. In 22, however, "a new car" is not a referring expression, it does not pick out a particular entity, and so the question of co-reference does not arise..

Ex. 21 Max likes John and Bill does too.

Ex. 22 Max bought a new car and Bill did too.

Example 23 is a case of a pronoun being used in a non-referential way as *nobody* points to no Referent in particular.

Ex. 23 Nobody likes to admit he is a failure.

Halliday and Hasan's (1976) view of comparatives as identity of reference items is questioned by Huddleston (1978). He does not agree with them when they claim that *wittier* in the sentence: *Max is intelligent. But Tom is wittier* refers anaphorically to *Max*. If anything, he argues, the comparison is between *Tom* and *Max*, or rather between how witty *Tom* is and how witty *Max* is.

Brown and Yule (1983) go on to criticize Halliday and Hasan's (1976) conception of endophoric co-reference which requires that the reader look inside the text to find what is being referred to. The implication of this is that no matter how far into a text a reader gets he/she will always have to relate the latest reference to the original presupposed item which might precede it by several pages. In some cases the reader would have to go back even further to find the original reference as Chafe (1972: 40) points out. He mentions the Arthur Koestler novel *The case of the midwife toad* in which 105 pages separate an anaphor **the note** and its antecedent **a letter**.

According to Chafe, definiteness can be maintained if the context in which the referent is reintroduced is "narrow enough to make the referent identifiable." Brown and Yule (1983: 200-1) suggest that the reader:

establishes a referent in his mental representation of the discourse and relates subsequent references to that referent back to his mental representation, rather than to the original verbal expression in the text.

Brown and Yule (1983) support Huddleston's view that reference does not always involve total identification between antecedent and pronoun as the thing signalled by the antecedent may be different from the object signalled by the pronoun as we can see in 24 taken from Halliday and Hasan (1976: 2)

Ex. 24 Wash and core six cooking apples. Put them into a fireproof dish.

Brown and Yule (1983) argue that *them* in the second sentence does not simply refer to *six cooking apples*, it now refers to six cooking apples that have been washed and cored. Another example from Hendricks (1976: 69) illustrates this even more clearly: *Mary married a confirmed bachelor and two years later divorced him*. The pronoun *him* cannot be said to simply replace the noun phrase *a confirmed bachelor*, otherwise a semantic anomaly would result: *Mary divorced a confirmed bachelor*. Brown and Yule (1983) disagree with Halliday and Hasan's view of the cumulative effect of co-reference and suggest that the term should be used to cover not only the replacement of antecedents by pronouns but their modification and amplification throughout a text.

Lastly, Halliday & Hasan (1976), albeit very briefly, discuss lexical cohesion, or, in other words, the reiteration of the same lexical item or of semantically similar lexical items. They use the term **collocation** to

refer to the regular co-occurrence of lexical items such as **office, desk,** etc. Huddleston is unwilling to subsume this phenomena under the concept of Anaphora which he defines as "the relation between an Anaphora and an Antecedent" although he admits that lexical coherence does "make the text cohere in some very general sense" (1978: 351).

Hasan herself -in Halliday & Hasan (1984)- later acknowledges the weakness of the collocational category and concludes:

While I firmly believe that behind the notion of collocation is an intuitive reality, I have come to accept the fact that unless we can unpack the details of the relations involved in collocation in the Firthian sense, it is best to avoid the category in research. The problems of inter-subjective reliability cannot be ignored.

(Hasan 1984: 195)

Hoey (1991) criticizes the term collocation as primarily manifestations of lexical relations and only in a secondary sense act in a textual sense (Hoey 1991: 7).

A major weakness of the section on lexical cohesion (Halliday & Hasan 1976) is that there seems to be contradiction between what they say about reference and substitution. For instance, they offer the following examples of a loose kind of identity involving lexical repetition:

Ex. 25 Why does this little boy have to wriggle all the time?

Boys always wiggle.

(1976: 282)

The relation between *boy* and *Boys* is not one of identity, that is, *Boys* does not refer anaphorically to *boy*, nevertheless, the cohesive force

which exists is due to the fact that, apart from the formal similarity, both items have the following features in common: + human, + male, - adult. According to Halliday and Hasan (1976: 284):

reference is irrelevant to lexical cohesion. It is not by virtue of any referential relation that there is a cohesive force set up between the two occurrences of a lexical item; rather, the cohesion exists as a direct relation between the forms themselves
...

Stotsky (1983: 435) criticizes this apparent contradiction:

Although they state initially that reiterated items are related through a common referent, they later suggest that it is not necessary for two lexical occurrences to have the same referent in order for them to be cohesive

Tyler (1994), following Morgan (1978), Morgan & Sellner (1980), Green & Morgan (1981), Green (1989), does not agree with Halliday & Hasan's view of lexical cohesion as it confuses lexical repetition, anaphoric reference, etc. with what must naturally occur when one stays on one topic and "general pragmatic principles". (Tyler 1994: 672)

There are four types of lexical relations in Halliday and Hasan (1976). The first two, that is, *same referent* and *inclusive* are **identity of reference** relations, in other words they are related to reference items such as pronouns and demonstratives. The last two *exclusive* and *unrelated* are **identity of sense** relations, that is they are related to substitution and ellipsis. Examples of each are given below:

Ex. 26 (i) same referent

Carol Thatcher sent off the £32 she ...
Bachelor girl Carol was taken to court ...

Ex. 27 (ii) inclusive

Carol Thatcher sent off the £32 she ...
"It is unhelpful that *prominent citizens* ...

Ex. 28 (iii) exclusive

Carol Thatcher sent off the £32 she ...
Other famous people do what they are supposed to on
time.

Ex. 29 (iv) unrelated (1976: 288)

The girl was raped by her best friend's father.
Most girls who are raped ...

The first three, are, in my opinion, examples of strong cohesion in that they refer to an outside referent. The last one is a more collocational referent, which is regarded by many as a weak form of coherence.

Although most of the criticism directed against Halliday and Hasan's (1976) taxonomy and their rather text-bound view of cohesion is warranted, *Cohesion in English* provides valuable insights into how texts hang together and is a compendium of cohesive devices. Moreover, the notion of tie is useful when one comes to analyze how cohesion is achieved in different types of texts especially if other aspects of the make-up of a text, such as discourse topic, are taken into account too.

IV.4. Lexical Chains in Language, Context, and Text: Aspects of Language in a Social-Semiotic Perspective

In this more recent publication, Hasan⁹ (1985) goes over the concepts of texture, tie, and others originally seen in *Cohesion in English*.

Old terms like co-reference are retained in spite of the criticism of Huddleston (1978) and Brown and Yule (1983). Nevertheless, new terms are introduced to replace some of those used in *Cohesion in English*. For instance substitution is replaced by the term **co-classification**, which covers words such as *one* and *do* as well as ellipsis. Lexical cohesion is given the name co-extension, e.g. the relation obtaining between words from the same semantic field such as *gold, silver, copper*, etc. She then reviews and contrasts the terms exophoric reference, endophoric reference, anaphora and cataphora without adding any modifications to what was said in *Cohesion in English*.

Hasan (1985) proceeds to explain the term co-extension in more depth.¹⁰ Her first observation is that lexical items like *gold, silver*, etc. are intrinsically related. There is no need for exophoric reference as we do not need any other knowledge, besides our knowledge of the language to interpret them. However, the problem of how to delimit the notion of co-extension arises. Although it is true that the relation between **gold** and **silver** cannot be denied it is also undeniably true that the lexical items **fire** and **wood** are related in meaning too, if only in an associative way. The solution to this is found by specifying what is

⁹ This publication is divided into two parts. The second of which, written by Hasan, deals with lexical cohesion.

¹⁰ Huddleston (1978) remarked that this section of *Cohesion in English* was the least convincing due, in part, to Halliday & Hasan's (1976) scant treatment of vocabulary.

meant by sense-relation. Hasan (1985) proposes a division of this term into the following fields: **synonymy**, **antonymy** and **hyponymy**, and a new term **meronymy**.¹¹ The first three are too well known to warrant a definition. The fourth refers to a part-whole relation obtaining between lexical items as in the case of **man - leg - foot**. The relation between **leg** and **foot** is called **co-meronymy**, that is the parts of a superordinate term, in this case, **man**.

Another term included is **repetition** that is the same word used two or more times. Finally she mentions **instantial semblance** which she defines as the cohesive devices which are found in a single text, and are specific to that text only. She offers the following example "all my pleasures are like yesterdays" (1985: 81), in which the similes *pleasures* and *yesterdays* are text-specific synonyms.¹²

Hasan (1985: 81) claims that grammatical and lexical cohesion are interdependent in that neither are sufficient in themselves to create texture. This can be seen in examples (30) and (31) below.

Ex. 30 John gets up early. We bought him a tie. He loves peaches. My house is next to his.

Ex. 31 A cat is sitting on a fence. A fence is often made of wood. Carpenters work with wood. Wood planks can be bought from a lumber store.

¹¹ Many authors have coined expressions to deal with this phenomenon. Dressler (1970) calls it **semantic anaphora**; Lybbert (1972) **componential replacement**; and Chafe, (1972, 1974) **inherent (part-whole) features of lexical items**.

¹² Similarly, Christine Brooke-Rose's definition of metaphor overlaps with the normal definition of anaphora., (1967: 197) For Brooke-Rose, metaphor is any replacement of one word for another, or the identification of an object, concept or person with another. E.K. Lybbert (1972) differentiates between anaphora and what he calls **tropes**, that is, the terms in a relation of synonymy are contradictory. In the following example: **Give Bo another plate of spaghetti, the pig still looks hungry**, the terms Bo (human) and Pig (non-human) are in contradiction.

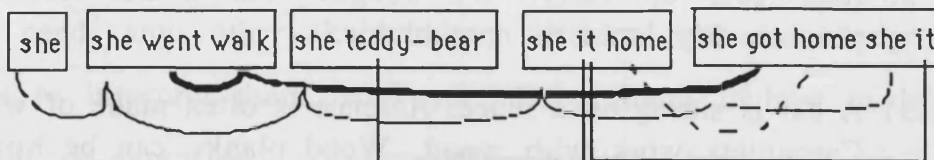
She goes on to say:

In the first example, **John** may or not be the antecedent of **him**, **he**, or **his**, but there is no evidence to support this. In the next example there are instances of reiteration: **fence - wood**; synonymy: **wood - lumber**; and hyponymy: **lumber - wooden planks**. Nonetheless, the text does not seem to be typical by any normal standards

(Hasan, 1985: 83).

Hasan (1985) concludes that grammatical and lexical cohesive devices go hand in hand to make up texts. They do so by forming what she calls **chains** as in the sentences in example (32) which is followed by a graphic representation showing the chains operating within and between the sentences:

- Ex. 32 1. Once upon a time there was a little girl
2. and she went out for a walk
3. and she saw a lovely little teddy bear
4. and so she took it home
5. and when she got home she washed it



Hasan (1985) calls these **Cohesive chains**. They are formed by items related to each other through the semantic relation of co-reference, co-classification and/or co-extension. There are two main types of cohesive chains, **identity chains** and **similarity chains**. Identity chains refer

to chains made up of items like **she, girl**, etc. All the items in a chain refer to the same thing within the context of a specific text. Similarity chains are made up of items related by co-classification and/or co-extension, i.e. **walk, went, got**. For Hasan (1985), "the items in a similarity chain belong to the general field of referring to (related/similar) actions, events, and objects and their attributes" (1985: 90). She goes on to say that similarity chains may, therefore, be genre specific or, to use Crystal and Davy's (Crystal & Davy, 1969) terms, **stylistically significant or distinctive**.

According to Hasan (1985), identity chains are usually accidental from the point of view of the contextual configuration, that is, in a legal text, for instance, the name of an insurance policy holder is the one part of the text which tells us nothing of the genre the text belongs to. Thus, Hasan (1985) holds exactly the opposite view to Huddleston, who virtually dismissed lexical cohesion, to use Halliday & Hasan's (1976) original term.

Hasan (1985) goes on to say that cohesive chains are insufficient to account for textuality. The fact that a lot of items do not fit into chains in a text might not mean that the text is not cohesive. Nor does the fact that all the items in a text belong to chains mean that a text is cohesive. Witness example 33:

Ex. 33 girls bananas two spend shopkeeper apples own girls
dollars grapes by fifty sell cents shopkeeper girls fruit.

(Hasan 1985: 91)

The minimum requirement for text to cohere is that there exist **chain interaction**, or, in other words, **at least two members** of one chain should stand in the same relation to two members of another chain. This requirement is necessary because constituents of a clause naturally interact. So, if only a single relation were required, any minimal clause would interact with at least one member.

What this means is that in example 32 above the identity chain starting with **girl** relates to the similarity chain, made up of **went** and **got** merely because the same grammatical relation obtains between them. This is because chain interactions of this type always obtain between members of the same clause.¹³ There is another and stronger reason. Hasan puts forward the idea that in a coherent text "one says similar kinds of things about similar phenomena" (1985: 92). Therefore the relation within and between chains is needed.

The problem here is that example 34 would be considered a coherent text according to Hasan's (1985) definition, as at least two members of each chain interact

Ex. 13 Barry bought an apple in a shop. Jill is going to buy an orange at the market. Would Sam like to buy a tangerine at the local greengrocer's? If Peter had enough money he would definitely buy a kilo of pears at the supermarket tonight.

¹³ This is the main reason why H-H (1976) did not consider cohesive relations within clauses as a text-forming phenomenon.

Although we can find in the above coherence of the kind described by Hasan (1985), **Barry - apple; Jill - orange; Sam - tangerine; Peter - kilo of pears**, this would appear to be a text, if indeed text it is, of what Halliday himself calls the **citational** type, i.e., sentences in grammar books, language drills, dictionaries (Halliday, 1975a: 23) . It is clear, however, that Hasan's (1985) analysis is designed for texts of the **operational** type, i.e., texts meant to be used to communicate ideas, emotions, feelings, etc. This fact can be inferred from her definition of text as "a social event whose primary mode of unfolding is linguistic" (Hasan, 1978: 229).

Hasan (1985) then goes on to define the grade of coherence manifested by different texts. The items in a chain are, therefore, classified according to their level of interaction with other members. **Relevant tokens** are all those items that enter into identity or similarity chains and divide into central tokens, i.e. those which interact; non-central tokens, i.e. those that do not interact; and peripheral tokens, i.e. those items that do not enter into any kind of chain. Hasan (1985) reaches the following conclusions: a) the lower the number of peripheral tokens, the higher the coherence of a text. b) the higher the proportion of central tokens as opposed to non-central tokens, the more coherent a text will be; and c) the fewer the breaks there are between chains, the more coherent the text.

Hasan's (1985) method of measuring how cohesive a text is, has the drawback of being too text-bound. This can be seen in the way she insists on the coherence of a text being dependent on explicit markers of cohesiveness. However, the chain interaction theory could prove useful

in stylistic analysis to highlight the differences in organization between texts. The co-occurrence of words that belong to similar semantic fields is of more interest in a general stylistic analysis of a text. In this respect, Hasan's view that relations of this type define texts stylistically is correct but her opinion that they add to cohesion is only true if they co-refer.

Going back to the relationship between *silver* and *gold*. Hasan (1985) claims that they relate co-extensively, that is, "they both refer to something within the same general field of meaning" (1985: 74). An example in which they are said to co-occur is a nursery rhyme:

Ex. 35 I had a little nut tree
Nothing would it bear
But a silver nutmeg
And a golden pear.

It would be difficult to suggest that the words *silver* and *gold* cohere in the same sense that pronouns and definite noun phrases do as the second term does not relate anaphorically to the first term at all. The cohesion is caused by the conjunctions *But* and *And*; the adjectives *silver* and *gold* play no part in holding the text together. Semantically adjectives are predicates, and nouns, arguments. In the field of semantics, arguments like *Carol* or *car* are called **logical participants** and are usually linked by **predicates** such as adjectives, verbs, etc. In a strict sense the only elements in a text that refer to elements outside it are the logical participants, adjectives are simply predicates that qualify the arguments.

In Hasan's example, *silver* and *gold* qualify *nutmeg* and *pear* respectively, they are not separate entities and therefore cannot co-refer except in the abstract sense which Hasan refers to. Hasan also argues that the verbs *go* and *get* in the sentences below cohere because they are both verbs of movement even though the second verb does not refer back to the first.

Ex. 36 She *went* to the shops. She *got* there a little late.

If this were true, there would be nothing to stop us from relating any human being to any other, as all human beings share the meaning + human. Having said this, it is possible to consider that two predicates can cohere if they relate in a more specific way.

IV.5. A Comparative Study of the Writing of Scientific Texts. Focusing on Cohesion and Coherence.

Parsons (1990) constitutes an analysis of cohesion and coherence of scientific texts written by overseas students compared to a native control group and is based on Hasan's (1985) chain-interaction method.

Parsons found that in the texts analyzed there were chains that "seemed to play a special role in contributing to the cohesion and coherence of the texts" ... and that they had "a large number of central tokens which interacted with other chains" (Parsons 1990: 169).

At the end of the monograph Parsons reached the following conclusions:

1. Significant chains play a special role in contributing to textual coherence.
2. The higher the percentage of significant tokens the more coherent will be the text as perceived by informants.
3. The higher the ratio of significant to peripheral tokens the more coherent will be the text as perceived by informants.
4. The higher the ratio of significant tokens to non-significant tokens, the more coherent will be the text as perceived by informants"

(Parsons 1990: 175-7)

Finally, Parsons concludes that significant chains are a clear factor in text cohesion but that "theme development" (Parsons 1990: 184), which I clearly see as synonymous with discourse topic as I understand it, and syntactic and lexical factors, may also be important factors.

The analysis provided by Parsons is subject to the same kind of criticism that Hasan's (1984) was, namely that co-extension is such a wide-ranging notion that it includes almost everything in its scope. Parsons, for instance, states that by virtue of the fact that all the texts were about coffee growing, and all the subjects were asked to write about the coffee growing process, i.e., soil preparation, growing period, harvesting, processing and exporting, that these sections constituted in themselves ties through the semantic relationship of meronymy. Moreover, he claims that further relations of meronymy exist as each of these sequences has various stages, i.e., soil preparation includes ploughing, and weeding. If, as Parsons (1990) argues, words such as *ship*, *sailor* and *sea* should be considered cohesive although they do not

fit into any of the categories proposed by Hasan in (1985) because “allowance should be made for the analyst’s intuitions by noting what it is that the items have in common, and then extending the rules accordingly” (Parsons 1990: 46), then just about everything might be considered to be cohesive.

It is, perhaps, significant that Parsons finds no need to look for justifications for co-reference relations. This is probably due to the fact that they are not subject to quite the same amount of subjective judgements. With regards to the method of gathering data, possibly the results of the research would have been radically different if the subjects had been given just the title of the essay and not a flow diagram. This might have meant that the non-native students would have followed a completely different course of action with regards to the organization of the text. Hattim, for example, claims that students from the Arabic tradition have internalized a different rhetorical organization of texts.

IV.6. Patterns of Lexis in Text

Hoey’s (1991) approach to the organization of text is similar to Hasan’s and consequently Parson’s. He believes that the organization of a text can be seen through the connections between lexical items in a text. Hoey uses the term “link” instead of “tie” as the latter includes cohesive relations that he is not interested in, such as conjunction and collocation. He adds that Halliday & Hasan’s definition of “tie” seems “to imply directionality more than link” (Hoey 1991: 52). Another key term used

by Hoey is “bond”, which is synonymous with Hasan’s tokens. He defines them thus: “A bond is a connection that exists between a pair of sentences by virtue of there being an above average number of links relating them” (Hoey 1991: 265). The number of links needed for a bond to exist is at least three although for some texts this may be four or more.

There are many kinds of links, one of the most important, **simple lexical repetition**: “occurs when a lexical item that has already occurred in a text is repeated with no greater alteration than is entirely explicable in terms of a closed grammatical paradigm” (Hoey 1991: 53). Hoey adds that the singular/plural/genitive relation is only found in open-set lexical items and that only these can be linked in such a way. He excludes determiners, prepositions, auxiliaries, negatives, coordinators, subordinators, sentence conjunctions (or conjuncts), and submodifiers, or particles. The problem arises as to whether words that are repeated retain the same meaning.

Several authors, Rimmon-Kenan (1980), McCarthy (1987) and Hoey himself (1991) have pointed out that repetition, even exact repetition, may involve change. The same word used to refer to the same referent may incorporate change as the context in which the word is found is different. This is similar to what Brown & Yule (1983) affirm but they refer to changes in the referent itself and not to the context it is in.

Hoey is at pains to find ways to filter out cases of false or chance repetition. He claims that the following questions should be asked to find out if repetition between a pair of words is accidental or not:

- a. Do they have common or related context? or
- b. Do the items share common relationships with neighbouring lexical items? or
- c. Is there whole or partial parallelism between the contexts of the items?

In certain cases there may be a word or words with several meanings in the same text. In such cases, we are not really dealing with repetition proper which entails the repetition of form and meaning. To overcome this drawback Hoey (1991: 55) proposes the following solution:

Since the analysis we propose takes three links between sentences as the minimum basis for making a connection, a shared collocational environment is in effect required before a link is treated as significant and, therefore, the likelihood is that markedly different senses of a lexical item will not be picked up in our analysis.

Most texts not only include cases of simple repetition, which was defined above. More complications arise when Hoey looks at “complex lexical repetition”. This includes cases of two lexical items which are not identical in form but share a lexical morpheme and identical words that have different grammatical functions. He (1991: 56-7) gives the examples “drug” and “drugging” and “humans” and “human” [adj.]:

Two items can be said to form a relationship of complex lexical repetition if they can be paraphrased in such a way as to ensure that the paraphrase of one includes the other. Thus, drugging may be (roughly) paraphrased in its context as “making sleepy by administering a drug to”; “human” means in its context something like “of humans”. It will be noticed that this criterion does not require one to accept the possibility of exact paraphrase; it simply assumes close approximation in a context

Problems arise with the subjective nature of the term “paraphrase”, which is similar to Hasan’s “synonymy”. The definition he offers is that **simple paraphrase** “occurs whenever a lexical item may substitute for another in context without loss or gain in specificity and with no discernible change in meaning” (Hoey 1991: 62).

Hoey emphasizes that synonymy must be understood as synonymy in context. **Complex paraphrase** is a rather more problematic concept. It occurs “when two lexical items are definable such that one of the items includes the other, although they share no lexical morpheme” (Hoey 1991: 4).

According to Hoey, there are only three cases where complex paraphrase applies. The first is antonymy, where a morpheme can be shared in the case of *happy/unhappy* or not, in the case of *wet/dry*. The type involves relations between words which are connected through complex paraphrase, for example *writer/writings* and another term *author*, which is related to *writer* through simple paraphrase and therefore to *writings*. The third type is a connection between words through a mediator, which is not present in the text. For example, a word in a text, i.e., *instruction* is connected to another word in the text, i.e. *teacher*, through a word which is not present in the text, i.e. *teaching*. See the example below from Hoey (1991: 66-67):

Some of the greatest political writers have believed themselves to be offering such a system of practical **instruction**, and many students of their works in the past have undoubtedly sought, and may have found in their pages that practical guidance which they

have professed to offer. But this is certainly not the advantage which a modern reader can be promised from a study of their works. This entire conception of politics as an art and of the political philosopher as the **teacher** of it rests upon assumptions which it is impossible to accept.

The only difference between types two and three is that in type two all the words are present in the text. A problem with the reasoning for type two is that the reader needs to make the connection between *author* and *writings* through the term *writer*. This does not seem cognitively plausible as surely the reader can relate *author* to *writings* directly if he or she can do the same in type three. While agreeing that Hoey is right in saying that there is a link between teacher and instruction, it seems that he is basing his analysis of the process on word forms rather than on semantic content.

In such a case, there is a missing item, *teaching*, that can substitute exactly for *instruction* in this context and which, of course, would be in a repetition link with *teacher*.

The situation with regards to superordinate and hyponymic relationships is especially problematic. For example, if the first item is *scientists* and the second *biologists*, Hoey denies that they can be paraphrases of each other as they are not interchangeable. If however, the situation is reversed and the second item is the more general term, that is *biologists* is followed by *scientists*, it would not, therefore, supply extra information. If it also meets the criterion that they are paraphrases in the context of a particular text then it would be possible to say that the relationship is one of repetition.

The consequence of allowing the first item to be a general term, or superordinate, let us say the word *thing*, would mean that every mention of any object later on in the text would have to be called a repetition. According to Hoey, this would “make nonsense of our objective, which has been to make sense of cohesion as an organizing feature of texts” (Hoey 1991: 69).

Hoey treats personal pronouns and demonstrative pronouns as entering into repetition links. However, he does not include demonstrative modifiers *this*, *that*, *these*, *those* or *the* as the repetition function is carried out by the lexical item not by the modifier. The demonstrative modifiers and the definite article are only treated as repetition when the noun by itself would not be classed as such. He calls this kind of repetition “deixis”. Hoey refers here to metadiscursive nouns (see Francis 1986, 1995 below) such as *claim* and *argument*. However, when counting the number of links, he only counts the most recent sentence although it might affect a whole set of sentences. With regards to deixis, he adds (1991: 72-3):

Clearly, however, future research in this field will need to look more carefully at this all-pervasive feature of text organization, and it is taken into consideration when the results of our analysis are interpreted’.

With regards to substitutes: *one*, *do*, *so*, *not* Hoey claims that they are not frequent in the texts analyzed. Other items: *(an)other*, *the other*, *(the) same* are treated like demonstrative modifiers. The terms *different* and *similar* are seen as similar to *other* and *same* but are also considered

to be capable of repetition qua lexical items. They are a case of words which are halfway between grammatical and lexical items.

When calculating the number of bonds in a text, Hoey ignores the links lexical or otherwise within the sentence as, according to him, “they interfere with the clarity of the patterns of lexis that we have set out to illuminate”. (Hoey 1991: 84). Moreover, he only takes into account one link for each item per sentence. In order to decide which link to record he does so depending on the relative weight of the item, which is, in order of importance the following:

—simple lexical repetition —complex lexical repetition —simple
mutual paraphrase —simple partial paraphrase —antonymous
complex paraphrase —substitution —co-reference —ellipsis
(Hoey 1991: 83)

He makes two claims with regard to bonds, one weak, one strong. Both claims suggest that bonds are not a matter of chance and are indeed signals of patterning in text:

The weak claim: each bond marks a pair of sentences that is semantically related in a manner not entirely accounted for in terms of its shared lexis. The strong claim: because of the semantic relation referred to in the weak claim, each bond forms an intelligible pair in its context.

(Hoey 1991: 125-6)

Hoey provides many examples of links between sentences that may not be obvious at first glance. He claims that various kinds of links can only be seen as such if we take into account inference. The following are examples of other kinds of repetition:

- **Parallels:** The first sentence is only seen to be parallel to the second if we consider that it really means *What is attempted by me:*

What is attempted in the following volume is to present
I have tried
of the greatest political theorists of the past →
Aristotle, Augustine, and the rest . . .

(Hoey 1991: 163-5).

- **Instantial:**

I have not tried to cover all the ground →
I have offered samples.

(Hoey 1991: 165)

- **Lexical expansion** “reading more into a word than would be provided in a strict dictionary definition’ or “ spelling out the implications of a word in a particular context” (Hoey 1991: 170).

provide . . . instruction →
the study of the works ... provide instruction.

- **Lexical reduction:** lexical information is left out, that is, words are omitted or the use of a superordinate:

a modern reader → a reader;
handbook → book, writing or work.

(Hoey 1991: 170-1)

- **Lexical transference:** In informal discourse we often “transfer an attribute from an object to a property of the object” (Hoey 1991: 171). In this case the writer/reader assumes a lexical transference of the attribute of politics to knowledge and book. Hoey warns there must be evidence to support this kind of interpretation:

a man of superior wisdom in the art of politics may
set down his knowledge in a book →
a man of superior wisdom in the art of politics may
set down his knowledge of politics in a book of
politics.

- **Syntactic equivalence** the x of y and y as/an x.

the art of politics → politics as an art.

(Hoey 1991: 172).

- **Discoursal expansion** This is a label for a series of processes with which we make use of knowledge about the discourse being processed. One of these processes permits us to relate exophoric elements to the situation of the discourse, that is, the use of *I*, *we*, *the reader*, *you* in discourse.

Repetition of real-world referents: This is common in newspapers:

Britain has asked for an extension to the →
Foreign Secretary or UN Ambassador, etc.
President Mitterand criticized Britain's stand →
France criticized Britain's stand.

(Hoey 1991: 173).

Hoey's analysis of repetition is quite comprehensive and is useful for any researcher looking into the issue of reiteration. However, Hoey's definition of repetition includes both form and/or content. He seems to accept that repetition is, almost always, cohesive although as Tyler (1994) points out, repetition is often a signal of cohesion but may not necessarily be cohesive. Tyler's view of paraphrase (1994: 686), for instance, is much more satisfying than Hoey's because:

We can understand paraphrase as a speaker's attempt at providing the listener with additional glimpses at the veiled object under discussion, in the hopes that multiple peeks will allow the listener to establish a closer approximation of the image in the speaker's mind. For these paraphrases to be effective cues, they must be interpretable as referring to the same entity or concept.

Hoey avoids problematic concepts such as co-extension and collocation, but his analysis of lexical patterns, which he connects with cohesion, has at least another major drawback. He equates the repetition manifested through pronouns, for instance, with repetition of open-class words. That there is a difference between the two is clear. An anaphoric pronoun always refers back to an antecedent, which, in turn, has an outside referent. Take the following excerpt from Hoey:

Many wild bears have become 'garbage junkies', feeding from dumps around human developments.

To avoid potentially dangerous clashes between **them** and **humans**, scientist are trying to rehabilitate the **animals** by drugging them and releasing them in uninhabited areas.

(Hoey 1991: 39)

It is clear that there is a definite relationship between *bears*, *them* and *animals*. It is a relationship of co-reference, that is, each of the second two items refers back to one bear, which, in turn has a referent in the outside world. In the case of *animals*, the relationship is made clear by the definite article which Hoey does not take into account at all. Can the same be said of *human* and *humans*? The former is an adjective which modifies the head-word *developments*, while the latter is *humans*, a noun. Although lexically they are related it is clear that *human developments* is not an equivalent of *humans*.

However, we can see from the text that they are connected. The text talks about *human developments* and then mentions that they are trying to get the bears to go to *uninhabited areas*, that is, areas without humans, where the bears cannot clash with *humans*. Therefore, this is not a case of collocation but *humans* referring back inside the noun-phrase *human developments*. Sometimes it is necessary to scratch the surface to see the connections. An important problem in Hoey's analysis concerns his disregard for the role of the definite article and the demonstrative adjectives or modifiers. This is strange as Hoey does take into account the demonstrative pronouns.

The main problem is of course that putting lexical repetition into the same bag as pronouns is only possible if we take into account the determiners preceding the lexical items. If lexical items are not preceded

by determiners, in my opinion, they should not be treated as akin to pronouns at all unless they refer back to an antecedent.

IV.7. Concluding Remarks

In the next section I will attempt to complement the work carried out by the authors whose work I have reviewed by looking exclusively at re-entry items. This will be followed by a chapter in which I present my own set of re-entry devices.

V Re-entry Devices

V.1. Preamble

Re-entry devices are surface elements that connect with antecedents in order to provide us with further information about them. In other words, they are a way of introducing new information about participants which have already been mentioned in the text. My hypothesis is that elements which are re-entered in written English, are connected with the discourse topic and serve, therefore, as a connection between each of the arguments and said topic. I also believe that certain patterns of re-entry may be characteristic of certain genres.

In this section we will look at the various ways entities can be re-entered and by doing so I will attempt to show how anaphora, or re-entry, like all elements of language may be a vehicle of stylistic variation. Although re-entry devices form part of what we call text cohesion, they are distinct from other means of surface cohesion. Most re-entry devices are those that are involved in what Halliday & Hasan (1976) called "reference relations". This means that they refer to entities in the previous text, which, in turn, refer to entities outside the text be they physical or abstract.

Re-entry may involve repetition but it is repetition which involves co-reference and not just the repetition of a lexical item as I pointed out in

the last chapter. Thus, I rule out the loose lexical relationships of Halliday & Hasan (1984), Parsons (1990) and Hoey (1991) including what is known as collocation. Substitution and ellipsis are, nevertheless not eschewed, even though they are not classed as reference items, as it is necessary to know what they refer back to to recover their full meaning.

As I am interested in co-reference and substitution exclusively — including ellipsis, which is also known as zero-substitution— this rules out *consecutio temporum*, *conjunction* and other devices that secure coherence and cohesion. These cohesive devices do not serve to talk about the topic; they show the logico-temporal relations between propositions but do not refer to the participants in the propositions.

The main reason for only including re-entry phenomena in my study is that no other mechanisms, with the possible exception of theme and rheme structures, show more clearly how a discourse topic is carried forward. What is more, I agree with Hofmann (1989: 247), who says there are two types of coherence and cohesion phenomena “the use of pronouns & anaphora - & other things”. What follows is an attempt to describe the cohesive devices that are involved in the “fleshing out” of discourse topic and why they are used.

V.2. Re-entry and Style

Re-entry of antecedents which have already been mentioned serves the purpose of abbreviating **old information**. Hendricks (1976) says

that if this were not done the repetition of “old” elements would become unacceptable. He cites an example offered by Padueva (1968: 228):

Ex. 1 The English writer Walter Scott was born in Scotland.
Having graduated from a university the English writer
Walter Scott attended the bar.

According to Goffman, (1981: 287) writers are “obliged to be concerned about the repetition of (...) and about using the same expressive phrase ‘too often’”, thus “showing that the writer (or speaker) is alive to, and mindful of, the whole course of his communication”.

Although repetition of antecedents is often avoided in written texts this depends on the genre. For some genres elegant variation is simply not contemplated. Crystal (1969) states that in the language of legal documents “it is not simply that referential pronouns are avoided only where their use could raise genuine confusion; they seem to be eschewed as a species” (Crystal: 1969: 203). Legal documents seem to forward the idea that the word is the thing, which goes against a major tenet of semantics. This kind of repetition is called “strong reiteration” by Lybbert (1970: 6).

According to Padueva, (1968) there are three aspects to take into account when re-entering entities. The **unambiguity** of the anaphoric relation between the antecedent and the re-entry device is paramount, second, re-entry must provide **economy** of means of expression while at the same time constituting **diversity** of means of expression -mainly as a way to avoid repetition.

Paduțeva states that these tendencies often enter into contradiction and that in different styles one tendency may prevail over another. Hendricks states that in those cases in which “ambiguity is not a factor, choice between a pronoun and a definite noun (or a proper noun which is inherently definite) can be a clear-cut stylistic option” (1976: 80).

Paduțeva (1968) divides re-entry devices into two groups, syntactic and semantic. These constitute the first opportunity for stylistic choice. Syntactic anaphora involves pronouns, while semantic anaphora comprises phrases such as *the woman* which refers back to the phrase *a beautiful young woman with blue eyes and black hair*.

Gleeson (1965) in his comparison of translations of the Bible remarks that the relation between a proper noun used as a re-entry device and its antecedent constitutes a “tighter” relationship than that achieved by a pronoun, which he describes as “looser”. Semantic anaphora can often be employed to add to the amount of information contained in the initial name instead of diminishing it, for instance, “this science” used to refer to “linguistics”.

A writer can thus make the stylistic choice of giving more or less information about a participant in a subsequent proposition. If a lot of information is given about a participant at the beginning of a text -for instance, in the pre- and post-modification of the noun, the references back to the entity may all be carried out using pronouns.

The writer, may prefer, on the other hand, to supply extra information little by little throughout the text. In this case Paduțeva states that the

sources for this increase of information are either the preceding text and/or "the information which can be supposed to be a part of the language competence of a language user" (1968: 229). In other words, the writer often has the choice of repeating a term or can fall back on his/her knowledge as a competent language user and employ a term which is synonymous or in some way semantically related. Paduceva is ambiguous about whether such "knowledge" should include both knowledge of the semantic make-up of words and world knowledge. I will assume that it covers in any particular instance either or both types of knowledge.

Hendricks offers examples of stylistic variation that depends on extra-textual knowledge and linguistic knowledge from the article "'Shakespeare' New Findings" in *the New York Times*:

Ex. 2 A Wesleyan University English professor . . . believes he has authenticated the only signature of William Shakespeare known to exist outside England.

(New York Times, August 19, 1981)

The first reference to the *Wesleyan University English professor*, to be found in the following paragraph is *Prof. W. Nicholas Knight*, which is partly information that already existed in the text, plus extra information about the professor's first name. Subsequent references are through the words *Dr Knight*, which makes specific reference to the fact that Professor Knight holds a Ph.d and *the 32-year-old literature professor*, which mentions his age in what Hendricks describes as "a casual way of introducing new information" (Hendricks 1976: 81). Hendricks (1976) points out that *literature professor* is an example of

knowledge of a semantic nature in that a literature teacher is a type of English teacher.

This kind of “drop-by-drop” supply of information is typical of newspapers. This procedure is what Dillon (1981:97) calls “stereoscopic”, that is, “using different words to refer to the same thing: persons, personages and characters. A major function of redescription of this kind is:

to add more information about the thing, semicovertly, as it were. Newscasters and some sportswriters are fond of this usage; these days many articles about Henry Kissinger introduce him by name and switch to the the former Secretary of State, a property that is often relevant to the news item and that people can be reminded of in this fashion.

(Dillon 1981: 97)

We can understand semantic re-entry of the kind seen above as a selection from a set or paradigm. According to Jakobson there are two main tendencies used by writers to re-enter what has already been mentioned: metaphor and metonymy. Jakobson (1988¹: 57-58) claims the use of either is a stylistic choice in itself:

The development of a discourse may take place along two different semantic lines; one topic may lead to another through their similarity or through their contiguity ... In normal verbal behaviour both processes are continually operative, but careful observation will reveal that under the influence of a cultural pattern, personality or verbal style, preference is given to one of the two processes over the other.

¹ I have used the version of Jakobson’s article: Jakobson, R. 1956. “Two aspects of language and two types of aphasic disturbances”. In R. Jakobson & M. Halle (eds.) *Fundamentals of Language*. The Hague: Mouton, 55-82 reprinted in 1988 in David Lodge’s *Modern Criticism and Theory*.

Although Jakobson uses the term “topic”, which I understand as “what is being talked about”, his classification can be applied to anaphora. Hendricks (1976) points out that Jakobson (1988) sees the use of semantic anaphora as a preference for the metonymic pole of language over the metaphoric pole. In other words, when we choose *the former Secretary of State* instead of repeating *Dr Kissinger* we are choosing a part of what Henry Kissinger is known to be.

Anaphoric metaphor is less common than anaphoric metonymy but can still be found in oral and written language. Hendricks (1976) cites Brooke-Rose’s (1967) definition of metaphor, which he claims is surprisingly similar to a definition of anaphora: “any replacement of one word by another, or any identification of one thing, concept or person with any other” (Hendricks 1967: 197).

Some metaphoric expressions may replace an earlier occurring literal expression or proper name. Hendricks cites the following example from Lybbert (1972: 13) *Give Bo another plate of spaghetti; the pig still looks hungry*. Lybbert differentiates between synonymy and tropes as the latter has nothing to do with the original except, of course, through the operation of metaphor.

V.3. Re-entry Through Pronouns or Noun-phrases

The way information is re-entered may have stylistic causes or may be due to more basic linguistic functions. Most of the authors consulted in the preparation of this dissertation see pronouns as the unmarked

way of re-entering an antecedent. Our choice of a re-entry item depends on how definite a particular anaphoric expression is, that is, how autonomous it is in its function of signalling antecedents or referents. Lakoff (1976: 295) stated that there are degrees of definiteness, which are, in descending order (a) proper names, (b) definite descriptions, (c) epithets, (d) pronouns. This means that proper names are, by themselves, more definite than all the others and can, even when they stand alone, point to a unique referent.

On the opposite end of the scale are pronouns which are only definite when the antecedent is clear. The use of pronouns or other referring expressions depends, therefore, to a great extent on position. According to Fox (1987) there are three basic subcomponents to take into account when choosing a re-entry item:

- 1 The first mention of a referent in a sequence is done with a full NP.
- 2 After the first mention of a referent, a pronoun is used to display an understanding of the sequence as not yet closed.
3. A full NP is used to display an understanding of the preceding sequence containing other mentions of the same referent as closed.

(Fox 1987: 18-19)

Givón (1995) states that there are signals of “maximal continuity” in text, e.g., zero anaphora, unstressed pronouns; and what she terms signals of “discontinuity”, e.g., stressed pronouns and full lexical nouns, a combination of grammatical elements and lexical elements, i.e. definite noun phrases with definite nouns or demonstratives. (Givón 1995: 71).

The need for both grammatical and lexical cues, that is, the use of discontinuity signals, when a change in “topical referent” is to be carried out is due to the need to facilitate the reader’s search for an antecedent in “some extant mental representation” (Givón 1995: 94). Givón claims that when re-entry through noun phrases is triggered, the lexical elements involved save cognitive effort as we do not have to create information that has already been created and stored in “episodic text” (a temporary construction that is needed before a trace is created in episodic memory).

Herein lies the main difference between these and grammatical anaphoric re-entry devices with regard to storage, i.e., lexical elements may be preserved in episodic memory whereas grammatical items are purged as they are a “here-and-now mechanism” that “helps contextualize clausal information in its *current* communicative context: current speech situation, current goals, current perspective, current text, current thematic structure” (Givón 1995: 106).

If there is no change in topic, pronouns become default after the first mention of a referent and furthermore show that the referent is still in focus. Exceptions to this rule can be found in literary texts where pronouns are used first to give the reader a greater feeling of intimacy (Turner 1973: 85). The use of pronouns for anaphoric reference is easily explained if we think of pronouns as the most “economic” form of re-entering referents if there is no ambiguity. Pronouns are used when the referent is “**in focus**” (Grosz 1977); “**in consciousness**” (Chafe 1976; Dillon 1981 and Reichman 1981); “**textually evoked**” (Prince 1981); or “**high in topicality**” (Givón 1983).

Anaphoric devices are a guide to the reader and it should, therefore, be clear what the pronominal re-entry device is referring back to. There are signals in propositions that may tell us if a noun phrase or a pronoun will subsequently be used:

the more likely it is that a proposition containing mention of a referent will be elaborated in some way, the more that proposition is treated as a source for pronominal anaphora, hence the more likely it is that the next mention of the referent will be done with a pronoun

(Fox 1987: 96)

A pronoun can, exceptionally, be used to refer back to a referent which is not immediately preceding if it “accomplishes smaller subgoals”, that is, the pronoun *it*, could refer to a component of an entity that had already been mentioned²; or if preceded by a digression marker.

Fox (1987) states that the main reason for using full noun phrases is when the previous referent is understood to be closed, that is, it is no longer the active topic. She goes on to mention more specific reasons for the use of noun phrases in conversation. The first is “disagreement”, that is, when the interlocutors disagree about “the facts referring to a participant (Fox 1987: 62); “overt recognitional”, when interlocutors are “overtly discussing the recognizability of a referent” (Fox 1987: 64-65); “assessments”, especially when the assessment of a referent is negative; and frame-evoked pronouns, that is, pronouns which are generated by an active frame³.

² See section below on meronymy.

³ See section on frame-generated anaphora below.

In the following example two people are talking about buying a book and the pronoun “he” in the last line is generated by the previous mention of B’s wish to purchase a book :

- B. En I wentuh buy a book the other day I//went hh went=
A. (mm)
B. =downtuh N.Y.U. tuh get it becuz it's the only place thet car//ries the book.
A. Mmm
A. Mmh
B. Tch! En it wz twun::ty do::lliz
A. Oh my god.
B. Yeuh he- ez he wz handlin me the book en he tol' me twunny dolliz

(Fox 1987: 66-67)

Fox (1987) next discusses other cases in which noun phrases are used instead of pronouns. For instance, noun phrases do tend to be used after paragraph breaks. Hofmann (1989: 246) agrees that paragraph breaks are important but that cannot be used to refer back across paragraphs unless they act like bridges:

An anaphoric pronoun can be used only if there is a unique antecedent preceding it in the paragraph, or if there is none, that it is coreferential with the topic of the preceding paragraph.

However, Fox (1987) claims that rhetorical structures such as “issue adjuncts”, “further description” and “classification”, which she describes as non-structural factors, are an even more important cause of the use of noun phrases.

Fox points to generic factors that dictate when pronouns or noun phrases are used. She claims that the use of NPs, even when the referent is in the preceding clause, is much more common in expository texts

than in conversation where pronouns are used much more (Fox 1987: 143). Noun phrases, she claims, are used to “block the text into its structural units” but admits that this is, to a large extent, genre-specific (Fox 1987: 144). In general she says written texts are more sensitive to some kind of linear distance and the need to identify parts of a text hierarchically. According to Fox (1987: 144), this is due to the fact that the reader cannot ask for clarification and the writer is aware of this. “Further description” is triggered also by the need to convey a large amount of information in a short space.

Although Fox does not mention any specific genres, she does say that noun phrases in “further description” are “associated with generic conventions of particular text-types” (Fox 1987: 151). She adds that “classification” “might have something to do with stylistic variety and colorfulness of phrasing” (Fox 1987: 151).

It is clear that Fox (1987) sees anaphoric re-entry as a phenomenon that is determined to a certain extent by the dictates of a particular language while at the same time being subject to factors of style and genre. This intuition is supported by the comparative study of fictional and non-fictional texts carried out by Stoddard (1991). She discovered that noun-phrases are double in non-fiction as compared to short stories. Pronouns, on the other hand, are double in short stories than in non-fiction (Stoddard 1991: 56-57). She claims that most personal pronouns are edited out in non-fiction.

V.3.1. Pronouns as re-entry items

The first distinction we need to make when looking at pronouns is the difference between anaphoric pronouns and pronouns used as deictics. It was Halliday and Hasan's (1976) view that anaphoric pronouns refer back to an entity in the text, which, in turn, refers to an entity outside it while deictics, such as "here", "there", "now", and exophoric personal pronouns can refer directly to elements outside the text although this is not very common in the case of personal pronouns.

It is my view that, strictly speaking, anaphoric re-entry items do not refer back to entities in the text as such but to mental representations of these entities which exist in the reader's mind. I therefore agree with Hendricks (1976), Brown and Yule (1983) and Givón (1995) that pronouns refer back to entities that are "accessible", in Givon's words in "some pre-existing mental structure in the hearer's mind" (1995: 68).

We saw in our review of Halliday and Hasan (1976) in the last chapter that normally only third person pronouns are anaphoric in written texts. Therefore, in this dissertation I will focus on these third personal pronouns and not on others, unless they refer back endophorically. The relationship obtaining between third person personal pronouns and their antecedents is quite straightforward as they very rarely add any further meaning to the antecedent except in certain cases, like that of the author Fox mentioned above, where the reader finds out through the use of a personal pronoun that said author is a woman.

V.4.3.1.1. “*It*”, “*this*” and “*that*”

McCarthy (1994) analyzed how the pronouns *it*, *this* and *that* were used in written discourse and found that each pronoun had a different function.

- (1) *It* is used for unmarked reference within a current entity or focus of attention.
- (2) *This* signals a shift of entity or focus of attention to a new focus.
- (3) *That* refers across from the current focus to entities or foci that are non-current, non-central, marginalizable or other-attributed.

(McCarthy 1994: 275)

All three of these items may be used to refer back to a single entity or to a sentence, paragraph, or even longer chunk of language. The pronoun *it*, functioning as a re-entry device for a single entity is relatively straightforward and can refer back to things, babies and animals. The pronouns, “he”, “she” and “they” are also fairly straightforward and so no more will be said about them. What is known as known as “sentential ‘it’” and the demonstratives are rather more complex and so separate sections will be dedicated to them.

V.4.3.1.2. Sentential “*it*”

This pronoun differs from all other personal pronouns in that it may not only refer to a person or object, but to any identifiable portion of text.

Ex.3. Reading great literature every day is highly recommendable. It both instructs and delights.

The *it* in the second line refers to a fact not a thing: *Reading great literature every day is highly recommendable*. Halliday and Hasan (1976) call this phenomenon text reference.

“Sentential *it*”, according to Hankamer and Sag (1976) is proof that some anaphors depend on the existence of pragmatic control rather than being syntactic processes. In the example below, there is no single antecedent for the pronoun *it* :

Ex. 4 Jack didn't get picked off by a throw to first, but it happened to Bill, and it singed his ear. (*it* = the throw to first that singed Bill's ear)

(Hankamer & Sag 1976: 406)

What they mean by pragmatic control is that the form *it* is not generated by any antecedent but by the context. In contrast they claim that there is evidence that “surface anaphora” such as “verb phrase anaphora” and any process involving ellipsis are governed by a deletion rule and are not subject to pragmatic control. Two kinds of ellipsis *Gapping* and *Stripping* bear out this claim. Example 4 shows the first of the two phenomena.

Ex. 5 Peter is going to eat an apple, and Mary, a pear.

(Hankamer & Sag 1976: 410)

Example 6, as we can observe, is identical to 5 but operates across a speaker boundary:

Ex. 6 Mother 1: Peter is going to eat an apple.

Mother 2: And Mary a pear.

(Hankamer & Sag 1976: 410)

Gapping however cannot operate without an antecedent utterance as in 6 below. The context provided by a situation is not enough, gapping requires what they call "syntactic control":

Ex. 7 (Peter is busily munching on an apple and Mother 2, whose daughter has also started to eat her pear, says:)

*And Mary a pear.

(Hankamer & Sag 1976: 410)

"Deep anaphora" on the other hand, which show no sign of being syntactically complex at any stage, may be pragmatically controlled, exophoric according to Werther (1984) as they illustrate in the example below:

Ex. 8 Hankamer (observing Sag successfully ripping a phone book in half):

I don't believe it.

Ex. 9 Sag (same circumstance):

It's not easy.

(Hankamer & Sag 1976: 407)

Phenomena such as sentential *it* and the existence of pragmatic control of pronouns prompts Rigau (1981) to claim that certain aspects of co-reference "solament en el discurs -i no pas en la frase- poden obtenir una explicació plausible" (1981: 457).

V.4.3.1.3. *Demonstrative Pronouns*

The demonstrative pronouns *this* and *that* are similar to *it* in that they can refer to single entities or to whole sentences. Examples y and z from my corpus, refer back to sentences while x refers back to a single entity. I could not find any examples of *that* which refer back to single entities but there are many in spoken English.

Ex. 10 The other respect in which the Government's caution is justified is that a fresh inquiry would simply not close the issue in the nice, liberal, rational way that we might all ideally prefer. There are two principal reasons for this, and they feed off one another.

“Unfinished business” February 3 *The Guardian*

Ex. 11 **Which is why most of the arts bodies welcomed Mr Blair's speech as the best they could expect in the circumstances. That is probably right but it doesn't alter the fact that the huge success of the arts in Britain is based on a mixed economy of public and private money.**

“Paying the bill for culture” *The Guardian*, February 4

Ex. 12 This is an interesting attempt to close the gap between **Britain's talent for creativity** and our weakness in translating **this** into commercial success.

“Paying the bill for culture” *The Guardian*, February 4

With regard to function, however, *this* and *that* are completely different from *it*. We saw above that *it* is used to refer to items which are already in focus while, according to McCarthy (1995), “*this* signals a shift of entity or focus of attention to a new focus” and “*that* refers

across from the current focus to entities or foci that are non-current, non-central, marginalizable or other-attributed (McCarthy 1994: 275). The difference between *this* and *that* can be seen in example 10. Here we can see how *that* is followed by an adversative clause: “**That** is probably right but it doesn't alter the fact ...” which downplays the import of the content of Mr Blair's speech.

V.3.2. Re-entry through noun phrases

We will now look at the alternatives to pronouns. There are various kinds of re-entry using noun phrases. First we will look at re-entry through lexical repetition with and without determiners. This will be followed by re-entry with noun-phrases that hold one of the following kinds of semantic relationship with their antecedents: synonymy, hyperonymy, meronymy, etc.

V.3.2. 1. *Lexical equivalence & repetition*

Repetition in this dissertation is considered to be a narrower concept than that employed by other researchers who do not differentiate, as we have seen above, between formal repetition and repetition of content. Repetition means that the re-entered word must be the same or very similar to its antecedent in form and must refer to the same referent.

There are two main types of repetition, repetition without determiners and repetition with determiners. As the analysis of the second type must include the determiners that precede the noun phrase,

it is more complex than the first. Most of the examples of lexical repetition without determiners are proper nouns such as *Carol Thatcher* → *Carol Thatcher*.

Lexical equivalence without determiners can include extra information as in the example of *Prof. W. Nicholas Knight* which refers back to *Wesleyan University English professor*, although the opposite case is often encountered, i.e. *Carol Thatcher* can be followed by *Carol*. There are cases of lexical equivalence which do not feature proper nouns as in the following case:

Ex. 13 *Antisense and triplex technologies* may be far from perfect now. But if the successes of the past few years are any guide, antisense and triplex agents will be improved rapidly.

(“The New Genetic Medicines”, 55)

In this example, the first complex noun phrase refers back to all the previous explanations about such technologies which includes various paragraphs.

V.3.2.2. *Semantic re-entry with determiners*

This category comprises noun-phrases made up of two obligatory members: 1) lexical head-words, 2) determiners; and a third optional component, pre- and post-modification. In this category I include lexical repetition. Apart from the exceptions we have seen in the section above, only this kind of re-entry device can enter into anaphoric relations based on synonymy, meronymy, and the like because noun-phrases without determiners can only be understood as maintaining an identity-

of-sense relationship with an antecedent if they are repetitions of the antecedents, and only then if they are proper nouns. The noun-phrasedog, for instance, is insufficient to hold an anaphoric relationship with *poodle*:

Ex. 14 *He really loves that poodle. Dog eats like a king.

The role of the determiners is also important as each determiner has a slightly different function —apart from the anaphoric function that is common to all determiners. In the section immediately following this one I will look at the semantic relations entered into by the head-words and their antecedents, and this, in turn will be followed by a section devoted to the role of the determiners.

V.3.2.3. Re-entry with determiners: Classifiers

All re-entry items preceded by determiners are called “classifiers” by Hendricks (1976). There are various kinds. They often contain information that is linguistic or generic, that is, information contained in the semantic make-up of the antecedent. In the following example: *He really loves that poodle. The dog eats like a king.* it is easy to understand that *dog* refers to the *poodle*. We derive the *dog* from the term *poodle*. In Hendricks words:

So long as the classifier is a concept that is higher up the taxonomic scale to which the antecedent belongs, then to that extent knowledge of the classifier may be regarded as part of the knowledge of the antecedent-word.

(Hendricks 1976: 83)

Classifiers are not as empty as pronouns, e.g., *the man* designates 'non-plural', 'male', as does *he* but unlike *he* it also designates 'countable', 'adult', 'human', etc. Nevertheless classifiers are less specific than pronouns. Use of classifiers instead of pronouns does not alter the meaning but does, according to Hendricks (1976: 82), "slightly change the level of redundancy".

Some classifiers cannot be said to be a part of a person's knowledge of a word. Hendricks (1976) comments that in the following author would be a 'purely linguistic' classifier but that *The great French anthropologist* cannot be:

Ex. 15 "*From Honey to Ashes* continues Claude Levi-Strauss's analysis of the myths of the South American Indians . . .
The great French anthropologist considers stories. . ."

(Hendricks 1976: 82)

The types of semantic relationships involved here include 1) hyponymy (superordinates and subordinates but not co-ordinates of the type *tulip, rose, poppy*, etc., as I cannot envisage how one co-ordinate can refer back cohesively to another) and 2) various kinds of synonymy.

V.3.2.4. *Frame-based Anaphora*

Another kind of implicit tie that depends on the reader's or listener's knowledge occurs in the following example:

Ex. 16 He walked into the office. The desk was littered with paper.

In this example, although there is an explicit marker of cohesion, *the*, it is only through our knowledge that offices normally contain desks that we can explain the presence of the definite article. It is not possible, however, to use the demonstratives in this kind of anaphoric relation, unless they are being used as deictics, that is, pointing devices.

Ex. 17 I walked into my office. The desk was in a mess.

I walked into my office. *This desk was in a mess.

V.3.2.5. *Meronymy*

A similar kind of anaphoric relation to the one above is meronymy (Halliday & Hasan 1989). This term refers to a part-whole relationship between the antecedent and the re-entry item, or, to be more exact, the relation between a component and an entity which is seen as a unit. The re-entry device is normally preceded by a definite article, demonstratives can only be used with a deictic meaning.

Ex. 3 The tree was badly damaged. The top branch was snapped off.

Although similar to frame-based anaphora, the latter is constituted by the relationship between a unit and the context in which the unit is normally found. Various authors have given alternative names for meronymy:

Dressler (1970)	semantic anaphora
Hetzron (1970: 913)	definiteness by entailment
Lybbert (1972: 14)	componential replacement
Chafe (1972, 1974)	inherent (part-whole) features of lexical items

V.3.2.6. Semantic field anaphora

Hetzron posits the idea of a series of “system nouns” *theft, war, problem, and sentence* concepts “that entail the existence of *thief, victim, stolen object; belligerents, causus belli, victor, solution, and subject, predicate*, respectively. If a system noun has been mentioned in the discourse, later occurrences of the entailed nouns will have the definite article, even if their identity is not known ...” (Hetzron 1970, 913f). It is very important from my point of view that all of the above semantic relationships hold between an antecedent and a **definite** re-entry as in the example below.

Ex. 4 A thief got away with £2,000 yesterday. The victim was a businessman on his way to work.

V.3.2.7. *Indirect Anaphora*

Erk & Gundel (1986) place frame-based anaphora, meronymy, and semantic field anaphora under the heading of "indirect anaphora". They claim that there are three main kinds, inclusive and exclusive. The inclusive type occurs when "some sort of part-whole relation exists between the referent of the anaphoric expression and that of its trigger or antecedent in the discourse context" (Erk & Gundel 1986: 534). The second type is *exclusive* and "the referent of the anaphoric noun phrase is part of a larger set which also includes the referent of the antecedent or the extralinguistic trigger" (Erk & Gundel 1986: 535). This type of indirect anaphora involves modifiers such as *similar*, *other* and the expression *the rest*:

Ex. 20 This requires activation of the data bus and *similar* tag.

Ex. 21 The data transfer is executed while the processor is executing *other instructions*.

Ex. 22 The ant daubs part of her burden onto a cocoon and passes *the rest* to a thirsty larva.

(Erk & Gundel 1986: 535)

The third type is what they call *created*, that is "the anaphoric phrase is not linked to any single noun phrase or extralinguistic object. Rather, its referent is inferred from one or more whole propositions or events" (Erk & Gundel 1986: 535).

Ex. 23 The transmitters and receivers enable transmissions of data. *The transmitted data* is ...

Ex. 24 Karen took the train to Rome yesterday. *The trip* took 3 hours

Ex. 25 They gave some of the meat away. *The act* may seem trifling from a human standpoint.

(Erkū & Gundel 1986: 535)

Indirect anaphors may even be indefinite, that is, the noun-phrase may be preceded by an indefinite article as in:

Ex. 26 The wheel was broken. A spoke was missing.

It follows, although this line is not pursued by Erkū and Gundel, that if indefinite count nouns can act as indefinite anaphoric expressions, the same must be true of indefinite mass nouns:

Ex. 27 You spend all your money, you act the fool, you don't know whether you are coming or going. Love could easily be described as temporary insanity.

The word *love* can only be fully understood by seeing it as an indirect anaphoric re-entry of the content of the preceding sentence.

Mass nouns can also be indirectly anaphoric when they refer to a situation:

Ex. 28 (Barry's mother throws his guitar down the stairs)

Barry says: *Anger* is not the best way to solve this problem.

Can we also use the plural of count nouns without determiners to refer anaphorically?

Ex. 29 The F16 and the F18 are beautiful. *Warplanes*, as someone once said, are also works of art.

Ex. 30 Instruments of mass destruction may be aesthetically attractive. . *Warplanes*, as someone once said, are also works of art.

Ex. 31 What comes out of the factories of MacDonalD Douglas and British Aerospace may be aesthetically pleasing. *Warplanes*, as someone once said, are also works of art.

In the first two examples, *warplanes* is a direct anaphor, whereas in the last one it is indirect. Once again, the plural of mass nouns without determiners can also be used to refer exophorically to participants in an extralinguistic context.

Ex. 32 Barry's two sons are fighting over a toy.

Barry says: "*Boys* do fight from time to time".

Ex. 33 There is the sound of shouting "hit him, hit him" from the playground.

Ex. 34 Headmaster ironically: "*Young boys* must get rid of their excess energy some way".

In the second sentence of the first example, *boys* may be described as a direct anaphor, whereas, in the second it is indirect as no boys can be seen, that is, the term has to be inferred. This shows that there are many cases of noun phrases with or without determiners that can refer back to an antecedent. Each time a possible a noun phrase is encountered, the

researcher must determine whether it is an anaphoric tie or not by looking at the co-text.

V.3.2.8. Lexical Equivalence with Determiners

To a certain extent, every word we utter or write is instantiated by the context it is used in (Anderson & Shiffrin 1980). That is, no word has full meaning until it appears in a context. Until then it has many possible or potential means. Instantial semblance, Hasan (1985: 81), or “text meaning”, Hoey (1991), simply means an expression that can only be understood by recourse to the antecedent because without it the meaning of the expression is ambiguous.

Without our being aware of it, each occurrence of a lexical item carries with it its own textual history (..) that will provide the context within which the item will be incarnated on this particular occasion. This environment determines the “instancial meaning or text meaning, of the item, a meaning which is unique to each specific instance.

(Hoey 1991: 8).

Hoey mentions three kinds of instancial meaning “equivalence”: “the sailor was their daddy”, “you be the patient, I’ll be the doctor”; “naming”: “the dog was called Toto”, “they named the dog Fluffy”; and instancial semblance “the deck was like a pool” (Hoey 1991: 8). In my opinion, none of these constitute anaphoric expressions because the antecedent and the referring expression are in the same clause. Nonetheless, at least one of these terms, instancial semblance, could be cohesive. I cannot think of an example of the first two that would meet my requirement that the anaphoric device appear in a different clause from its

antecedent. In this dissertation I will call supra-clausal instantial semblance “text-synonyms”.

The category of lexical equivalence includes some of the items seen in the last chapter, i.e. metaphor, tropes, and what I call near-synonymy, that is, a word that could be used in many contexts and understood as a synonymous expression with regards to its antecedent. The first three elements below do not need much explanation. I will just say that near repetition is simply a matter of wording but the referent the expression refers to is the same.

The difference between 38, 39 and 40 is a little more complicated. I understand that a text-synonym is a term which can be understood as synonymous with a previous expression because they belong to the same text and are co-referential. At the same time the two expressions are synonymous without too much recourse to a complicated explanation as to why they are co-referential. This can be understood better if we look at the example below. While “revenue” and “pole tax” are not text-book synonyms they can be understood as equivalents in the text.

Metaphors and tropes on the other hand may also depend on the text to be understood as co-referential but on the surface appear to have nothing to do with each other, and it is only after a certain amount of cognitive effort that they can be understood as equivalents. The difference between tropes and metaphors is that tropes are deliberate contradictions on the part of the speaker or writer and are normally pejorative.

Ex. 35	Exact Repetition:	John Major	→	John Major
Ex. 36	Near repetition:	John Major	→	Mr Major
Ex. 37	Synonymy	The automobile	→	The car
Ex. 38	Text-synonym	revenue	→	poll tax
Ex. 39	Metaphor	My wife	→	Light of my life
Ex. 40	Tropes	John	→	That pig!

V.3.2.9. General nouns

Several linguists have identified a class of nouns which they call general nouns that can be used to refer back to the preceding text. Halliday mentions nouns such as *man, creature, thing stuff, matter, move, question, idea* and *fact* (1976: 27). Bolinger (1977) points out that general nouns must be virtually empty of content because if they are not they sound rather odd. Dillon (1981) gives the following example taken from Carpenter and Just (1977):

Ex. 41 How did you know that shark was after you?

I could see

i. the creature's

ii.? the fish's

outline in the water

Dillon (1981: 96)

A special type of general nouns, **Anaphoric Nouns**, called “creative” indirect anaphors by Erkü and Gundel (1986) were identified by Francis (1986) in the monograph of the same name. In her analysis of A-nouns

in newspaper editorials, she found that these noun phrases, a combination of structure and content words, play a part in holding the text together while at the same time developing it. The difference between A-nouns and general nouns is that A-nouns refer to whole stretches of language, not to single noun-phrases. To achieve A-noun status Francis claims that a noun:

must be functioning as a pro-form and as such be anaphorically cohesive devices, referring metadiscursively to a stretch of discourse preceding it in terms of how the writer chooses to label or interpret the latter for the purposes of his/her argument. In other words [they] must be presented as synonymous with the proposition(s) immediately preceding.

(Francis 1986: 3)

The following excerpt, taken from a newspaper editorial from her corpus, exemplifies what she means. The definite noun phrase, *this line of reasoning*, in the second paragraph, refers back to the whole previous paragraph while at the same time carrying the discourse forward.

Ex. 42 Now, according to the pessimists, this superiority gives rise to an extreme peril. In practice, the missiles carried by submarines or bombers do not have the accuracy of ground-based missiles. Once the Minutemen have been eliminated, the American retaliation, aimed at the broad target of towns, would trigger the "mutual destruction" for which no statesman could assume responsibility.

According to *this line of reasoning*, the destruction of the Minutemen would amount to disarming the United States, which would be left with nothing but the means to negotiate for defeat, if not surrender.

(*Encounter* June-July 1982: 14)

The semantic classification of A-nouns proposed by Francis (1986) is as follows. She distinguishes four groups of words which she calls **metadiscursive nouns**. The first of these is made up of “utterance” nouns. This group is itself subdivided into “illocutionary” nouns related to performative verbs such as *accusation, criticism, disclosure, emphasis*, etc. and rather more general verbal activity nouns such as: *account, corollary, discussion*, etc.

A second group, “cognition” nouns, includes words such as *abstraction, comparison, fabrication, insight*, etc. The third group encompasses text nouns: *passage, section, words*, etc. The fourth group, “ownerless” nouns, is problematic as it includes words such as *fact* and *issues* which are not “associated with a particular writer or source” (Francis 1986: 17) and exist in the world outside discourse. A way of distinguishing between cognition nouns and ownerless nouns is that we can precede the former with possessive, as in *her claim*, but not with the latter **her fact*, for example.

Metadiscursive nouns

1. Utterance nouns
illocutionary nouns
nouns related to performative verbs
verbal activity nouns
2. Cognition nouns
3. Text nouns
4. Ownerless nouns

At the end of the monograph Francis tentatively proposes the existence of a large group of “non-metadiscursive” A-nouns that could be linked to different text types. She suggests that there would be a large

number of such A-nouns. The type she had in mind were made up of the following head-words: *development, stage, process, event, step, incident, move, conditions, situation, etc.*

The editorial texts from Francis's corpus are, it seems, quite rich in metadiscursive A-nouns, which are revealed as a characteristic of that genre. However, in a similar genre, newspaper reports, A-nouns of this type are noticeable due to their absence. Newspaper reports, unlike editorials, are designed to tell the reader about a particular event, not to put forward views on it (Pennock 1994). Another genre in which non-metadiscursive A-nouns are abundant is in scientific articles. Pennock & Llacer (1995) analyzed the use of A-nouns in the articles from the magazine *Scientific American*. They found that non-metadiscursive nouns far outnumbered their metadiscursive counterparts.

According to Francis, an important characteristic of A-nouns, be they meta- or non-metadiscursive, is the fact that they are not mere repetition of noun phrases, or parts of noun phrases. They can be seen as general nouns that encapsulate the meaning of previous sentences or paragraphs to carry the discourse further. They therefore transcend individual texts because they can be used in practically any text from the same genre to enable the writer to say more about previous entities.

A-nouns are obviously important textual markers and deserve to be studied not only from the point of view of their head words, but also need to be analyzed with regards to the determiners which precede them-which is something Francis did not do either in her 1986 monograph or her 1995 article.

V.3.2.10. *Determiners preceding nouns*

There are several kinds of determiners that can precede a noun phrase such as the general nouns and A-nouns that we saw above. These determiners play an important part in the construction of meta- and non-metadiscursive nouns:

this, that, these, those, the, such, similar, a, further, more, so much, possessive pronouns, genitive case, another, other, both, \emptyset .

V.3.2.10.1. *Demonstrative Determiners*

Although McCarthy (1994) did not analyse the cohesive use of pronouns or demonstratives in their role as modifiers, it would seem to follow that “the” + noun phrase has the same unmarked role as *it* while the functions of the demonstratives “this/these” + noun phrase and “that/those” + noun phrase are parallel to that of the pronoun *this* and *that* respectively. However, it is obvious that Anaphoric nouns are more complex than pronouns as they include modifiers and head-words. Pennock & Llacer (1995) found that A-nouns preceded by the definite article or the demonstratives *this* and *that* were numerous in the role of “re-entry items” (Jordan 1985) in the scientific articles that they analysed. Their hypothesis was that the large number of the unmarked form of Anaphoric nouns preceded by “the” is logical as it simply marks an entity as already being in focus. In other words, A-nouns preceded by “the” simply re-enter an entity but do not focus the reader’s attention on themselves in any special way. The large number of occurrences of

A-nouns preceded by *this* however, is due to the desire to bring the preceding text into focus and signal it as important in the discourse. Thus, the function of *this* + A-noun head seems to be linked with the need to introduce change while maintaining the focus on the antecedent. It is quite logical that A-nouns preceded by *that* should be far less numerous as their function seems to be that of a “marginalizer”, to signal something as non-central to the discourse at a particular moment.

V.3.2.10.2. Other definite determiners

In Pennock & Llacer (1995), it was discovered that “such” was the most common determiner preceding Anaphoric nouns after *this* and *that*. The meaning of “such” seemed to be almost as neutral as that of the definite article. The determiner “both” obviously is only used when referring to two items at the same time.

Ex. 43 Because oligonucleotide drugs are essentially snippets of genetic material, they are often referred to as genetic therapies. We should note, though that **such treatments** differ markedly from standard gene therapies.

“The New Genetic Medicines”: 51.

Ex. 44 Gibraltar was buoyed by Mr Major's declaration, as it was by a robust statement to the same effect by Malcolm Rifkind, the Foreign Secretary, put out the day before. **Both assertions** were made in response to a leaked proposal by Abel Matutes, Spain's Foreign Minister, suggesting a lengthy period of Anglo-Spanish “co-sovereignty” over Gibraltar, after which the colony would “revert to Spain”.

“Stand by the rock” *Times*, February 3

V.3.2.10.3. Indefinite anaphoric determiners

The use of the indefinite article as a re-entry device is a rare phenomenon but must be understood as a rhetorical device for re-entering a stretch of discourse. The noun-phrase preceded by “a” must always form part of the same sentence and is usually separated by a dash. We could rewrite the sentence that comes after the dash as a separate sentence beginning with a demonstrative + noun phrase, i.e. *This is a demanding test that ...*

Ex. 45 Using these animals we could assay the ability of the chimeric proteins to act on the regulatory elements of target genes in their normal chromosomal positions—a demanding test that closely mimics the usual conditions under which these proteins operate.

(“The Molecular Architects of Body Design”, 39)

V.3.2.10.4. Determiners of “similarity”

There are determiners that share the general meaning “similarity”. These are “other”, “another”, and “similar”, which, as we saw above, Erkö & Gundel (1986) call “exclusive”. I would also add “further” to this list.

Ex. 46 That is because a large body of data, gathered in studies of acid rain, makes sulfates the best understood aerosol. **Other** aerosol substances—soot from oil combustion, soil dust from desertification ...

"Sulfate Aerosol and Climatic Change"30

Ex. 47 For example, one common and unsubstantiated supposition was that most of the haze outside cities was

a “natural background” aerosol. **Another** early, implicit assumption was that processes at the earth’s surface make most aerosol particles.

“Sulfate Aerosol and Climatic Change” 30

Ex. 48 By transferring the Ultrabithorax homeodomain to Deformed, we had apparently also transferred its selective regulatory abilities. Another homeodomain swap experiment gave us **similar results**

“The Molecular Architects of Body Design” 39

V.3.2.10.5. Comparative determiners

In the last chapter we saw the problems Huddleston (1978) had with Halliday and Hasan’s (1976) view of comparatives as anaphoric reference items. Indeed it is difficult to see the identity of reference that exists between *wittier* and *Max*, in *Max is intelligent. But Tom is wittier*, that is between a predicate and an argument.

A comparative presupposes an antecedent and is therefore cohesive, but it seems that the cohesiveness of *But Tom is wittier* is the ellipsis of (*than*) *Max*. For Halliday & Hasan (1976) the comparative in this case relates the predicate of one argument with the predicate of another and therefore the predicate of the second argument is indirectly related to the first argument. I restrict comparative anaphor to two cases:

a) comparatives of quantity or number which refer back to the antecedent as in *She gave me some money. I needed more to buy a car/ I needed more money to buy a car*. Such sentences are similar to re-entry with pronouns or determiners, i.e., *She gave me some money. I needed it to buy a car. I needed the money to buy a car*. In fact only in the case of ellipsis of the head-word,

money, could there be any doubt at all that *more* is acting anaphorically.

b) comparatives with A-nouns which refer back to the whole of the preceding text such as *Much more research needs to be done before biologists have a good understanding ...* (“The Molecular Architects of Body Design”, 41).

Other cases of comparison are “further” and “so much/so many”:

Ex. 49 The equivalent *Hox* and *HOM* genes are arranged in the same linear order... A **further parallel** has been observed ...

“The Molecular Architects of Body Design” 40

Ex. 50 a factor of 2,500 to 0.001 or 0.002 inch ... **So much rolling**

"The Aluminum Beverage Can"

V.3.3. Problem Areas of Co-reference

Certain kinds of “lexical cohesion” prove to be problematic from a semantic point of view because the authors that posit them do not seem to be aware that the examples they give are often not cases of cohesion at all but simply cases of a very loose kind of collocation. Other problematic areas are due to the fact that the the re-entry device/antecedent relationship is not clear or does not involve pronouns or noun-phrases. We will look at the case of antonymy, derivation, anaphoric islands and verbs as antecedents.

V.3.3.1. *Antonymy*

Many authors (Stotsky 1983; Halliday & Hasan 1989; Hoey 1991) include antonymy in their inventory of re-entry devices. However, I do not accept that the antonymy that Hoey, for instance, envisages between words like *arrive* and *leave*, is cohesive antonymy at all. The fact that some entities *arrive* and others *leave* has nothing to do with cohesion and may simply be a random occurrence. In the following example, *that variation* seems to be triggered by *the results are not (constant)*, which may look like a case of antonymy but is really a case of synonymy, that is, *results that are not constant = varying results = that variation*.

Ex. 51 The fundamental process is constant, but the results are not: humans, flies and worms represent a wide range of body designs.

Noting that variation, biologists have supposed that the molecular architects of body form . . .
"The Molecular Architects of Body Design", 36

If we are, indeed, faced with a case of cohesive antonymy, that is, if the relationship between the re-entry device and the antecedent is one of identity, then this may be due to **irony** or another type of rhetorical device called **oxymoron** although I suspect that synonymy underlies all these relationships.

V.3.3.2. *Derivatives*

Stotsky (1983), in her critique of Halliday and Hasan (1976) points out that these authors do not take into account the role of derivatives, such as *power/powerful*, *modern/modernity* as text-forming relations. She asks

whether they can be classed as repetitions. Another question she puts to the reader is whether pairs such as *efficiency/inefficiency* are exemplars of repetition or opposition? (Stotsky 1983: 433).

She believes that derivatives should be included in the set of co-reference relations and that the use of derivation gives "the writer of exposition a considerable degree of stylistic flexibility while preserving basic meaning" (Stotsky 1983: 434) She also claims that derivation is an indication of maturity in expository writing, "an important index of growth" (Stotsky 1983: 433).

Once more, I have to say that whether we regard derivation as co-reference or not depends on whether it is preceded by a determiner or not or whether to make sense of it we need to look at its antecedent. If this is so, it can be classed as such. I am inclined to believe that this type of "lexical cohesion" is rarely cohesive.

V.3.3.3. Anaphoric Islands

Many problematic cases of co-reference have been investigated by linguists from the various Transformational-Generativist tendencies Bach (1968), Bach & Partee (1980), Bresnen (1970, 1971), Postal (1969, 1971), Grinder & Postal (1971), Corum (1973), Lakoff & Ross (1973), Watt (1975), Partee (1970), Sag (1979), Rigau (1981). In the article, "Anaphoric Islands" (1969), Postal deals with constraints on the occurrence of certain anaphoric elements and how to interpret them. He (1969: 205) argues that:

certain types of linguistic form become anaphoric islands, where such an entity is a sentence part which cannot contain an anaphoric element whose antecedent lies outside of the part in question and which cannot contain the antecedent structure for anaphoric elements lying outside.

In other words the *Anaphoric Island Constraint*, (AIC), does not allow reference from an anaphoric pronoun to a *part* of the semantic make-up of an antecedent.

- Ex. 52 a. Max's parents_{*i, j*} are dead and he deeply misses them_{*i, j*}
b. *Max is an orphan and he deeply misses them.

The violation of the AIC in (6)b is due to the fact that the pronoun *them* cannot get 'inside' the surface form of the lexical item *orphan* in order to refer to 'the set of individuals who were Max's parents' (1969: 206).

In "Missing Antecedents" Grinder & Postal (1971) make it clear that they do not accept as correct sentences such as 53 b which would, without doubt be acceptable for many English speakers:

- Ex. 53 a. Joan bought a painting by Picasso_{*i*} because she likes his_{*j*} work.
b. *Joan bought a Picasso because she likes his work.

Moreover, they do not accept sentences like the above for the same reasons as those expounded in 'Anaphoric Islands', that is, although they admit that (53b) is a perfectly valid surface structure, they do not accept that it means 'I bought a painting by X because Y likes X's work.'

Unfortunately they do not offer a convincing argument to explain why (53b). would be acceptable in other dialects. It is difficult to imagine what the antecedent for "his" could be if it is not that part of the semantic make-up of the NP "a Picasso" that makes reference to the painter himself.

Claudia Corum in an article entitled "Anaphoric Peninsulas" (1973) states that the AIC as outlined by Postal (1969) and Postal and Grinder (1971) does not hold for her dialect of English. The following items are therefore quite acceptable (1979: 90)

Ex. 54 Sergeant Pepper claims not to drink, but I have seen him take one now and then. (one = a drink)

Ex. 55 Jim reviewed that book and it will be published in Linguistic Inquiry. (it = the review)

Ex. 56 I speak French fluently because I lived there for eight years. (there = France)

Corum comments that the threshold of acceptability for these sentences varies from speaker to speaker. The dialects which allow such exceptions are *Peninsular Dialects*. Corum states that the violations of AIC are widespread and therefore it is questionable whether the restraint is relevant or not.

Among other authors, Corum quotes Lakoff and Ross (1973) whose findings would seem to go along with hers. They suggest that the morphological similarities existing between the antecedent and the anaphor are important in making apparent violations of the AIC acceptable. The next two examples illustrate what they mean.

Ex. 57 John became a guitarist because he thought it was a beautiful instrument.

Ex. 58 McCarthyites are sad, because they voted for him and he lost.

For Lakoff and Ross (1973) deviance from the AIC is a matter of degree, not an absolute restriction and depends on whether the anaphor and its antecedent are morphologically related or not and the antecedent commands the anaphor or not.

Corum claims that the examples she provides would suggest that **pronominalization** takes place pre-lexically, i.e. 'before the rule of **lexicalization** incorporates the "parts" of the meaning into the lexical item that appears on the surface.' Further, she claims that:

the meaning of lexical items is fully specified in the semantic structure and that the lexical items are transformationally derived, the parts of meaning being replaced by the lexical item by a rule of LEXICALIZATION that may occur after certain syntactic rules, such as PRONOMINALIZATION, have occurred.

(Corum 1973: 90)

Postal and Grinder (1971) differ from Corum (1973), Lakoff and Ross (1972) and Watt (1975) in that the former believe that pronominalization takes place after lexicalization while the latter believes that this is only true for some "dialects" whereas for others pronominalization takes place before lexicalization. This argument is of little interest to those outside the generativist world of theoretical axe-grinding.

Leech's (1981) explanation for the AIC. Is that in (6) the lexical item **orphan** is a set of semantic features including a downgraded predication (similar to a relative clause in syntactic terms). The feature - PARENT occurs in the definition of orphan but not the noun parent. He therefore concludes the following:

Since anaphoric reference is a syntactic process, belonging to a different level of representation from the semantic representation, it follows naturally that no pronoun or other anaphoric device can refer to something within a lexical definition.

(Leech 1981: 354)

It is not clear from the above explanation how Leech would explain the violation of AIC that Corum has pointed out. The polemic stirred up by "Anaphoric Islands" could be solved by asking a large group of informants whether they accept the above sentences or simply by using a large corpus to find out whether pronouns can refer back to the semantic make-up of antecedents be they nouns or verbs. My opinion is that all of the examples we have seen are acceptable in most variants of English. In fact, the most disturbing aspect of the dialectal battle between the above linguistics is there recourse to words like *dialect* to justify different theories in transformational grammar. These terms can be used as loosely as an author wishes and can cover concepts as different as *dialect*, *language variant* and even *ideolect*, ruling out, in the process, the necessary generality that any theory should have.

V.3.3.4. *Verbal antecedents*

Both Corum (1973) and Grinder and Postal refer to a series of verbs which produce a (usually obnoxious) body. Corum, quoting Doloreax (1971) notes that such verbs allow anaphoric reference to the substance produced:

Ex. 59 Someone must have farted; I can smell it.

Ex. 60 If you have to shit in here, try not to get it on the rug.

More examples of pronouns referring back to verbs of this sort are supplied from the then unpublished notes of William Watt

Ex. 61 a. Someone must have been pissing in the sink because it's running down the counter.

b. Max didn't piss in the sink but Louise did and it got on the sponge.

Once more, the evidence seems to support a troublesome fact, that is, re-entry items can actually refer back to some verbs.

If pronouns can refer back to verbs, can verbs be anaphors of other verbs? Hendricks (1976) states that verbal classifiers exist, and thereby seems to accept that they can be used anaphorically. He mentions the verbs *perform (it)*, *accomplish (it)* and the use of more generic verbs such as *to kill* replacing more specific verbs such as *to strangle*.

Ex. 62 The Boston strangler killed many women. He strangled them with a stocking.

Although there is obviously a connection between *killed* and *strangled* in these sentences, if they actually refer to the same action, the subject and the object must be the same. Therefore, we could say that these verbs are just as much part of the predicate as the pre- and post-modifiers of the noun-phrase are and can be ignored with regard to their cohesive function. The cohesive function is carried by the noun phrases.

V.3.3.5. Substitution and Ellipsis

I do not reject Halliday & Hasan's (1976) claim that substitution and ellipsis are different from co-reference, i.e., the former relate the antecedent and the subsequent expression because both refer to the same class of entities, while co-reference implies a relationship of identity between the same members of a class, but in my view this distinction, identity of sense and identity of reference is, to a certain extent irrelevant. Throughout this chapter and the one previous to it I have said that an element is cohesive if it can only be fully understood after recourse to its antecedent. Therefore, substitution and ellipsis must obviously fall under the category of cohesive devices even though they are quite different from the kinds of reference we have seen above. If one hears the sentence: *I will too*, it is clear that to understand what the person who is speaking is going to do, we need to know the antecedent is. The kind of ellipsis that I am interested in here is nominal ellipsis as in the following example:

Ex. 63 I'll have the big apple. He can have the small.

My interest in substitutes is similar. Although there are various kinds of substitution, I will focus on nominal substitution, which is almost identical to nominal ellipsis except for the element *one/ones*: Take the following example:

Ex. 64 John likes the red scarf. Pete wants a blue one

It is clear that if we did not hear the antecedent, we would have to ask *Blue what?*

V.4. Conclusions

We have seen the multiple ways that entities can be re-entered and some most types of re-entry. In the following chapter I will describe the approach that I will use to carry out the analysis of my corpus.

VI APPROACH ADOPTED IN THIS THESIS FOR THE ANALYSIS OF THE CORPUS

VI.1. Preamble

The approach I have chosen has been influenced by many of the authors I have mentioned to a greater or lesser degree. It is, therefore, eclectic in that sense. However, my main bias is towards those authors who, like Halliday & Hasan (1976) and Hoey (1991), emphasize the surface of discourse, that is, those researchers who are interested in discovering what the surface manifestations of discourse can tell us about how people communicate. This is not to say that I reject the approach of other authors like van Dijk (1972, 1977, 1989) and Kintsch (1974, 1991, 1995) who have a more mentalistic approach to discourse but I think that de Beaugrande's warning that "we must guard against allowing the text to vanish behind mental processes" (de Beaugrande & Dressler 1981: 35) is useful if we wish to discover what real texts have to say to us.

Many of the categories that I set out below, which will be used in the analysis of my corpus show evident signs of the influence of Halliday & Hasan (1976), Hoey (1991), and Francis (1986, 1995) but nearly all the other authors mentioned in the previous three chapters have informed my decisions as to which phenomena to include and which to leave out.

The surface approach I have chosen does not mean that I am unaware that many cohesive/coherent phenomena happen below the surface of discourse. It is for this reason mainly that the role of the reader has to be taken into account as it is the reader who interprets the graphological signals that any written texts are made up of. As the reader's interpretation often takes into account the aims, or goals of the author, I can state, as I said in the introduction, that my analysis should take into account all three major components in written texts, that is, the author, the text and the reader. However, it is to the text and the reader on which I place most of the emphasis of this dissertation.

I have strived towards an eminently practical analysis of the corpus I have selected. It is my firm belief that it is all very well to suggest that certain phenomena may be occurring in language but that it is necessary to carry out empirical research in order to prove one's hypothesis or hypotheses. I have based my approach loosely on the work of Halliday & Hasan (1976), Hasan (1985), Parson (1990), and Hoey (1991) as I would like to think of my work as a continuation of their approach in spite of the many differences between my methods and theirs.

The mainstay of my analysis includes, as I said in chapter V, cohesive devices such as pronouns, repetition, lexical equivalence, substitution and related phenomena. I have eschewed the chronological sequencing carried out through *consecutio temporum*, and logical sequences, such as those proposed by Jordan (1984) and

Mann & Thompson (1988), Bernárdez (1990) i.e., condition, cause, purpose, etc. The inclusion of the notion of DT is due to the fact that I believe that the cohesive devices mentioned at the beginning of this paragraph are linked to the DT. This is because re-entry devices themselves are evidence of the continuity of a DT.

Moreover my focus is on those elements that re-enter antecedents and not collocations and exophoric reference as they do not. The latter, as I mentioned in previous chapters, might be said to make a text more cohesive in a loose kind of way but they do not literally re-enter an antecedent.

VI.2. Personal Taxonomy of Re-entry Devices

In the following section I list the re-entry devices that I will use to analyze the corpus of editorial texts that I have chosen and the codes that identify them. I also describe those elements in a text which cannot be classified as re-entry items but which have been identified in the corpus. In the classification below, I have not taken into account the exact semantic relationship holding between antecedent and re-entry device except to differentiate between repetition, text equivalence, synonymy and hyponymy. It is in the text equivalent devices that many relationships can be found between text members, such as instantial semblance. Needless to say, the selection I have made has been arrived at taking into account the preceding chapters and especially the discussion of re-entry in chapter V.

VI.2.1. Pronouns

The pronoun section is quite straightforward. **P1** refers to personal pronouns such as “he”, “she”, “it”. The second person plural pronoun “we” is also included when an antecedent appears in the text. The only problem with regards to pronouns is sifting out the cases of “it” which are of the sentential variety and the many examples existential or introductory “it”. **P2** refers to re-entry items carried out through possessive pronouns such as “his”, “her” “its”. The elements accompanying **P2s** are explained further on in this chapter. **P4** refers to “sentential it”, that is, when the pronoun “it” refers to a whole clause, sentence or paragraph.. **P3s** are reflexive

pronouns which are not truly anaphoric as they always occur within the same clause. I have, therefore, not taken them into account.

Below are examples of each:

Ex. 1 “A new spin on pay policy”

P4 L20	he	P4 L20	A progressive chancellor	P1
-----------	----	-----------	-----------------------------	----

Ex. 2 “A new spin on pay policy”

P1 L6	his efforts	P1 L6	Mr Brown	P2
----------	-------------	----------	----------	----

Ex. 3 “A new spin on pay policy”

P3 L11	It	PP	Previous Paragraph	P4
-----------	----	----	--------------------	----

VI.2.2. Lexical repetition

The next group is made up of what I call lexical repetition. **L1a** is simply lexical repetition such as “Mr Brown” when it is used to refer back to a previous mention of “Mr Brown”. **L1b** refers to relationships in which one of the elements includes the antecedent but is not a straightforward case of part/whole relationship. In the text “Kids alone: who minds?” the term “employers” covers “far too few family-friendly employers” but is neither a superordinate, because it is, in fact repetition, but not simple repetition. In other words, there exists what looks like exact surface repetition but the

referents are different. However, the antecedent is re-entered. This is very similar to an L3a, which I explain below. However, the link between this kind of re-entry phenomenon and its antecedent is of the hyponym/superordinate type and no surface resemblance is required.

Ex. 4 "A new spin on pay policy"

P1 L1	No interview with Gordon Brown	HL	Mr Brown	L1a
----------	-----------------------------------	----	----------	-----

Ex. 5 "Labour's Inspector"

P7 L19	all Education Secretaries	P2 L5	Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary	L1b
-----------	------------------------------	----------	--	-----

One of the problems identifying lexical repetition was to decide exactly what is meant by repetition, that is, does it mean that repetition only refers to exact repetition or whether some type of modification is allowed. I chose the second type as it is clear that "girl" followed later on by "girls" may be a case of repetition even if we are now dealing with a plural, not a singular.

Another case is the genitive, for example, should "Mr Blair's article" be regarded in part as repetition of an earlier mention of "Mr Blair"? In my opinion it should be as it is not only a case of nearly exact repetition but also refers to the same person. I have counted all cases of this type as repetition of the noun which carries the genitive case with one exception an example of which may be "Mr Blair's article", if it refers to an article written by Mr Blair that

has already been mentioned before. In this case, the head-word would be "article" and "Mr Blair" is seen as being associated syntagmatically with it.

L1a also includes those entities that are accompanied by a different item from the original. That means that "Tony Blair", for example, would be classed as repetition of "Mr Blair", as the person, i.e., referent, is the same.

Further cases of what I call repetition are more problematic. If we take the case of "Labour policy" which comes after the antecedent "Labour". Although there is exact repetition of "Labour", it is obvious that "Labour policy" is "a policy" not a party. If we split the noun phrase into "Labour" and "policy", then "Labour" would be an exact repetition of the antecedent "Labour". I analyze "Labour policy" as a case of repetition, in the case of "Labour" and treat "policy" as bound to "Labour" through what I term **possessive word order modification**.

This is similar to what happens in the phrase "Tony Blair's commitment", in the editorial "Constitutional Clash", in which "Tony Blair" is an antecedent. "Tony Blair" is an entity in its own right and it is accompanied by "commitment" through a genitive relationship. Of course, the whole noun-phrase goes beyond "Tony Blair" but I feel it would be wrong to say that this referent is merely acting as an adjective, that is, a predicate in semantic terms. Underneath the surface, we have two elements, that is, "Tony Blair" and "commitment".

If we take this idea a little further we can see that there are words such as "constitutional" as in "constitutional change" which are analogous to "Labour policy" except that they undergo a slight change with regards to surface form. We say "constitutional change", not *"constitution change". However, the relationship is the same at a deeper level. Therefore I regard "constitutional" as a repetition of "constitution". As with the example above, we have two underlying referents: "the constitution" and "change".

Another example of what I mean can be seen in the phrase "conservative defence policy" I treat the adjective "conservative" here as a repetition of an antecedent noun "conservative", or as a synonym of "Tories". I do this because "conservative defence policy" could be rewritten as "the defence policy of the conservatives" (or conservative party). In other words, they are only different superficially.

However, to be classed as repetition of the L1a type, there must be some kind of surface resemblance. In this respect I agree with Hoey (1983) that surface relations are of the greatest importance. At the same time, nevertheless, I take into account, like Huddleston (1978, 1980, 1984), that, in certain cases, differences in surface form are easily accounted for when looking for possible cohesive ties by scratching the surface a little.

Ex. 6 "Constitutional Clash"

P6 L26	The depth of		Tony Blair	SA
P6 L26	Tony Blair's commitment	P5 L22		L1a
P6 L26	Tony Blair's commitment to restoring local government			SAG

I realize that the definitions of **L1a** and **L1b** may be controversial and that a stricter view of repetition would change the outcome of the analysis of the corpus in that there would undoubtedly be fewer cases of repetition. However, I feel that I have come to a compromise between surface identity and inference that is more conservative than radical and, more importantly, nearer to the reality that the reader perceives.

VI.2.3. Text Equivalentents

The next group of ties are text equivalentents or instancial equivalentents not preceded by determiners. This is a complex group that includes all those ties **without** determiners which are not simple lexical repetitions. These have been given the code **L2a**. An example, can be found in the text "Fight the battle of ideas" in which "misfortunes" is a text equivalentent of "all of Britain's ills", which means that only in this text are they equivalentents and that the former refers back to the latter.

The difference between **L1as** and **L2as** is that in the latter there is no need for surface similarity at all. The relationship **L2b** cannot,

therefore, exist as this kind of relationship would require surface resemblance, which does not occur here as the relationship obtained is through text equivalence. The relationship L2c cannot exist either as a determiner is always necessary; the equivalent with a determiner is a DNF2c.

Ex. 7 "Guessing Milosevic's Next Move"

P2 L13	chauvinist sentiment	P2 L9	Serb nationalism	L2a
-----------	----------------------	----------	------------------	-----

VI.2.4. Hyponyms and Superordinates

The next group of re-entry items, belonging to the lexical repetition group, is made up of ties which involve relationships of superordination and hyponymy. These are given the code L3a. An example of this is the following from the text "Fight the battle of ideas". Here, "income tax" is seen to be a hyponym of the expression "such policies". As we saw above, L3a does not require surface resemblance. An L1c is not possible as exclusive relations always requires a determiner such as "similar", "other", "another".

Ex. 8 "Cook finds the right recipe for Europe"

P6 L22	the French and German political elites	HL	Europe	L3
-----------	--	----	--------	----

VI.2.5. Synonyms

The semantic relationship of synonymy is given the code **L5**. The only difference between these and **L2s** is that **L5s** are considered to be dictionary synonyms rather than the ad hoc relations maintained by **L2s** and their antecedents. There are two possible kinds of relationships of synonymy, **L5a**, which is simple synonymy and **L5b**, which comprises relationships of inclusiveness. **L5c** which would cover relationships of synonymy coupled with exclusiveness, does not exist as it would require a determiner such as “another”, “other”, etc.

Ex. 9 “Cook Finds the Right Recipe for Europe”

P3 L8	the euro	P1 L2	a single currency	L5a
----------	----------	----------	-------------------	-----

VI.2.6. Determiners Noun-Determiners

The determiner noun-phrases are a numerous group and include all noun phrases that are preceded by a determiner. They can have the same function as the lexical repetition group. The only difference in some cases is the presence of the determiner.

VI.2.6.1. Lexical Repetition with Determiners

The DNF1a type is the same as the L1a type but preceded by a determiner, i.e., "the battle at hand" has the antecedent "the battle" in the editorial "Fight the battle of ideas". In many cases the difference between DNF1a and L1a is very small as can be seen in the example above. We can see that the antecedent itself is a definite noun phrase. So we could say that it is the repetition of the whole phrase including the definite article. Indeed, many definite anaphors are compulsory, e.g., in the same editorial "The Conservatives", which has "The Conservatives" as its antecedent we can see that the noun-phrase plus determiner is compulsory.

This is not always the case. At times there is an indefinite noun phrase without a determiner or the indefinite article "a/an" followed by a definite noun phrase. This is the classical case of an entity being entered and then followed by a definite noun phrase, e.g. "a girl" followed by "the girl". However, this is the exception rather than the norm in the texts I have looked at.

Ex. 10

P2 L9	the Kosovo card	HL	Kosovo	DNF1a the
P2 L9	the Kosovo <u>card</u>			SAW

Most anaphoric noun phrases preceded by definite determiners have definite antecedents. Following Erkü and Gundel (1986) I have included indefinite articles as anaphoric items. The difference

between definite and indefinite is often blurred. This can be seen in the editorial "Cook finds the right recipe for Europe". In this editorial which is about Britain joining the monetary union the terms "the Euro" and "a single currency" are synonyms. Both are used as re-entry items and it seems that wherever we find "the Euro" we can replace it by "a single currency" and vice-versa.

Ex. 11 A British government which is not opposed to a single currency in principle should be fighting fiercely to influence and reform the EMU project before taking the plunge.

VI.2.6.2. Text equivalents with determiners

The **DNF2a** groups are what I call **text equivalents**, that is, they are synonyms of text antecedents but only within the text in question. They are similar to **L2s** but happen to be preceded by determiners. I would put forward that if they are in opposition to any other type of re-entry items, it would be **DNF1as** and **L1as**. In my analysis, I distinguish between metadiscursive determiner noun phrases and non-metadiscursive noun phrases, which I explained in the preceding chapter.

Ex. 12 "Labour Aims at the Top"

P1 L5	these groups	P1 L4	judges, top civil servants and senior military officers	NMDNF2a these
----------	--------------	----------	---	---------------

DNF2b do not exist as surface resemblance is required. By nature text equivalents do not hold any resemblance to their antecedents. **DNF2c**'s are definite noun phrases that contain words such as "other" and "another" discussed above. Although there is no identity of reference between a **DNF2c** and its antecedent, it is clear that one needs to know the antecedent to decode the **DNF2c** itself. An example is the following from the "Give the new pressure parties a good airing" text in which "many other issues" refers back to "their position".

Ex. 13 "Irreversible Opt-In"

P2 L12	Two other measures are under discussion	P2 L11	Three directives have been passed	NMDNF2c
-----------	--	-----------	--------------------------------------	---------

VI.2.6.3. Hyponyms and Superordinates with determiners

DNF3a's are similar to **L3a**'s in that there is a part/whole relationship, the only difference between the two being the presence of a determiner in the case of the former. In the "Lords on target" text we find an example where "the loss of livelihood in a licensed business" is included in "the forthcoming deprivation of freedom".

Ex. 14 "Going, Going"

P1 L3	a blanket export ban	P1 L2	the more draconian the restrictions that are set on legitimate exports	NMDNF3a indefinite article
----------	----------------------	----------	---	-------------------------------

VI.2.6.4. Synonyms with determiners

DNF5a's are the equivalent of **L5a**'s and refer to the use of dictionary synonyms to re-enter antecedents. In the text "Backing our boys", the phrase "the Services" is a common synonym for "British Armed Forces".

Ex. 15 "Cook Finds the Right Recipe for Europe"

P9 L38	the euro	P9 L37	a single currency	DNF5a the
-----------	----------	-----------	-------------------	-----------

VI.2.7. Pro-forms

Pro-forms (Pro) are made up of all the words that can take the place of a noun or noun-phrase except the demonstratives which are dealt with separately. In "The Cook Currency" text the tie "many", a pro-form, is used to re-enter the antecedent "Labour leaders".

Ex. 16 "A New Spin on Pay Policy"

P4 L19	<u>Another</u> is that to freeze this particular set of salary increases	P4 L17	The problems	Pro-form another
-----------	--	-----------	--------------	------------------

VI.2.8. Demonstrative Pronoun Reference

DPR's or Demonstrative pronoun reference items are pro-forms too but I have given them a separate status as they are more numerous than the pro-forms mentioned above. It is also clear that they are related to the definite noun phrases introduced by demonstrative determiners. This is a limited group of pro-forms "this", "that", "these" and "those".

Ex. 17 "Labour Aims at the Top"

P1 L1	that	P1 L1	If Tony Blair and Gordon Brown consider that ... the increased level of pay that Parliament	DPR that
----------	------	----------	---	----------

VI.2.9. Substitution and Ellipsis

Substitution. I have only found two kinds of substitution in my corpus, e.g., nominal S1 and verbal S2. Examples of both are found below:

The phrase "a difficult one" re-enters "The lesson for local legislators" in the text "Going, Going: Sotheby's must act fast before its reputation has wholly gone". In the text "Nawaz Sharif's

landslide” the phrase “doing so”, an S2, re-enters “can only be removed by a two-thirds majority”.

Ex. 18 “Labour Inspector”

P3 L9	different ones	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	S1
----------	----------------	----------	---------------------	----

Ellipsis, or zero substitution, which I call E1 is deemed to be a special type of re-entry as we often have to refer back to entities to understand the meaning of the current expression. An example from “The Cook Currency” text shows that the only way to understand the tie “The smallest hint” is by recourse to the antecedent “Labour politicians”.

Ex. 19 “A New Spin on Pay Policy”

P4 L20	more money	P3 L12	public spending total	E1 (for public spending)
-----------	------------	-----------	--------------------------	--------------------------------

VI.2.10. Comparatives

The next set of re-entry devices are the comparatives. There has been a certain amount of discussion about whether comparison is an identity of sense relationship or an identity of reference relationship. For instance, in the case of “further damage”, from the editorial “Fight the battle of ideas”, only recourse to the antecedent can explain what the damage referred to is: “The Conservatives are ... the monocausal explanation for all of Britain's ills”.

Ex. 20 “Cook Finds the Right Recipe for Europe

P10 L43	further economic convergence	P6 L21	Monetary union	C1
------------	---------------------------------	-----------	----------------	----

VI.2.11. Pseudo-cohesive or “connex” relationships not included in the analysis

I will now discuss other types of possible sources of cohesion that I have not included. These cases have been discussed in previous chapters so I will look at them very briefly here, explaining why they haven't been included in my analysis.

VI.2.11.1. Collocation

Cases of collocation are those which involve two entities which are related but only because they belong to the same semantic field. For example, we have collocational association between “easy answers” which is followed by the phrase “These are the questions”.

We cannot say that “questions” re-enter “answers” but it is undeniable that they are linked to a certain extent. This kind of relationship has not been taken into account when looking at the the lexical density of cohesive items in each text as it would open up the floodgates to almost any kind of “cohesive” relationship as I discussed in previous chapters. In the following example, which occurs right at the beginning of the editorial, the “full-time working mothers” is a case of collocation because it has nothing to do with the “Guardian Women” in the first line.

Ex. 21 “Kids Alone. Who Minds?”

P1 L1	Guardian Women			∅
P1 L1	your sinks	P1 L1	Guardian Women	P2
P1 L2	Two full-time working mothers			CR (employment)

VI.2.11.2. Homophoric reference

Homophoric reference has not been included here as it is dubious whether a phrase such as “the Queen” is cohesive in a text, if it does not have an antecedent inside the text. In this respect I have followed Halliday & Hasan (1976). However, if, for instance, a country is mentioned, i.e., Pakistan, I have counted references to institutions in that particular text as examples of ellipsis.

Ex. 22 “Labour Aims at the Top”

P1 L5	the private sector			Homophoric
----------	--------------------	--	--	------------

VI.2.11.3. Exophoric time expressions

I have not included exophoric time expressions such as “yesterday”, “today”, etc., unless they are repeated and can then be seen as endophoric reference.

Ex. 23 “Stand by the Rock”

P1 L1	last week			ETE
----------	-----------	--	--	-----

VI.2.11.4. Resemblance to previous expression

This type of repetition is not anaphoric as it does not constitute a link between two entities. It refers to the fact that two adjectives , such as “quick” may appear in two noun-phrases as in “quick entry” and “quick research”. Although there is no anaphoric connection, we can say that there is some kind of very weak connection through resemblance.

Ex. 24 “Cook Finds the Right Recipe”

P9 L35	quick decision- making	P9 L35	quick thinking	RPE
P9 L35	quick persuading	P9 L35	quick thinking	RPE

VI.2.12. Untriggered elements

There are, of course, elements in any text which do not have an antecedent. These entities will be marked with the symbol \emptyset . As these are not anaphoric entities, they have not been included in the statistical analysis of the texts.

Ex. 25 "Edging towards the Euro"

P2	the reality of market			P2
L9	forces			L9

VI.3. Concluding remarks

In the next chapter I will link the above re-entry items to the various hypotheses and objectives that will be tested on the corpus I have gathered.

VII RESEARCH HYPOTHESES AND OBJECTIVES

VII.1. Preamble

Having reviewed the literature on the four major foundations of my research, e.g., genre, coherence, cohesion, and re-entry devices, at this point I will reiterate in more detail the main hypotheses contained in this dissertation, and the objectives that derive from them.

It has to be said right from the beginning that all the hypotheses in this dissertation derive from a single macro-hypothesis, namely, that one set of differences between newspaper editorials and other types of written communication, although of a more subtle nature than most, is that their information structure is different from other genres and that said structure affects the type and number of cohesive devices in this sub-genre. This belief underlies a hypothesis of an even more general kind that genre must at some, or all levels, be manifested by surface features peculiar to one particular genre or sub-genre. In other words, the bottom line is that genre is ultimately evident at the surface of discourse.

Although many of the more specific hypotheses in this research spring from the macro-hypotheses I have outlined above, which I held to be true before starting the analysis of my corpus, it must be said that some of the more specific hypotheses were suggested by the partial findings

during the analysis itself. The deductive method, after all, relies to a great extent on knowledge of the object of analysis. Therefore, the data, we find during the analysis of a corpus feeds the deductive process and may lead the researcher to posit further hypotheses, which, in turn, suggest the carrying out of further analysis. [11]

In the following sections I will proceed to enumerate my hypotheses and the objectives that resulted from them. These objectives are the motor behind the analysis outlined in the next chapter. In other words, each individual hypothesis that I formulate is linked to an objective that is, in turn, related to a set of procedures, set out in the methodology section, designed to prove or disprove the original hypothesis. There are seven main hypotheses. Two of these, hypotheses four and five, have been divided into three and two separate hypotheses respectively due to the fact said hypotheses are intimately related and can be proved, or otherwise, through the same methods of analysis.

VII.2. *Hypotheses*

- **Hypothesis 1:** the relative frequency and typology of re-entry items would be similar for all the editorials, irrespective of the newspaper they belong to.
- **Hypothesis 2:** patterns of cohesion are linked in some way to the information structure of the editorial. This would mean, for example, that if an editorial is introduced by a text-initial “topic sentence”, the lexical weight of re-entry items would be

patterned in a similar way in all editorials with this kind of structure. This might seem to contradict my first hypothesis that the patterns of re-entry items will be similar in all editorials. However, I believe that notwithstanding the similarities, there will be different types of editorial with regard to organization and goals and this will be manifested in the re-entry patterns.

- **Hypothesis 3:** certain re-entry devices are more common in some types of editorials rather than in others. This hypothesis differs from the last in that I refer to the possible influence of subject matter, or any other factor that may arise, on the choice of re-entry item.

[2]

- **Hypothesis 4:** I have three main hypotheses with regards to metadiscursive nouns, which I will label 4a, 4b and 4c. The first (4a) was suggested by Francis (1986) namely, that metadiscursive A-nouns are characteristic of editorials. Hypotheses 4b and 4c have been suggested by my own work in this field. Hypothesis two suggests to me that “the” and “this” are the most common kind of determiner preceding A-nouns. Hypothesis three leads me to see a relationship between demonstrative pronoun reference and A-noun reference, both in function and in similarity of the determiners/pronouns used.
- **Hypothesis 5:** with regards to the length of text and re-entry items I have two hypotheses: (5a) that the greater the length of a text, the greater the number of pronouns, and (5b) that differences in paragraph length will be manifested in the type

and/or number of re-entry devices used. The first of these hypotheses is based on the fact that as editorials normally have one main topic, there should be more continuity of reference re-entry items, that is, pronouns. The second stems from the belief that, in contrast, short paragraphs would seem to suggest that focus is continually changing from one entity to another. In either case, length would be of importance with regards to re-entry patterns.

- **Hypothesis 6:** that pronoun boundary-jumping may occur but that this is uncommon in the editorial genre and should only occur when short paragraphs are common. This hypothesis has arisen due to the fact that tabloids in general contain shorter paragraphs and that a wealth of short paragraphs may have more to do with making reading easier than a wish to make the paragraph a way of dividing an editorial into sub-topics.
- **Hypothesis 7:** that there will be a certain correlation between the type of syntagmatic associations found and the subject matter of each editorial. I believe that certain types of syntagmatic association, i.e., noun phrases made up of noun plus noun, joined through a genitive relationship, should be more common when political parties are the main protagonists. I would expect more of this kind of syntagmatic association as it is a convenient way to introduce new information linked to a previously mentioned entity.

VII.3. Objectives

To prove the above hypotheses I have set myself a series of objectives that I will set out in the following section. Each of the objectives below is connected numerically to one of the hypotheses numbered one to eight.

- **Objective 1:** to discover the frequency and typology of re-entry devices in editorials by identifying them and looking at their lexical density and by doing so to prove or disprove my first hypothesis that all broadsheet editorials will share characteristics relative to the frequency and typology of re-entry items.

- **Objective 2:** to discover whether my second hypothesis is correct, namely that patterns of cohesion are the surface manifestations of the information structure in the editorials, and more specifically that early or late DT entry affects said patterns. To do so requires the identification of the DT of an editorial to find "what they are about" and to discover if there is a proposition that could be described as the topic sentence and its position in the editorial. Through my analysis I will also discover whether explicit topic sentences are the norm in this genre and what position they occupy.

- **Objective 3:** to attempt to find whether the choice of re-entry devices depends on subject matter or other factors not relating to information structures. This means looking at those editorials

which have an above-average number of a particular re-entry device and looking at possible reasons why this may be the case.

- **Objective 4:** to determine whether metadiscursive A-nouns are characteristic of editorials and the type of determiners that precede them, and if there is a relationship between A-nouns and demonstrative pronoun reference. This task will be carried out using the strategies explained in the section on my first objective.
- **Objective 5:** to discover if the length of text and the length of paragraph have any influence on the type of re-entry item used.
- **Objective 6:** to prove or disprove that Givon's statement that pronouns rarely cross paragraph boundaries is correct with regards to editorials.
- **Objective 7:** to determine whether there is a relationship between patterns in the type of syntagmatic association introduced with re-entry items and the subject matter of the editorial.

VII.2. Concluding remarks

In the methodology chapter that follows I will give details as to how I intend to test the hypotheses that I have linked to the specific objectives enumerated above.

VIII RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

VIII.1. Preamble

This chapter will be made up of two major sections. The first section is comprised of the way the corpus was collected, and the second is made up of an explanation of the procedure followed in the design of the analysis to be carried out on the corpus and how the analysis was to be effectuated.

VIII.2. Selection of the Corpus

The first decision made with regards to the selection of the corpus was what editorial texts were to be analyzed and how many. There are two main types of newspapers in England, the broadsheets and the tabloids. Each has a different readership and they are vastly different with regards to many linguistic and non-linguistic parameters, as I pointed out in the chapter on genre in this dissertation. Therefore, broadsheets belong to an easily identifiable group of newspapers whose very physical appearance and familiarity with the public makes them stand out from the tabloids. Thus the broadsheets make up an homogenous group from the point of view of audience, physical appearance, and the type of texts that they

contain. I therefore chose broadsheets as the object of this study due to their homogeneity, which points to them belonging to a distinct genre, or sub-genre.

Several researchers (e.g. Crystal and Davy 1969; Wallace 1977, Pennock 1994) have compared broadsheets with tabloids despite the differences between them. However, I feel that this is feasible with newspaper reports but is very difficult in the case of the editorials as the differences between broadsheets and tabloids in this respect are enormous and do not provide the minimum homogeneity for analysis to be carried out, that is, the analysis of re-entry items which I have in mind in this dissertation.

The next decision was what broadsheets to include in my corpus. I chose British broadsheets as I am more familiar with them and they were more readily available. Jucker (1992: 2) states that using only British papers also guarantees more homogeneity:

The limitation of my corpus to British national dailies is intended to ensure a maximum of coherence within the corpus, and it should guarantee comparability of different texts within the corpus.

The next step involved resolving whether to include the weekend editions of the broadsheet newspapers or not. My decision not to make the weekend editions part of my corpus was influenced by the fact that the weekend papers are recognized as being different from the daily papers and including both in my corpus would have meant having a more heterogeneous group of texts. My choice was also motivated by the fact

that the material featured in the weekend papers may often be of a more light-hearted nature, which might influence their linguistic make-up.

Once the decision to use only daily broadsheets was made, I had to consider which of these editorials to collect. In order to gather as homogeneous a group of texts as possible I had already decided to select editorials from one week of the year. Such a corpus would be homogeneous in chronological terms and would ensure that the newspapers chosen would be selected on a totally arbitrary basis as I had no control over the editorials that would appear. Picking individual editorials over a longer period of time might mean being able to choose the editorials that suit my purposes and could jeopardize the impartiality of my choice. As I wanted to study re-entry items in broadsheets and not broadsheets which featured a particular subject matter, the more random the selection was, the better it suited my objectives. All the editorials are from the week starting Monday the 3rd of February, 1997 to Friday the 7th. That the corpus is made up of editorials from this week is simply due to the fact that it coincides with a visit I made to Britain.

My next task was to decide on how many editorials to analyze. As the analysis I had envisaged required a very laborious analysis of the editorials I did not wish to include all the broadsheet editorials that week. Basing my choice on Bolívar (1994), who points out that the first two editorials in broadsheet newspapers normally deal with the most important issues of the day and are more complex (Bolívar 1994:156), I

selected only these from *The Times*, *The Guardian*, and *The Telegraph* for my main analyses.

This procedure could not be carried out with *The Independent*. as the three newspapers above normally carry three editorials while *The Independent* features only main editorial per day followed by a very short, and usually humorous passage. However, the main editorials in the *Independent* are, on average, a third longer than those of the other newspapers, thus I chose all five editorials from this newspaper for that week, which came to a total of 4701 words. Using this number as the basis for choice of editorials from the other newspapers I chose eight editorials from each of the other three. This meant discarding the third editorial from *The Times*, *The Guardian*, and *The Telegraph* and the editorials from one day of the chosen week. The editorials from *The Times* and *The Telegraph* are from the 3rd to the 6th of February while those from *The Guardian* are from the 4th to the 7th. The reason for this is to make the number of words from each broadsheet as similar as possible.

The total number of words contained in the editorials was the following: *Times*: 4665; *Telegraph*: 3876; *Guardian*: 4528 and the number of editorials amounted to twenty-nine. All the editorials from the week beginning the third of February were analysed in the study on pronoun paragraph jumping as this required a less laborious type of analysis.

Tables (V1 to V4) include lists of all the editorials collected and the dates on which they appeared. The editorials used in the main analysis are underlined.

VIII.2.1. Computers and the analysis of the corpus

Many useful and fascinating analyses are carried out using computers and concordancer programmes. The type of research carried out using computers may, therefore, include many hundreds or thousands of texts and over a million words. However, computers have their limitations. The reason computers could not be used for the search for stylistically relevant features that I wished to perform is due to the fact that there is, as yet, no parsing system which can be trained to discover the relationship between, for example “the iron chancellor” and “Gordon Brown”, as this includes encyclopaedic knowledge that no commercially available concordancer is able to cope with.

Table V 1

Times	# words	Date
Stand by the rock	566	Monday, February 3
Constitutional Clash	550	Monday, February 3
Mystic Mug	505	Monday, February 3
The Cook Currency	640	Tuesday, February 4
Milosevic & Friends	580	Tuesday, February 4
Foul Play	487	Tuesday, February 4
Labour's Inspector	605	Wednesday, February 5
Pakistan's Opportunity	584	Wednesday, February 5
The Swiss War	479	Wednesday, February 5
Going, Going	573	Thursday, February 6
Irreversible Opt-In	567	Thursday, February 6
The Two Clintons	539	Thursday, February 6
A sage speaks on Nato	588	Friday, February 7
Callaghan And Cripps	584	Friday, February 7
Art And Craft	532	Friday, February 7

Table V 2

Guardian	# words	Date
Unfinished business	822	Monday, February 3
It's strictly personal	299	Monday, February 3
Kids alone: who minds?	619	Tuesday, February 4
Edging towards the Euro	513	Tuesday, February 4
Paying the bill for culture	330	Tuesday, February 4
Nawaz Sharif's landslide	622	Wednesday, February 5
High minded in high places	516	Wednesday, February 5
London wins all	323	Wednesday, February 5
A new spin on pay policy	628	Thursday, February 6
The double sword of justice	522	Thursday, February 6
When a flutter becomes a habit	346	Thursday, February 6
The role of a university	610	Friday, February 7
Guessing Milosevic's next move	498	Friday, February 7
Sotheby's under the hammer	322	Friday, February 7

Table V 3

Independent	# words	Date
Uniforms, yes:	910	Monday, February 3
A plug for the sea breeze	99	Monday, February 3
Cook finds the right recipe for Europe	953	Tuesday, February 4
A game of two bureaucracies	115	Tuesday, February 4
Mental illness needs a broader treatment	955	Wednesday, February 5
Are we a nation of fibbers?	147	Wednesday, February 5
Receiving you muffled and unclear, Mr	966	Thursday, February 6
Offshore and unwelcome	104	Thursday, February 6
Give the new pressure parties a good airing	917	Friday, February 7
Mad Dogs and teenage drinkers	105	Friday, February 7

Table V 4

Telegraph	# words	Date
Backing our boys	513	Monday, February 3
Poison we must live with	437	Monday, February 3
Pet hate	212	Monday, February 3
Fight the battle of ideas	519	Tuesday, February 4
Pakistan fails to vote	486	Tuesday, February 4
A Tory Messenger?	319	Tuesday, February 4
Have the debate	572	Wednesday, February 5
Milosevic at Bay	401	Wednesday, February 5
Woodhead and bad heads	390	Wednesday, February 5
Labour aims at the top	515	Thursday, February 6
Lords on target	433	Thursday, February 6
The liabilities of OJ Simpson	421	Thursday, February 6
A single menace	530	Friday, February 7
Privatise the Tube	505	Friday, February 7
More Pamelas, please	318	Friday, February 7

The limitations of computer programmes are outlined by Jucker (1992). Reid (1992) who carried out a computer analysis on the use of four cohesion devices details the problems he faced when attempting to study

cohesive relations in a text. One of these was the use of subordinate conjunction openers, that is those conjunctions that appear at the beginning of a sentence as these always follow a full stop and a space, something a computer can understand. His analysis was limited to this type of subordinate conjunctions because as he points out: "inner sentence subordinate conjunctions occur as several parts of speech; as a consequence they cannot be identified accurately by the WWB" (Reid 1992: 82).

This problem is small compared to some of the decisions that have to be made with regard to what constitute re-entry items and what constitute antecedents in a complex editorial text.

Taking these disadvantages into account, I feel that the thorough analysis of twenty-nine editorials is a large enough sample to provide reliable data on the re-entry items of this type of sub-genre.

VIII.3. Methodology of Analysis

Once the corpus had been chosen, each of the twenty-nine editorials was analyzed to discover whether a clear DT could be identified, as I stated in objective two of this dissertation. The DTs were identified by isolating the proposition, or propositions, which encapsulate(s) most clearly the macro-structure of the editorial. As there is no formal way of doing this, i.e. no algorithm capable of carrying out such a complex analysis, I had to use my intuition as an informed reader.

After the identification of the discourse topics the twenty-nine texts were parsed in order to identify the noun phrases including deverbal noun-phrases and pronouns in each text. This was done in order to come to conclusions about objective one, three, and four, that is, to discover the typology of re-entry items to be found in editorials, the most common ones that appeared, possible stylistic reasons for using one type instead of another, and whether length of text affects the choice of re-entry items.

Parsing was also a necessary preliminary analysis in order to find out whether my hypotheses related to objective five was true, that is, what the default determiners are for A-nouns and whether metadiscursive nouns are characteristic of editorials. The method I have used to discover the answer to objective six, also necessitated the parsing of the editorials as described above. The identification of pronoun re-entry items was carried out to discover whether Givon's hypothesis, the purpose of objective seven, that pronouns rarely cross paragraph boundaries, was true.

Finally, while identifying re-entry items I simultaneously identified the syntagmatic associations that accompany them. What follows is the way parsing was carried out. In a later section of this chapter I will describe other processes used to obtain results with regards to objectives five to eight.

The first stage of parsing was carried out as described below to discover both re-entry devices and the elements connected to them through syntagmatic association :

INDEPENDENT

Cook finds the right recipe for Europe

(P1L1) Probably we will stay out in the first wave; probably we will enter by 2002. (P1L2) That is how Robin Cook would like us to read his latest comments on British entry to a single currency. (P1L3) It sounds like a cautious compromise. (P1L4) It is. (P1L5) But don't knock it.

As we can be observe in the excerpt from the analysis above, I identified all the noun-phrases and pronouns in the text. This preliminary analysis was carried out so that the noun-phrases which were acting as re-entry devices could be determined. During the second stage each of the noun-phrases was then pasted onto a table like table V5. The headlines or the sub-headlines in the texts were not counted as re-entry ties. In the case of the headline this is obvious as it can have no endophoric antecedent.

However, with regards to the sub-heading, I took the decision that even if they had an antecedent in the preceding headline I would not count it, as I consider headline and sub-heading as part of a unit and that the reader percieves it as such. Moreover, I believe that both headline and subheading, always in this order, are perceived almost simultaneaously when the reader is searching for an article, or other type of text, to read.

Therefore, the headline and sub-heading were used purely as antecedents. This view is also the one held by Bell (1991: 187):

Unlike the lead, the headline is a stand-alone unit. It simply abstracts the story, it does not have to begin it. While the lead may carry new information which does not recur in the story proper, the headline is entirely derivable from the story.

For this reason the headline and the sub-heading are not including in the body of the table. The first column of table V5 is the line and paragraph number, followed by the second column which includes the re-entry device. In this space the pronoun or noun-phrase is noted down to see whether it is a re-entry item or not. The third column is the line and paragraph number of the antecedent to the potential re-entry item. The fourth column includes the possible antecedent for the potential tie. Notice, for example, that the first re-entry item in this particular text is “we”, found in line one of paragraph one, and it refers back to “we” in the same line and paragraph. The fifth and final column is the type of re-entry item. In the case of the tie we have just mentioned P1 refers to pronoun reference.

Using this columnar method it is quite easy to see the tie, the antecedent it refers back to and the type of relationship between the antecedent and the tie. There are times when it is difficult to say what the nature of the anaphoric antecedent is. When this happens, the concept of anaphoric hierarchy is useful.

If an expression contains two types of re-entry device, only the one higher up in the hierarchy will be counted. For example, “his article” is a text equivalent of “Mr Blair’s article” and at the same time “his” refers back to “Mr Blair”. Only the tie between “his article” and the antecedent “article”

Table V 5

Cook finds the right recipe for Europe				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	we			ER
P1 L1	the first wave			∅
P1 L1	we	P1 L1	we	P1
P1 L2	his latest comments on British entry to a single currency	P1 L2	Robin Cook	P2
P1 L2	his latest comments on <u>British entry to</u> a single currency			SA
P1 L2	his latest comments on British entry to <u>a single</u> <u>currency</u>			SA

is taken into consideration. Another example is “our forces” which could be triggered because it homophorically refers to Britain but it is also a text equivalent of “British Armed Forces”.

The process of finding antecedents is effectuated for each pronoun or noun phrase in the whole text. This way it is possible to see how many re-

entry items there are and what kind of ties they constitute. The complete tables can be found in the second appendix of this dissertation.

Difficulties can be encountered when parsing the text as it is sometimes difficult to ascertain whether certain long noun-phrases were to be treated as one unit or could be divided up into several noun-phrases. In the example above, "his latest comments on British entry to a single currency", both "British entry" and "a single currency" are dependent on the noun-phrase "his latest comments". I therefore treat this as a unit. This is important as it can change the analysis of the text as well as alter the number of "ties" that are found.

The subordinate noun phrases associated with re-entry items were analyzed as SAs, that is, cases of "syntagmatic association". In table V5 above we can see that "on British entry" is associated syntagmatically with "his latest comments". Although SAs are not re-entry items they are introduced by them and provide new information.

The ties I have chosen can be divided into several groups, which were described in the last chapter. The first main group is made up of pronouns. These are relatively straightforward and no further explanation is necessary as to what they are. The second group is made up of re-entry items which are not preceded by determiners. The next group is made up of re-entry items preceded by determiners. These three main groups are followed by substitution and ellipsis.

The next set of re-entry items, pronoun determiners, have been separated from pronouns proper as they include meanings of distance and proximity. This is also the case of a diverse family of re-entry items which I call pro-forms. Finally, I include the comparatives. Each type of re-entry item has been given an abbreviated form, or code, so as to save space in the analysis of the texts.

VIII.3.1. Elements accompanying re-entry devices

Another task I have set myself is to look at the way new information is introduced by re-entry items. Although the main function of re-entry items is to maintain an entity in focus, it is also true that they must inevitably add new information. It is my hypothesis that the way new information is introduced in this way will be dictated to a certain extent by the type of editorial it is found in.

To determine whether this is true I have classified the elements that accompany re-entry devices into three main types: SA, SAG and SAW. SA stands for syntagmatic association, that is, the part of the noun phrase that accompanies the re-entry device, either preceding or following it. SAG is a more specific type of syntagmatic association which refers to those elements that are connected by the genitive, such as "position" in table V6:

Here we see that the re-entry device “Mr Cook” that is linked to "Robin Cook", an example of lexical repetition, introduces the new information, i.e.,

Table V 7

P3 L8	a <u>Labour</u> government	P2 L6	Labour	L1a
P3 L8	<u>Labour government</u>			SAW

the word "position".

The final kind of syntagmatic association that I have identified is the SAW, that is, a re-entry device followed by an entity that is tied through a relationship obtained by virtue of word-order:

In this example we can see how the new information is entered through

Table V 6

P11 L47	<u>Mr Cook's</u> position	P8 L32	Robin Cook	L1a
P11 L47	Mr Cook's <u>position</u>			SAG

its relation with the re-entry device "Labour", which, like “Mr Cook” is also a case of lexical repetition.

VIII.3.2. Discovering the relative weight of re-entry items and syntagmatic association

Once each re-entry device is identified and recorded on the tables, the procedure I use to find the relative weight of each is to count the number of each type. These figures are then included on a Microsoft Excel spreadsheet. The number of each particular item is then divided by the total number of words in each text and then multiplied by one hundred. In this way the lexical density for each item is obtained. Each re-entry item is counted as one even if it includes more than one word. For instance, "New Labour", which is made up of two words is counted as one re-entry item for the antecedent "Labour" as it constitutes a unit.

Therefore the real lexical density of a particular re-entry item, with regard to the total number of words per text, is actually greater than shown in the tables but this is of no importance in my analysis as I am interested in comparing the lexical density of each type of re-entry item to see which are the most common and not the actual lexical density of the re-entry items with regards to the total number of words. The comparison I wish to make is between re-entry devices and not between re-entry devices and the other elements that make up a text. Looking at the lexical density of each item is merely a useful guide to their use. For instance, five cases of P1s in a text of 800 words is not the same as the same number of P1s in a text of 400 words.

By finding the lexical density of each item, I wish to prove that certain types of re-entry items are more important than others. As I said in the introduction, a greater number of a particular re-entry item in one or all texts is stylistically significant. Winter (1969:3) sums this up succinctly in the following paragraph:

A style may be said to be characterized by a pattern of recurrent selections from the inventory of optional features of a language. Various types of selection can be found: complete exclusion of an optional element, obligatory inclusion of a feature optional elsewhere, varying degrees of inclusion of a specific variant without complete elimination of competing features.

After this process, the average weight of each re-entry type is ascertained for all twenty-nine texts. The average is then subtracted from each individual text to find how far each broadsheet deviated from the mean with regard to a particular re-entry item. For example, if the average lexical density of P1 for the twenty-nine editorials is 1,62349 and the lexical density of P1 is 1,59235669 for the editorial "A New Spin on Pay", the deviation is -0,2068966.

Table (V8) is an excerpt from the analysis carried out in the Excel 5 spreadsheet to come to conclusions with regards to hypotheses one, three and four, which are all related to the number and typology of re-entry items. Once all the occurrences of each re-entry device are entered into the table, the lexical density of each item can then be compared on the chart to see which are the most common. The same procedure as described above for all the re-entry items is carried out with the A-nouns.

Table V 8

	1 Guard	
	A Spin on Pay Policy	
Total	628	
Paragraphs	4	
Word/Para	157	
Sentence	22	
Word/Sent	28,5454545	
P1	10	1,59235669
	-0,2068966	-0,0311334
P2	6	0,95541401
	-1,4827586	-0,2729838
P4	3	0,47770701
	2,68965517	0,43518869
L1a	19	3,02547771
	4,5862069	0,64426264
L1b	0	0

With regards to A-nouns, each text is also analyzed to see which A-nouns are metadiscursive (MDNF) and which are non-metadiscursive (NMDNF). It is then relatively simple to find out which type was more common. Information was gathered on the editorials belonging to each newspaper and then the results from each were compared (table V9). At the same time as this analysis is performed the numbers of each type of determiner is also calculated for each type of A-noun, that is, meta- and non-metadiscursive.

The same type of analysis was carried out using the Excel 5 spreadsheet to see the relative weight of SAs, SAGs and SAWs. Table (V10) is an excerpt from the analysis.

In this chart we can see the number of SAGs and SAWs for four of the editorials. In this way, it is possible to determine which of these syntagmatic associations with re-entry items was the commonest. This can then be contrasted with other factors in each text to see if the occurrence

Table V 9

A Spin on Pay Policy (Guardian)					
MDNF the	1	0,15923567	NMDNF the	6	0,95541401
(+/- Average)		-1,6860024	(+/- Average)		0,22193904
MDNF this	1	0,15923567	NMDNF this	1	0,15923567
(+/- Average)		0,11368129	(+/- Average)		0,0094669
MDNF that	0	0	NMDNF that	1	0,15923567
(+/- Average)		-0,0293714	(+/- Average)		0,09685429
MDNF these	0	0	NMDNF these	0	0
(+/- Average)		-0,0066957	(+/- Average)		-0,0520239
MDNF those	0	0	NMDNF those	0	0
(+/- Average)		-0,0062696	(+/- Average)		-0,0132787
MDNF a/an	0	0	NMDNF a/an	1	0,15923567
(+/- Average)		-0,0060924	(+/- Average)		-0,0248755
MDNF such	1	0,15923567	NMDNF such	1	0,15923567
(+/- Average)		0,12281625	(+/- Average)		0,05912475
MDNF others	0	0	NMDNF others		0
(+/- Average)	0	-0,0259569	(+/- Average)		-0,1974225

of SAGs and SAWs is stylistically relevant and why.

VIII.4. Concluding remarks

Table V 10

	Pay	Boys	Clash	Cook
SA/L1a/SAG	3		1	
SA/DNF1a/SAG				
DNF1a/SAG				
DNF2a/SAG				
L2a/SAG				
L1a/SAG	1	2	1	3
L3/SAG			1	0
OTHERS				1
TOTAL	4	2	3	4
Total words	628	513	550	953
Lexical Density	0,64	0,39	0,55	0,42
(+/-) Average	0,32	0,07	0,23	0,1
DNF1a/SAW				
L1a/SAW	2	3	2	3
L2a/SAW	1	2		
SA/L1a/SAW				1
OTHERS				
TOTAL	3	5	2	4
Total words	628	513	550	953
Lexical Density	0,48	0,97	0,36	0,42
(+/-) Average	0,13	0,63	0,01	0,07

The methodology in this chapter was designed to prove, or otherwise, the hypotheses in chapter VII and to carry out the objectives which derived from these. In the next chapter we will see the results of the analysis of the editorials.

IX ANALYSIS OF THE DATA

IX.1. Preamble

This section comprises the results both from the close reading of the editorials in the corpus and the Excel 5 spreadsheet. I will discuss the results in the same order as the hypotheses and research objectives that I set out in chapter VII.

IX.2. Types of re-entry items

One of the main reasons for writing this dissertation, as I mentioned in the introduction, and in setting out my first hypothesis and the objective which is derived from it, is to discover what re-entry devices are used in broadsheet editorials and which are the most common. This is connected to my belief that the study of genre is the study of group style and that there are characteristics on all levels, re-entry included, that are common to each genre or sub-genre.

In order to carry out my objective I have analysed one week's editorials from the four main English broadsheet newspapers that make up my corpus. Table IX1 contains the findings of my analysis. The most numerous

re-entry items are found at the beginning of the table and the least

Table IX 1

Guardian			Telegraph			Times			Independent		
Type	LD	%	Type	LD	%	Type	LD	%	Type	LD	%
L1a	2,44	22,8	L1a	1,93	17,2	L1a	3,29	25,9	P1	1,89	19,9
DNF2a	1,58	14,8	DNF2a	1,9	16,9	DNF2a	1,57	12,4	L1a	1,6	16,9
P1	1,5	14	P1	1,64	14,6	P1	1,56	12,3	P2	1,15	12,1
E1	1,15	10,8	P2	1,4	12,4	E1	1,4	11	DNF2a	1,02	10,8
DNF1a	1,02	9,56	E1	0,95	8,42	P2	1,35	10,6	DNF1a	0,92	9,74
P2	0,99	9,26	DNF1a	0,82	7,27	DNF1a	1,07	8,44	E1	0,87	9,18
L2a	0,64	6,03	L3	0,81	7,22	L2a	0,83	6,54	L3	0,7	7,38
L3	0,6	5,61	L2a	0,76	6,74	L3	0,68	5,37	DPR	0,47	4,96
DPR	0,3	2,76	DPR	0,47	4,21	DPR	0,26	2,01	L2a	0,27	2,9
C1	0,09	0,83	C1	0,13	1,16	PRO	0,14	1,13	L5a	0,17	1,78
P4	0,08	0,75	DNF2c	0,08	0,72	DNF2c	0,13	1	P4	0,08	0,88
L1b	0,06	0,61	DNF3a	0,08	0,69	L5a	0,1	0,82	DNF2c	0,06	0,68
PRO	0,06	0,61	PRO	0,07	0,66	S1	0,08	0,67	S1	0,06	0,67
DNF2c	0,06	0,57	S2	0,06	0,51	DNF3a	0,07	0,53	C1	0,06	0,67
L5a	0,05	0,45	L1b	0,05	0,47	L1b	0,06	0,49	PRO	0,04	0,45
S1	0,05	0,45	L5a	0,05	0,43	DNF5a	0,02	0,18	DNF5a	0,04	0,44
S2	0,02	0,19	DNF1c	0,03	0,26	S2	0,02	0,17	DNF1c	0,02	0,23
DNF1c	0	0	DNF5a	0,02	0,22	C1	0,02	0,17	DNF3a	0,02	0,23
DNF3a	0	0	P4	0,02	0,19	P4	0	0	C2	0,02	0,23
DNF5a	0	0	C2	0	0	DNF1c	0	0	L1b	0,02	0,22
C2	0	0	S1	0	0	C2	0	0	S2	0	0

numerous at the end.

The items L1a, L2a, DNF1a, L3, DNF2a, P1, P2, E1, DPR together make up just over 93% of all re-entry devices. We can say, therefore, that the rest of the items are of much less importance as they only account for a little under seven percent of all the re-entry items.

The findings in table IX1 seem to indicate that there is a remarkable degree of similarity between the broadsheet editorials. Such results seem

to point to the conclusion that the type and number of re-entry items are a

Table IX 2

TYPE	%
L1a	20,75
P1	15,2
DNF2a	13,77
P2	11,1
E1	9,9
DNF1a	8,76
L3	6,39
L2a	5,55
DPR	3,5

characteristic of genre. Table IX2 shows the averages of the most common re-entry items.

From table IX2 we can see that the most common re-entry devices are lexical repetition followed by text equivalents preceded by determiners and pronoun re-entry. At the other end of the scale we can see that substitution and comparative reference is scarce in this type of text, confirming what Halliday & Hasan (1976) claim, i.e. that substitution is not common in formal written texts. No such claims were made for comparative reference but we can see that they are among the least numerous devices. Pro-forms are also quite scarce as is sentential "it". Most of the pro-forms are personal and demonstrative pronouns.

What is also evident is that most lexical repetition and determiner noun-phrases are of type "a", that is, they are text equivalents and not inclusive and exclusive relations which are type "b" and "c". It is also evident that synonymy (L5 and DNF5), that is, dictionary type synonymy is not at all

common (text equivalence, e.g. L2a & DNF2a, is found much more often). All together, dictionary synonymy and the devices in the preceding paragraph make up less than 7% of the total number of re-entry devices.

IX.2.1. Differences between broadsheets

The Independent is the only newspaper with a larger number of pronouns than L1a, this may be due to the length of the texts, which require this, the least unobtrusive re-entry item. In fact, if we look at the pronouns, in general terms they increase with the average length of text, except in the case of *The Telegraph*. This apparent contradiction, *The Telegraph* has the shortest average text-length, may be due to other factors, such as number of participants in the text, and the fact that it is the broadsheet which is most like a tabloid, with regards to the treatment of the news.

IX.3. Re-entry Patterns and Information Structure

To discover whether the way information is structured in the editorials in my corpus affects the patterns of re-entry, which constitutes part of my second objective, it is necessary to identify the DT. This was carried out through a close reading of each editorial. In most of the texts the DT was identified without undue difficulty. This task was facilitated when the topic was clearly stated in the headlines.



In both *The Guardian* and *The Times* DTs are relatively obvious as they are synonymous with the proposition contained in the headline. In fact in these two newspapers the headline is always followed by a sub-heading. The headlines in *The Telegraph* are rather more cryptic as are those in *The Independent* and thus cannot be easily identified with a possible DT unless through inference. In *The Guardian* most of the editorials are "rounded off" by a recap of the main topic. This rhetorical pattern is not followed by the other newspapers.

It could be argued that if the DT is contained in the headline, then the DT is text initial. However, in my opinion, the headline is part of the editorial but in a certain sense is set apart from the main body (see Bell 1991 in chapter V). The role of the headline may be seen as that of a signal designed to catch the reader's attention. This would explain why the DT may be found in the headline and then again in the first paragraph. If the headline were acting as a DT and could also be found in the text, this would constitute a case of tautology. Therefore the presence of the DT in the headline or sub-heading did not preclude the appearance of the DT in the rest of the text.

What becomes evident, in any case, is that the DT is not necessarily to be found at the beginning of the texts proper, although in some cases it can be identified with the headline. In this aspect editorials differ considerably from newspaper reports:

Unlike argumentatively structured discourse, such as scholarly papers, where the important conclusion comes at the end, and unlike weekly news articles, which may express an opinion at the end, news in the daily press is organized by the principle of relevance or importance, along a dimension of decreasing prominence with respect to the macrostructure. This means that one can read only the headlines or the lead, or only some part of the discourse, and still process the most important information.

(van Dijk 1983: 34-5)

According to van Dijk, text-initial DTs are characteristic of newspaper reports but from the analysis of my corpus, this is not true of editorials. Of the twenty-nine editorials, seventeen either have late, medial, or diffuse DTs. What is more, there are few, if any, cases of a clear topic sentence which encapsulates the DT.

I believe that the setting out of the topic early on is not so important in editorials as the topic is already familiar through the news report which has already, it is assumed, been read by the reader. Therefore the reader may be conversant with the topic and already interested enough in it to want to read the newspaper's opinion about it. The editorial may be akin to the weekly news articles that van Dijk mentions in the extract above. The fact that editorials are not obliged to present a text-initial discourse topic could account for both the diffuseness of some of the editorials DTs and their late occurrence. In other words, the make-up and position of a DT is an element in this genre.

The first discovery that can be made from the interpretation of the Excel tables is that the editorials which are basically descriptive, i.e., those on national or international politics, usually have a clear protagonist and early DT entry. The more essay-like editorials, which approach a problem outside the area of everyday politics all have medial (one case), or late DT entry and no main protagonist. This seems to be a rhetorical device that constitutes the norm for editorials of this nature.

The articles which I consider to belong to the essay-like group are the following: "Going, Going", "High Minded in High Places", "Kids Alone: Who Minds?", "The Double Sword of Justice", "The Role of a University", "Mental illness needs a broader treatment", "Uniforms, Yes", "Give the New Pressure Parties a Good Airing" and "Poison we Must Live with". Therefore, it would seem that subject matter may be the major factor which affects the position of the DT. Other factors, such as the rhetorical pattern the writer wishes to imbue the editorial with may also affect DT.

IX.3.1. Differences between broadsheets

With regards to differences between the newspapers, *The Guardian* and *The Times* are the most regular when we look at the connection between the position of the DT and the appearance, or not, of an explicit protagonist. The co-occurrence of early DT and explicit protagonist and late DT and diffuse protagonist pair up neatly in these two newspapers. In *The Guardian* and *The Times* all the editorials have one of either of these

patterns, except in the case of “Pakistan’s opportunity”, which has late DT and a clear protagonist. Moreover, in the case of *The Guardian*, all the editorials of a more essay-like quality share the same characteristics, namely late DT and non-explicit protagonist. There seems, therefore, to be a clear rhetorical pattern appearing.

With regards to *The Independent* and *The Telegraph*, the situation is much more complicated with early, medial and final DTs occurring alongside explicit or non-explicit protagonists. This may have to do with the cryptic headlines that can be found in these two broadsheets and may ultimately be linked to the writing styles of the authors of the editorials.

IX.3.2. DTs and re-entry devices

Once the DT of each editorial is identified and it is clear whether there is a protagonist or not in each text, the next stage of objective two, that is, to discover whether the structure of the editorial has any influence on the lexical density of re-entry items is performed. To do this I look at the total lexical density of all the re-entry devices in each text.

My hypothesis is that the clearer the protagonist and the earlier a topic is entered, the greater the lexical density of re-entry items will be. To determine whether this was true, I look at at what stage the topic is introduced and whether there is a main protagonist in the editorials. This information is then compared to the presence of re-entry devices.

In the following tables, IX3 to IX7, the (√) symbol means that there is an above-average amount of re-entry device and (-) signals a relative lack of these devices.

From the analysis carried out I found that there is, in most cases, a correlation between early DT entry coupled with the existence of a main protagonist and an above average use of re-entry. If we look at table IX7 we can see that where there is early DT and a clear protagonist, an above-

Table IX 3

Times Editorials	DT	Protagonist	Re-entry
Constitutional Clash	Late	No	-
Going, Going	Late	No	-
Irreversible Opt-In	Late	No	-
Labour's Inspector	Early	Yes	+
Milosevic & Friends	Early	Yes	+
Pakistan's Opportunity	Late	Yes	+
Stand by the rock	Early	Yes	+
The Cook Currency	Late	Yes	+

Table IX 4

Guardian Editorials	DT	Protagonist	Re-entry
A new spin on pay policy	Early	Yes	+
Edging towards the Euro	Early	Yes	+
Guessing Milosevic's next move	Medial	Yes	+
High minded in high places	Late	No	∅
Kids alone: who minds?	Diffuse	No	-
Nawaz Sharif's landslide	Early	Yes	+
The double sword of justice	Late	No	-
The role of a university	Late	No	-

Table IX 5

Independent Editorials	DT	Protagonist	Re-entry
Cook finds the right recipe for Europe	Early	Yes	+
Give the new pressure parties a good airing	Medial	No	-

Mental illness needs a broader treatment	Mid-final	No	-
Receiving you muffled and unclear, Mr	Late	Yes	-
Uniforms, yes:	Late	Yes	+

Table IX 6

Telegraph Editorials	DT	Protagonist	Re-entry
Backing our boys	Early	Yes	+
Fight the battle of ideas	Late	Two	-
Have the debate	Diffuse	Several	+
Labour aims at the top	Early	Yes	Ø
Lords on target	Early	No	Ø
Milosevic at Bay	Diffuse	Yes	-
Pakistan fails to vote	Medial	No	-
Poison we must live with	Late	No	-

Table IX 7

Editorials	DT	Protagonist	Continuity
Labour's Inspector	Early	Yes	+
Milosevic & Friends	Early	Yes	+
Stand by the rock	Early	Yes	+
A new spin on pay policy	Early	Yes	+
Edging towards the Euro	Early	Yes	+
Nawaz Sharif's landslide	Early	Yes	+
Cook finds the right recipe for Europe	Early	Yes	+

average presence of re-entry can be detected.

Apparently there exists a clear link between early DT and the appearance of a clear protagonist where there are high levels of re-entry (see table IX9). It seems, nevertheless, that the characteristic which is most likely to trigger a high amount of re-entry is an explicit protagonist. Of fifteen cases where an explicit protagonist appears, twelve are accompanied by high lexical density of re-entry items. Of the three which have below-average continuity, two of these cases may be explained by the later occurrence of the DT, leaving only one case, "Labour Aims at Top"

with early DT and explicit protagonist with low continuity. On the other hand, of twelve cases of where there seems to be no clear protagonist, only one has an above-average number of continuity devices: "Irreversible Opt-In".

Table IX 8

Editorials	DT	Protagonist	Continuity
Labour's Inspector	Early	Yes	+
Milosevic & Friends	Early	Yes	+
Pakistan's Opportunity	Late	Yes	+
Stand by the rock	Early	Yes	+
The Cook Currency	Late	Yes	+
A new spin on pay policy	Early	Yes	+
Edging towards the Euro	Early	Yes	+
Guessing Milosevic's next move	Medial	Yes	+
Nawaz Sharif's landslide	Early	Yes	+
Cook finds the right recipe for Europe	Early	Yes	+
Receiving you muffled and unclear, Mr	Final	Yes	-
Uniforms, yes:	Late	Yes	+
Backing our boys	Early	Yes	+
Milosevic at Bay	Diffuse	Yes	-
Labour aims at the top	Early	Yes	Ø

In certain cases, such as the editorial "Have the Debate", the reason for the high number of pronouns (see Appendix 2) is that the number of protagonists is exceptionally high. [1]

IX.4. Other Factors Influencing the Patterns of Re-entry

The results linked to objective three are varied and refer to individual texts rather than the editorial corpus as a whole. After gathering the data on re-entry items (appendix 2) it becomes evident that certain re-entry are more predominant in some texts than others.

IX.4.1. Ellipsis

Several editorials have a higher than normal incidence of ellipsis. This is the case in three editorials: “Edging Towards the Euro”, “Pakistan's Opportunity”, and “The Cook Currency”. In “Edging Towards the Euro” it can be seen that ellipsis of the verb “join” often occurs, whereas in “The Cook Currency”, the word most often elided is “single currency” (see Graph IX1. In the case of “Pakistan's Opportunity”, the word elided most is “Pakistan” itself, although ellision of “the elections” is also noticeable. In all three editorials, the words elided are probably the most important single words in the text and they also figure clearly in the headline.

IX.4.1. Hyponyms

With regard to hyponyms (L3 & DNF3) the highest levels can be found in “Pakistan Fails to Vote”, “Labour Aims at the Top”, “High Minded in High Places”, “Cook Finds the Right Recipe” and “Give the New Pressure Parties a Good Airing” (see graph IX2). Hyponyms are used to list members of sets, such as countries in Asia and types of political problems in the case of “Pakistan Fails to Vote”; components of British institutions in “Labour Aims at the Top”; members of a list of guests and the stories that have come out of the meeting in “High Minded in High Places”; and member-countries of the European Union in “Cook Finds the Right Recipe”. In the editorial “Give the New Pressure Parties a Good Airing”, hyponyms are used to name

different types of pressure parties. It seems, therefore, that hyponyms are used mainly to make members of a set explicit, often in the form of a list.

IX.4.3. Pronouns

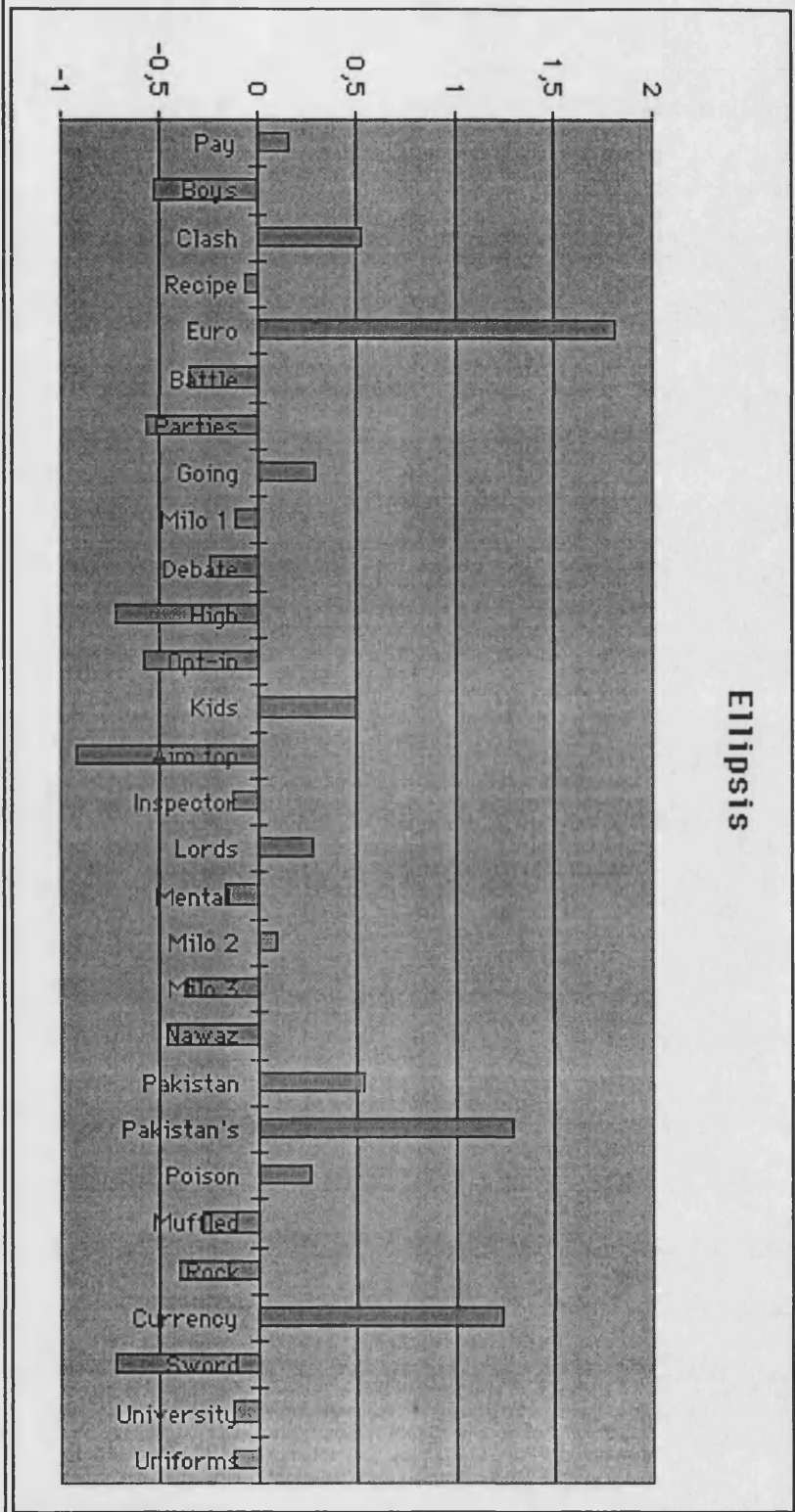
An above average use of pronouns is found in those editorials which center on a particular individual, such as “Cook’s Recipe”, “Have the Debate”, “Guessing Milosevic’s Game”, “Labour Aim at Top”, “Milosevic and Friends”, “Nawaz Sharif’s Landslide” and “Muffled and Unclear” (see appendix 2). All the above editorials have one explicit protagonist except “Have the Debate”, which has various. Therefore, the presence of a higher than average number of pronouns could be due to this factor (see graph IX3).

Nevertheless, not all the editorials in the corpus with a single individual named in the title have a lot of pronouns. This is the case of “Milosevic at bay”, which is about Milosevic but has a diffuse DT.

IX.5. Metadiscursive Nouns

As I mentioned in the last chapter, in objectives 4a, 4b, and 4c, I wished to discover whether metadiscursive A-nouns, which are an important re-entry device in editorials, according to Francis (1986), are indeed characteristic of the editorial genre. This means looking at both the head words of metadiscursive and non-metadiscursive A-nouns and the determiners that precede them.

Graph IX 1

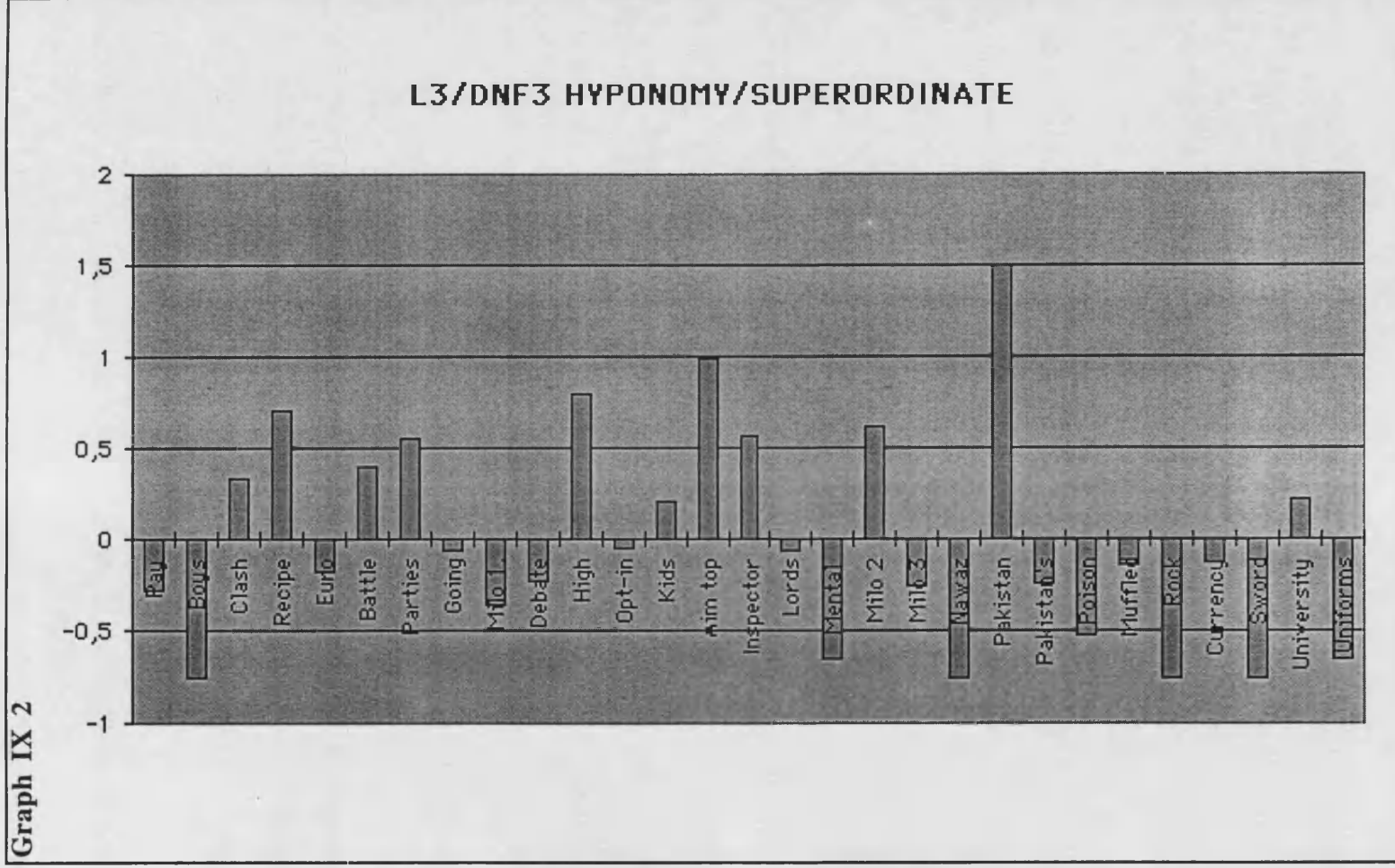


IX.5.1. Metadiscursive and non-metadiscursive a-noun headwords

As we saw in the chapter on re-entry devices A-nouns are made up of determiners and headwords. In this section I will look at headwords to determine the number of meta- and non-metadiscursive A-nouns. According to Francis (1986: 3) the latter "are an extremely prevalent feature of this kind of discourse". From the results of my analysis I identify a number of metadiscursive A-nouns. A total of twenty-eight from twenty-nine articles can be found.

My first comment on perusing the results of the Excel table is that "extremely prevalent" would not be the expression I would use to describe an average of just over one metadiscursive anaphoric noun per text. Secondly, editorials in which statements, either written or spoken are discussed have a relatively large number of metadiscursive A-nouns. For example, "A New Spin on Pay Policy" discusses an announcement made by the then shadow Chancellor George Brown; "Constitutional Clash" looks at proposed reforms to the constitution; "Fight the Battle of Ideas" discusses the Tories' campaign message; "Stand by the Rock" criticizes Abel Matute's proposals for Gibraltar; and "The Role of a University" goes over the results from the Dearing Committee on higher education. Therefore, it cannot be said that metadiscursive A-nouns are characteristic of anything but editorials which discuss people's statements.

Graph IX 2



There are one hundred and eighty-two distinct non-metadiscursive A-noun heads. In all there are two hundred and forty-six cases of these nouns -counting those that appear more than once. These far outway the metadiscursive nouns. From the results, I think we can safely say that one of the answers to the research question included in objective three is that metadiscourse A-nouns are present in most editorials but they cannot be

Table IX 9

Item	#	Item	#	Item	#	Item	#	Item	#
issue	6	message	2	claim	1	list	1	rhetoric	1
approach	4	proposal(s)	2	concession	1	matter	1	rumour	1
assertion(s)	2	question(s)	2	conclusion	1	phrase	1	thinking	1
commitment	2 ¹	statement	2	doubts	1	posture	1	verdict	1
decision	2	argument	1	idea	1	reason	1	version	1

said to be prevalent except in editorials which center on statements.

In this respect my analysis appears to confirm that Francis (1986) has identified most of the metadiscursive headwords as I have only been able to find two or three metadiscursive heads that she had not mentioned in the above article.

I next looked into what metadiscursive headwords appear in the editorial texts. The vast majority are those that were listed by Francis (1986). Two or three more, such as "posture", "reason" and "rumour", which also have a metadiscursive function in the texts I analyze, can be found.

¹ From the same article.

IX.5.2. Non-metadiscursive A-nouns

Francis (1986) does not look at non-metadiscursive nouns but invites researchers to analyze them in editorials and other genres. With regards to the headwords of non-metadiscursive A-nouns, these are too numerous to be included here—they can be found in Appendix 2. In table IX11 above I include only those non-metadiscursive A-noun heads which occur more than once.

It will be seen that many of them are re-entries for people or institutions such as "Prime Minister" or "Chancellor. Some are obviously to

Table IX 10

Item	#	Item	#	Item	#	Item	#
country	8	way	4	coalition	2 ²	rate	2
case	5	Chancellor	3	election(s)	2	region	2 ³
group(s)	5	law(s)	3	grounds	2	sector	2
legislation	5	move	3	leader(s)	2	study	2 ⁴
party	5	option	3	package	2	defendant (the)	2 ³
government	4	project	3	policy	2	Prime Minister (the)	2
system	4	absence	2	politician	2	trend	2
thing(s)	4	charge(s)	2	protection	2		

be found only in articles about politics, such as "politician", "party", "policy"; others when laws or court cases are being discussed, i.e., "law", "bill", "legislation", "charge(s)"; There may be a group, however, which transcend specific topics, i.e. "issue", "case", "system", "thing(s)", "way", "move",

² Both about Kosovo but not same articles.

³ Both about Kosovo but not same articles.

⁴ From the same article.

"option", "project", "package", "grounds". These are of interest to everyone, not just those interested in the newspaper genre as they are the general words that Halliday and Hasan (1976) talk about.

Table IX 11

	Metadiscursive A-Nouns	%
MDNF the	the	29,9590741
MDNF this	this	20,6518414
MDNF that	that	12,712233
MDNF these	these	2,92756898
MDNF those	those	2,43242387
MDNF a/an	a/an	2,43242387
MDNF such	such	15,2368801
MDNF others	others	13,6475547

On the other hand, of the non-metadiscursive nouns, 48% are preceded by "the"; 10% by "this"; only 4% by "that"; 13,16 by "a/an" and 6% by "such". The rest of the determiners do not go over five per cent. The surprising result here is the number of A-nouns preceded by the indefinite article (see table 13).

Table IX 12

Non-Metadiscursive A-Nouns	%
NMDNF the	47,9398376
NMDNF this	10,0086666
NMDNF that	4,20906246
NMDNF these	3,51848053
NMDNF those	0,82287561
NMDNF a/an	13,0737732
NMDNF such	6,26320801
NMDNF others	14,1640959

⁵ From the same article.

Table IX 13

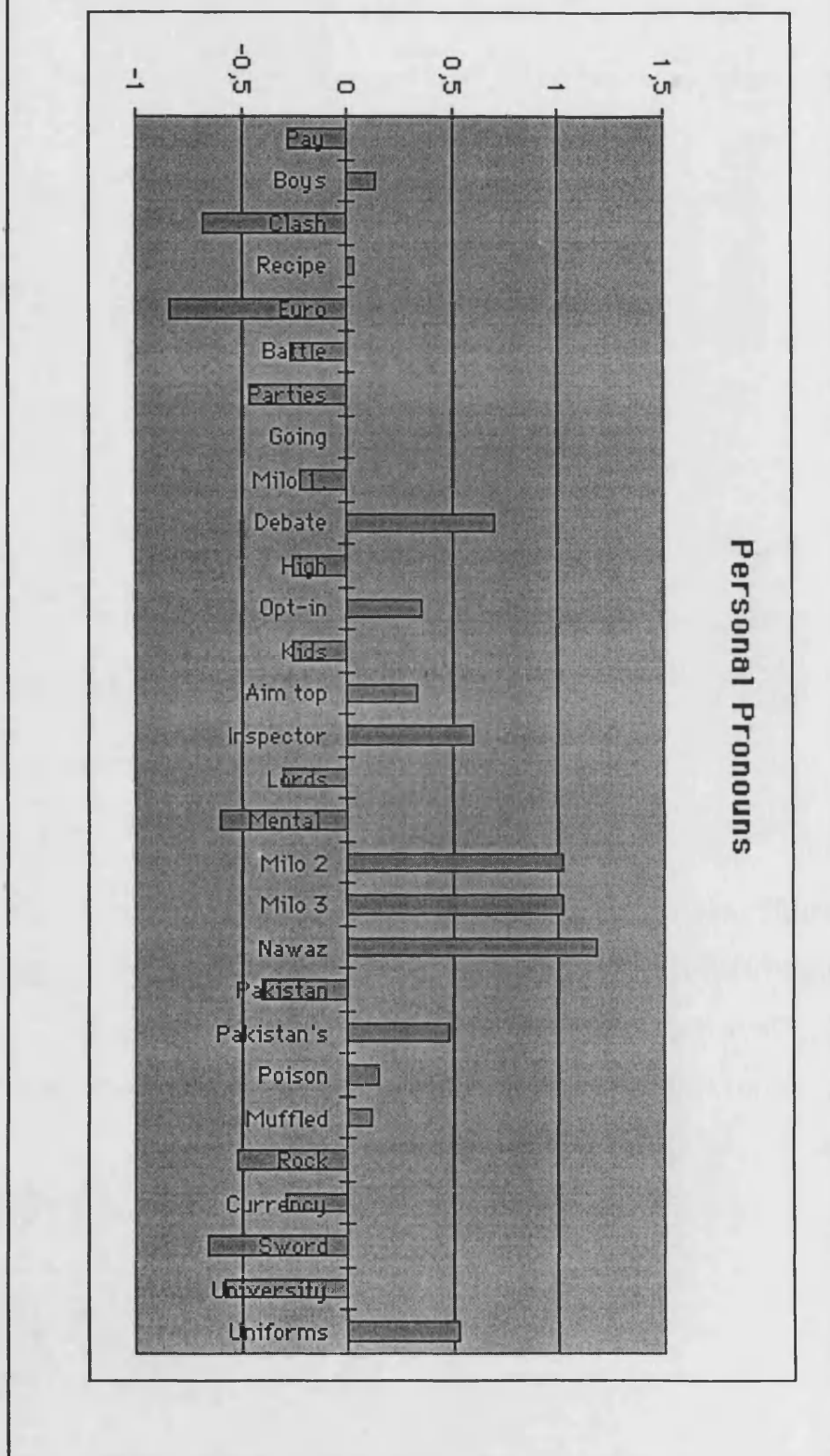
Non-Metadiscursive A-Nouns	%
NMDNF the	47,9398376
NMDNF this	10,0086666
NMDNF that	4,20906246
NMDNF these	3,51848053
NMDNF those	0,82287561
NMDNF a/an	13,0737732
NMDNF such	6,26320801
NMDNF others	14,1640959

Table IX 14

	Guardian	Telegraph	Times	Independent
Meta A-nouns	0,24	0,23	0,3	0,15
Non-meta A-nouns	1,39	1,81	1,5	1,02
A-nouns	1,63	2,04	1,8	1,17

It would seem that the determiners preceding metadiscursive A-nouns are slightly different from those that appear before non-metadiscursive nouns. There appears to be a larger number of determiners that signal strong deixis, such as "this". This may be due to the fact that the writer wishes to signal that his/her commentary is important.

Graph IX 3



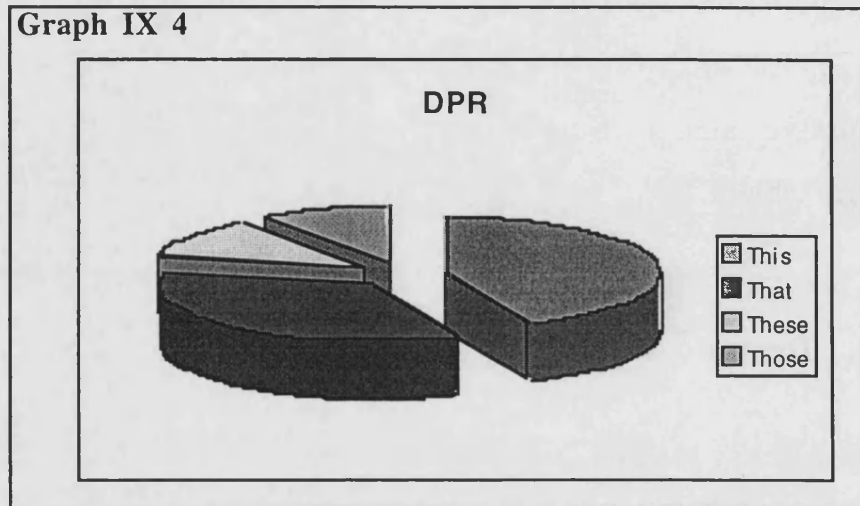
With regards to determiner noun-phrases, the total lexical weight for each newspaper is the following, *The Guardian* 1,63, *The Telegraph* 2,04, *The Times* 1,8 and *The Independent* 1,17%. The lexical weight of the metadiscursive and non-metadiscursive A-nouns taken separately can also be seen in table IX4 below:

IX. 5.4. Demonstrative pronoun reference

One of the objectives related to A-nouns is to find out whether DPRs are related to metadiscursive A-nouns. From the analysis it is seen that they are similar in that the majority of A-nouns are preceded by strong-deixis determiners such as "this", "that", "these", etc., in the case of the metadiscursive A-nouns, or consist of "this" in the case of the demonstrative pronouns.

The results show that "this" is the most common demonstrative pronoun followed by "that", "these" and "those". This is true except in the case of *The Telegraph* in whose articles "that" is more common. With regards to the overall weight of demonstrative pronoun reference, *The Telegraph* is first, followed by *The Independent*, *The Guardian* and *The Times* (see graph IX4).

Another piece of evidence which seems to point to the relationship



between DPRs and A-nouns can be seen in graph IX 5. This shows that when there is a large number of A-nouns such as in "A new spin on pay policy", "Guessing Milosovic's", "Lords on Target", "Milosevic at Bay", "Pakistan Fails to Vote", "Poison we must live with" and "Stand by the Rock", there is a correspondingly lower number of DPRs. The opposite is also true. A large number of DPRs as in "Backing our Boys", "Give the Pressure Parties a Chance" and "Labour Aim at the Top", there is a lower number of A-nouns. This would seem to prove that there is a relationship between these re-entry devices, that is, if an author uses a high number of one type this precludes the use of the other.

IX.6. Length of text and re-entry

If we compare the results of the Excel spreadsheet (appendix 2) for each newspaper we see that the total lexical density of re-entry items has nothing to do with the length of the text. In fact the broadsheet with the largest average number of words has the lowest total lexical density of re-

Table IX 15

	Guardian	Telegraph	Times	Independent
Lexical Density	10,704	11,27435	12,7	9,52

entry items of all the newspapers.

With regards to length of text and the use of pronouns, I have found that there is a correlation between average length of text and the number of pronouns present, except in the case of *The Telegraph*, which has the

Table IX 16

	Guardian	Telegraph	Times	Independent
	P1	P1	P1	P1
Average Lexical Density	1,5	1,64	1,56	1,89
Average Length of Text	566	484,5	583,125	940,2

shortest editorials coupled with the highest lexical density for pronouns.

Such a clear picture cannot be seen with regards to individual texts as there are many factors that can affect the results, such as the number of

protagonists and whether the DT is text initial as we have seen above. However, over a series of texts the general tendency is for there to be more pronouns in long texts.

I have found no correlation between paragraph boundaries and the use of pronouns. My hypothesis was that more paragraphs would mean a lower number of pronouns following Givón (1995). He claims that continuing with a particular entity usually requires the use of pronouns. Therefore, the greater the number of paragraphs the fewer the pronouns we should find. If we look at table IX17 below, we will see, on the contrary, that the newspaper with the highest number of pronouns is in fact the one with the

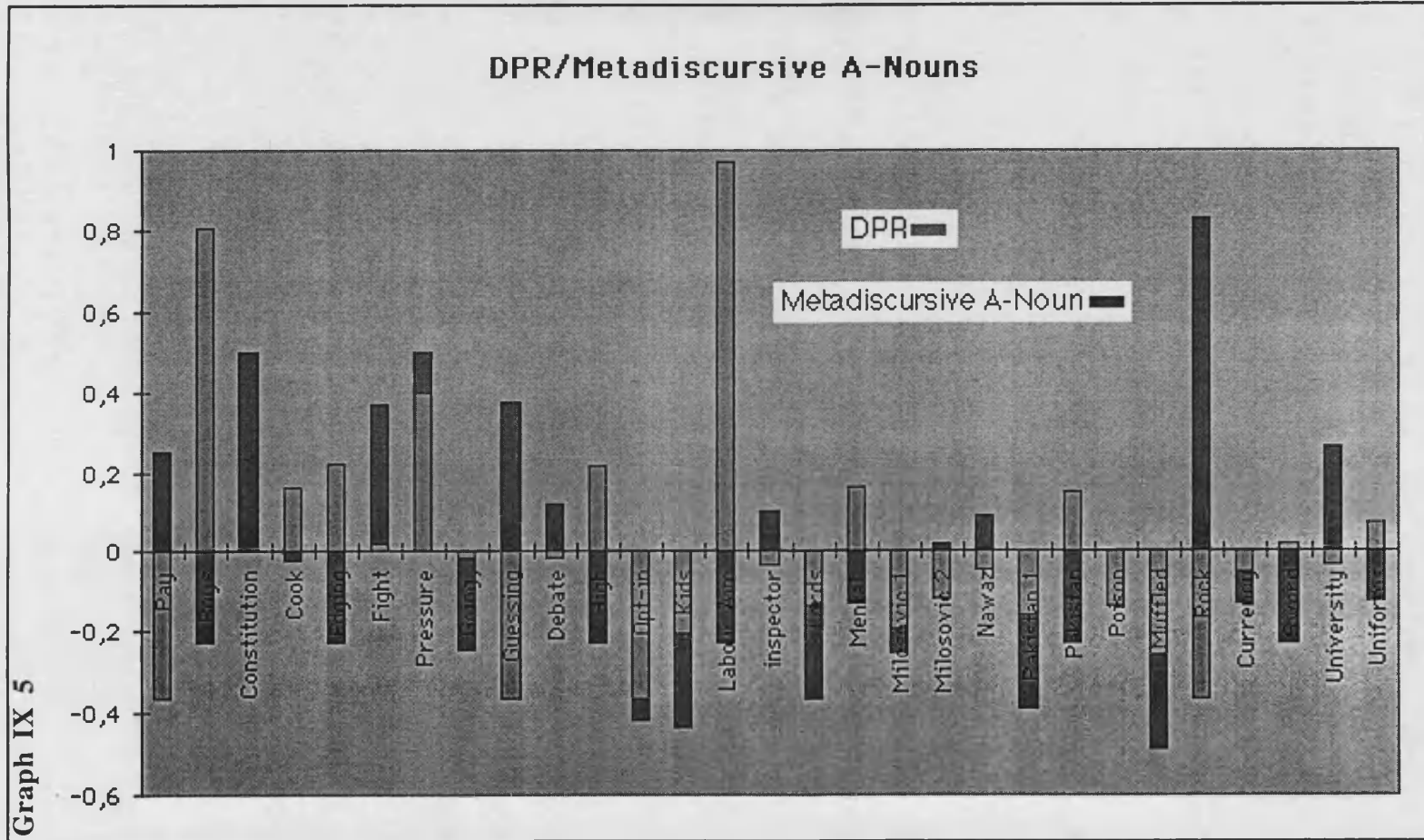
Table IX 17

GUARDIAN	TELEGRAPH	TIMES	INDEPENDENT	
4528	3876	4665	4701	TOTAL NUMBER OF WORDS
566	484,5	583,125	940,2	AVERAGE LENGTH OF EDITORIAL
3,5	4,875	6,5	11	AVERAGE NUMBER OF PARAGRAPHS
167,6875	98,4583333	93,9153274	86,9369697	AVERAGE LENGTH PARAGRAPH
23,875	22,625	24,75	44,8	AVERAGE NUMBER OF SENTENCES
24,1476936	22,3071956	24,4627732	21,0812376	AVERAGE LENGTH OF SENTENCES
1,5	1,64	1,56	1,89	Lexical Density of PI

greatest number of paragraphs, that is *The Independent*.

Conclusive evidence has not been found to back up the hypothesis that more paragraphs should mean fewer pronouns. The reason may be that paragraphs are merely a graphic device to make reading the editorials easier.

Graph IX 5



IX.7. Pronouns and Paragraph Boundaries

The results in the last section may tie in with objective six, i.e., that the occurrence of pronouns spanning paragraph boundaries is not common in editorials. Here the results are mixed. There are several cases of pronouns referring across paragraph boundaries. In this particular case I looked at all the texts, that is, the main corpus and all the other editorials gathered the week from the 3rd to the 7th of February. I discover three cases in *The Times* and *The Independent* and four in *The Telegraph*. Only one can be found in *The Guardian*.

Taking into account that the first three have more paragraphs per editorial than the latter, it reinforced my idea that paragraphs are not necessarily sub-topic boundaries. This leads me to the conclusion that the division of the editorials into paragraphs is not only due to rhetorical reasons but was a way, presumably, of making the editorials look less formidable to the reader by splitting them up into more manageable paragraphs. According to Unger (1996: 403) paragraph breaks merely tell the reader that the information in the next paragraph is a little more loosely connected to the previous paragraph than the information contained in it.

In any case, it is important to take into account that there were very few cases of paragraph boundary violation considering that the average number of paragraphs in the case of *The Independent* alone was eleven (see table IX18 below).

IX.8. Syntagmatic Association and Re-entry

My objective with regards to syntagmatic association was to discover if the type of editorial, that is, the subject matter, affects the number of such

Table IX 18

The Times	
<i>Milosevic and Friends</i>	Of his success in securing
<i>Pakistan's opportunity</i>	They chose a politician
<i>The Cook Currency</i>	One newspaper portrayed them
The Independent	
<i>Cook finds the right recipe for Europe</i>	If it works,
<i>Give the new pressure parties an airing</i>	with that off the agenda
<i>Mental illness needs a broader treatment</i>	He certainly deserves
The Telegraph	
<i>Backing our boys</i>	Much of his critique of Conservative defence policy
<i>Poison we must live with</i>	If it is enacted
<i>More Pamelas, please</i>	Above all, her success
<i>The liabilities of OJ Simpson</i>	This is true
The Guardian	
<i>When a flutter becomes a habit</i>	But none of this justifies a lottery

constructions. My hypothesis is that editorials which talk about political parties and leaders will tend to introduce copious information with SAGs and SAWs as it is the most convenient way to do so. For instance, one only needs to add "policy" to "Labour" to create new information which can be linked to an entity "the Labour party" which has already been mentioned.

The analysis (see appendix 3 and table IX19 below) points to the fact that the articles on national and international politics are richer in SAGs than the articles on other subjects, which are generally low in SAGs. In seven of them (underlined) there are no SAGs. Six of these are the more essay-like editorials mentioned above. The only editorial on politics with no SAGs is "Guessing Milosovic's game". This particular text has the third highest lexical density for personal pronouns, but is low on possessive pronouns, which is another way new information can be added.

The fact that the majority of the articles with no SAGs are of the essay type may be because these articles are not about entities such as political parties or individuals but about more general issues. The picture with regards to SAWs is more complex as this type of construction can be found in all types of editorials. Although higher values for SAWs are found in editorials on politics

On the other hand, there seems to be no correlation between editorials with a clear protagonist coupled with an early topic and the way re-entry devices introduce new information through SAG and SAW.

It has to be said that the information introduced using the SA device is often of very little value with regards to new information. Most of the time

Table IX 19

Legend: / = average; + = above average; - = below average; Ø no presence of item, ET = Early DT entry; LT = Late DT entry; P = clear protagonist; NP = unclear protagonist; PPPP = many protagonists.

	A new spin on Pay	Backing our Boys	Constitutional Clash	Cook Recipe	Edging towards Euro	Fight Battle of Ideas	Pressure Parties	Going going	Guessing Milosevic's	Have the Debate
SA	-	-	-	+	-	-	-	+	-	-
SAG	++	+	++	+	++	+++	Ø	Ø	Ø	+
SAW	+	+++	/	+	++	++	Ø	+	-	Ø
SAW/SAG	+	++	+	+	++	++	---	-	--	-
	ET	ET	LT	ET	ET	LT	MT	LT	ET	MT
	P	P	NP	P	P	PP	NP	NP	P	PPPP

	High Minded	Irreversible Opt- in	Kids Who minds?	Labour Aims at Top	Labour's Inspector	Lords on Target	Mental Illness	Milosevic & Friends	Milosevic at Bay	Nawaz Sharif's Landslide
SA	-	+	-	-	-	+	-	-	+	+
SAG	+	-	Ø	-	+	+++	-	+	+	++
SAW	Ø	++	-	++	Ø	-	Ø	Ø	++	Ø
SAW/SAG	-	+	--	/	-	+	---	-	++	-
	LT	L	LT	ET	ET	ET	LT	ET	ØT	ET
	NP	NP	NP	P	P	NP	NP	P	P	P

	Pakistan Fails to Vote	Pakistan's Opportunity	Poison we must live with	Muffled and Unclear	Stand by the Rock	Cook Currency	Double Sword	Role of University	Uni-forms, Yes
SA	+	+	-	+	+	-	+	+	+
SAG	-	+	Ø	+++	++++	++	+	Ø	Ø
SAW	Ø	/	++++	-	/	+++	Ø	-	--
SAW/SAG	--	+	++	++	++++	+++	--	-	--
	MT	LT	LT	LT	ET	LT	LT	LT	ET
	NP	P	NP	P	P	P	NP	NP	P

the SAs are made up of words or phrases such as "many of", "some of", etc. SAGs and SAWs often add more important information (see appendix 2.

IX.9. Concluding Remarks

All the results can be consulted in full in appendices 2 and 3 and will be discussed further in chapter X that follows. In this chapter I will also review the results and assess the success of my research.

X CONCLUSIONS

The conclusions in this chapter are derived from the results reflected by the data gathered in chapter IX and will be discussed in a slightly different order as in that chapter. The discussion of the results, however, will range further than the remarks made in the last chapter in order to view them from a wider perspective. The chapter will finish with a look at the pedagogical implications of the research carried out.

X.1. Differences between broadsheets: correlations between linguistic and extra-linguistic factors

The data gleaned from the analysis of the type and number of re-entry items shows that a small number of these devices makes up over 93% of the total. The fact that there is so much similarity among the broadsheets cannot be put down to mere accident and shows clearly the homogeneity of the members of the broadsheet genre with regards to said devices.

In spite of this fact, small but significant differences in the use of re-entry items among the broadsheets can be detected. The two broadsheets which seem to be less central from a genre point of view are *The Independent* and *The Telegraph*. These two, for example, show the greatest differences in the density of pronouns, *The Independent* has the longest editorials and the greatest lexical density of pronouns while

The Telegraph has the shortest editorials but the second highest lexical density of pronouns. These factors appear to correlate with extra-linguistic differences that will be explained in the following paragraphs.

Each of these broadsheets differs from *The Guardian* and *The Times* with respect to length of text, *The Independent* has much longer editorials and *The Telegraph* considerably shorter ones. They also differ in one other major extra-linguistic feature. In the case of *The Independent* there is only one main editorial and in the case of *The Telegraph*, its treatment of the news is more tabloid-like. Therefore *The Telegraph* shares with *The Guardian* and *The Times* the characteristics of having three editorials a day, while *The Independent* is like these two in that it is more like a broadsheet in its treatment of the news.

These differences appear to indicate that the editorials in *The Independent* and *The Telegraph* are essentially more marginal examples of broadsheet editorials while those of *The Guardian* and *The Times* are more typical of this sub-genre.

The Independent is a newer and, possibly, more innovative newspaper than its counterparts. The appearance of only one main editorial and a very much shorter, often light-hearted piece that follows this is evidence of this fact. On the other hand, *The Telegraph* is closer to the tabloids with regard to the length of the editorials, the treatment of the news, and for other reasons that mentioned in chapter II (see Bell 1991: 107-108). Jucker also includes *The Telegraph* in the "down-market" bracket of broadsheets.

Thus, the results from the analysis of the corpus seem to point to at least one linguistic difference—a greater number of pronouns—being linked to a non-linguistic dimension, i.e., the fact that both *The Telegraph* and *The Independent* are marginal types of broadsheets compared to *The Guardian* and *The Independent*.

X.2. Patterns of re-entry in broadsheets

The second set of results from the chart refers to the specific types of re-entry devices used in all the broadsheets. The first of these results clearly show that both repetition with and without determiners and text equivalents with and without determiners are normally of type a. I am inclined to think that these results might be found in other text types, that is, at least in written texts that share Biber's (1988) dimensions 4 and 6.

This conviction comes from having looked at cohesive relations in other essay-like texts. It would surprise me if major differences were found in texts which are similar to editorials as re-entry devices are such a basic part of discourse and are not subject to as much change as heavily semanticized words. The a-type: L1a, L2a, DNF1a, DNF2a, which Halliday & Hasan (1976: 288) call "same reference" lexical cohesion, would, therefore, seem to be the default type of semantic relations that re-entry devices hold with their antecedents.

This empirical evidence is, in my opinion, of capital importance as it is not only an important result but vindicates the close analysis of this corpus. It is important as it seems to tell us that, in spite of the many

possible semantic relations that can be utilized, simple reference identity, probably the most straightforward of all the relations between antecedent and re-entry item, is the most common.

Only two individual editorials stand out for their use of exclusive relations (see section IV.3.2.), that is type c, which are represented by **DNF1c** and **DNF2c**. They are: Give the “New Pressure Parties a Good Airing” and “Poison we Must Live with”, both of which talk about different parties and radical groups respectively. The common denominator is subject matter, which dictates, to a certain extent, what type of re-entry is employed. We have seen in Table IX1 that this type is not very common at all. This means that exclusive semantic relations are, in this type of text, quite marked. This markedness is probably attenuated by the subject matter, which lends itself to the use of the c-type.

The evidence also seems underline the fact that an extra-linguistic factor, sticking to one main protagonist through “same referent” relations is the norm for this genre. Once more, a linguistic choice, a-type relations have an extra-linguistic counterpart.

With regards to the differences between re-entry with determiners and without I have reached the conclusion that there is, in fact, very little difference between them. Before carrying out the analysis and reflecting on the results, I held the belief that repetition and text-equivalence with determiners were radically different from L1 and L2 without determiners. My hypothesis was that repetition would be a characteristic of continuity while text equivalence would be typical of

more essay-like texts. There is no evidence to support this. I now believe that both are varieties of continuity devices.

It became clear to me that the differences are often a question of usage. For example, the Conservative party or its members are nearly always referred to as “the Conservatives” or “the Tories”, whereas the Labour party is generally referred to as “Labour”. This applies to both new entries of these entities and when they are re-entered.

I would compare this conclusion to my thoughts with respect to what constitutes repetition. To recapitulate, I said in section VI.2.2. that repetition, L1 and DNF1, can include surface differences and still be regarded as repetition as long as there is some resemblance. Of course, “some resemblance” leaves a lot of room for maneuver but as in most problems of definition in linguistics it will have to suffice¹. To continue with the analogy with repetition, I would argue that we must admit that “Labour” without a determiner is very similar to “the Conservatives” which does have one and that the presence or absence of the determiner is a question of usage with respect to a particular lexical item and not a textual issue at all.

Usage, or collocation —but not in the cohesive sense— also has an important role to play in the use of the indefinite article as a re-entry items. In a few cases, such as “a single currency”, it is clear that this noun phrase, preceded by an indefinite article, is just as definite as “the

¹ In this sense it is similar to the proviso that sounds in complementary distribution must be “phonetically similar” to be regarded as realizations of the same phoneme.

euro” and does, without a doubt, refer back to an antecedent in the preceding text.

There are, it must be said, borderline cases such as “a Labour government” in which the Labour government mentioned is (or at least was at the time of the writing of the editorial) a virtual government. However, I believe it would be too strict to say that the “Labour government” in this text had nothing to do with the antecedent “Labour” in both “The Cook Currency” and “Edging towards the Euro”. It is not a non-referential anaphora such as example 1 below in which neither the antecedent or re-entry item refer to a real entity outside the text (Evans: 337):

Ex. 1 Every man loves his mother

An important discovery from the analysis of the data was that re-entry through L2, that is, text equivalence is by far more important than re-entry through L5, or dictionary synonyms. Evidence of this kind this shows that texts have an inner life which is completely divorced from that of the words collected by the lexicographer and the relationships that obtain between them.

Further research into L2 should highlight the most common kinds of relationships between these devices and their antecedents. I said above that “same referent” anaphora is by far the most common kind of relation but this does not tell us anything about the exact type of semantic relationship that is held between elements. I suspect, however, that the synonymous relationships through encyclopaedic knowledge of

the type: Gordon Brown = the iron chancellor or Mr Blair = the leader of the opposition, will be more common than the use of tropes or meronymy, for example.

The results from the last chapter appear to show that certain types of re-entry are found in greater quantities in editorials that deal with a certain subject matter. This was the case with ellipsis, hyponyms, and pronouns. In general terms it was difficult to find correlations between subject matter and the use of a particular re-entry item.

It seems clear, however, that ellipsis is used heavily in editorials in which the word most often elided features in the headline. Notwithstanding this fact, using ellipsis is not mechanical; there does seem to be a choice. For example, ellipsis is used frequently in "Pakistan's Opportunity" but not in "Pakistan Fails to Vote", both of which are about the same subject matter and have the word "Pakistan" in the title. Moreover, ellipsis probably can appear in greater than average amounts even in articles that do not feature the word that is elided in the title.

Subject matter also has a lot to do with the appearance, or otherwise, of hyponyms, which are found mostly in editorials in which sets of entities are found. It seems logical that when part-whole, or member-set relationships are clearly present in the conceptual nature of the text that superordinates and hyponyms will appear.

Apparently the use of a larger than normal number of pronouns is not dependent on subject matter. The presence of a large number of

pronouns is, in fact, dependent, not on what the editorial is about, but the way a subject is dealt with, that is, if there is a single protagonist. But even this is not a guarantee that pronouns will be used extensively. In the article "Milosevic at Bay", which is mainly about Milosevic himself, pronouns are not found in large quantities.

We can see that the type of re-entry item used is not dependent on straightforward stimuli. In fact, it is my feeling that in one particular text there may be several factors that complicate the situation, i.e., a text may be about one particular protagonist in one or two paragraphs but may deal with related issues in others. With regard to the use of pronouns, for example, an author might prefer to use the protagonist's name instead of a pronoun. Depending on the person re-entered, there may be various possibilities, the use of a pronoun, the person's name, his or her job, and even tropes. The reasons for using one or the other can be varied and would depend on a multitude of factors.

X.3. DT and re-entry

My hypothesis that the structure of an editorial is influenced by the lexical density of re-entry items proved to be true. The presence of an early explicit DT and an explicit protagonist seem to be decisive in this respect, an explicit protagonist being the most important factor. The more diffuse an editorial, that is, if the editorial is not about a chain of events connected to an explicit protagonist, the lower the lexical density that exists. Therefore, if we look at the lexical density of a text, it might be possible to predict whether it has a tight or loose structure. This

prediction can then be checked using empirical rather than impressionistic methods, namely the lexical density of re-entry items. Moreover, we might be able to predict that essays with a looser kind of structure, and therefore a lower lexical density with regards to re-entry, are more essay-like and further from the opinion-on-a-piece-of-news type.

It is also evident that *The Guardian* and *The Times* are much more regular as far as the pairs Early DT/Explicit Protagonist and Late DT/No Protagonist are concerned. *The Telegraph* and *The Independent* are much more erratic in this sense. This re-inforces my idea that the latter pair are more marginal examples of broadsheets than the former.

X.4. *Metadiscursive nouns*

The results of the analysis in the last chapter show that metadiscursive A-nouns in editorials are not as common as Francis (1986, 1995) suggested. They are in fact only found in abundance in editorials that feature the reporting of statements. Given this situation, I decided to compare these results with those from an unpublished paper by Pennock & Ll acer to see whether metadiscursive nouns could in any way be described as typical of this genre. The comparison involved, apart from the corpus from this dissertation, ten articles on diverse subjects from the magazine *Scientific American*.

The main reason for comparing editorial broadsheets and the articles from the above magazine is that a similar, though not identical type of

analysis was carried out on both types of texts. The *Scientific American* texts were analyzed to see the role of Anaphoric nouns. Another reason was that although *Scientific American* has a more restricted audience than broadsheet editorials, it is also read by an educated and probably relatively affluent minority, as in the case of broadsheets.

With regards to text typology, the scientific articles in *Scientific American* are expository texts and not of the opinion type, which is the case of the editorial genre. However, I feel that both text-types share enough characteristics for a comparison to be useful. For example, both use argumentative structures arranged logically as part of their rhetorical structure.

My original feeling was that analysis of A-nouns in the scientific genre would provide very different results from those found in editorials. However, this proves to be wrong. If we look at the relative frequency of metadiscursive and non-metadiscursive A-nouns in both genres, it can be observed that in the *Scientific American* corpus of a total of 271 A-nouns only 55 are metadiscursive, while 216 were non-metadiscursive nouns.

Surprisingly we can see from table X1 below, that metadiscursive A-nouns are actually more common in the scientific articles analyzed than in the broadsheets. This raises even more questions about whether metadiscursive A-nouns are so predominant in editorials and indeed whether they can be seen as characteristic of this genre at all.

Table X 1

	Scientific American	Editorials
meta	20,295202952	13,074204947
non-meta	79,704797048	86,925795053

To continue with this line of inquiry I looked at metadiscursive headwords to determine whether there were any major differences between the two corpora there. Only four were common to both of my corpora: "approach", "conclusion", "idea", "reason". It appears from this evidence that at least some metadiscursive A-nouns do transcend one genre.

What is also important, is that if we take into account that several metadiscursive A-nouns occur in more than one editorial: "issue", "approach", "assertion", "decision", "message", "proposal", "question", "statement", it must mean that such A-nouns also go beyond editorials about one subject matter and can, therefore, be compared to other groups with a limited number of member such as conjunctions. A-nouns that transcend articles within a genre also appear in the scientific articles.

Some metadiscursive A-nouns do not appear in both types (e.g., "decision", "claim", "doubts", "matter", "verdict") but could conceivably do so. That they do not is probably due to the size of the corpus. However, it seems improbable that words like "rhetoric" or "rumour" would be used in the scientific texts.

If we compare the non-metadiscursive heads found in the editorials with those of *Scientific American*, we find that only eighteen coincide.

This is a small number if we consider the relatively large amount that can be found in either type of text. However, just as with the metadiscursive headwords, the fact that some do not occur can probably be put down to chance as it would be very easy to think of occasions on which they could be used.

To give examples of headwords that I believe would appear in a larger corpus, observe the following headwords, which are found only in either the editorials or the scientific texts. These are just those from the first four letters of the alphabet: "aim" (ED), "appearance" (SA), "arrangement" (SA), "choices" (ED), "combination" (ED), "design" (SA).

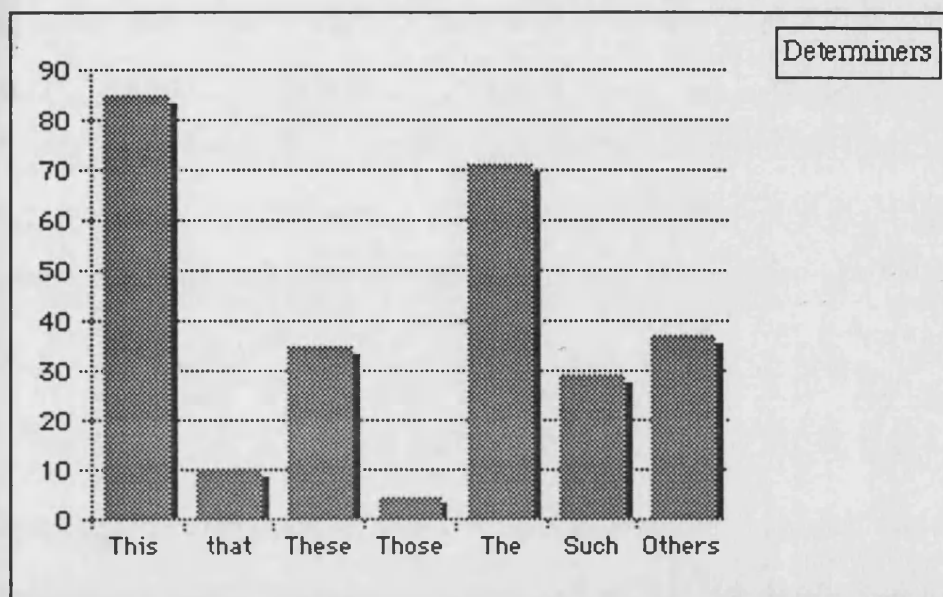
From the evidence, and given the variety of non-metadiscursive A-nouns, it would be impossible to say that any word, no matter how technical it might look, could not find its way into an editorial as they may deal with many diverse subjects.

The results of the analysis clearly show that A-nouns are akin to function words and have an important part in signalling cohesion. The headwords i.e. "issue", "case", "system", "thing(s)", "way", "move", "option", , "project", "package", "grounds", which are found in articles and editorials on diverse subjects are the general words that Halliday & Hasan (1976) mention.

In the case of metadiscursive nouns as opposed to non-metadiscursive nouns, there seems to be a larger number of determiners that signal strong deixis, such as "this" and "these". Although Pennock & Llacer's analysis of A-noun determiners in scientific texts did not separate meta-

from non-metadiscursive nouns, the results from this article show that in the case of scientific texts “this” is predominant even among A-nouns as a whole, which is not the case in the editorials (see graph X1).

Graph X 1



What is the explanation for the predominant use of the definite article and the proximity determiners “this/these”? If one of the main roles of A-nouns is referential continuity, the presence of a large number of the unmarked form *the* is logical as it simply marks an entity as having been mentioned before. The large number of occurrences of “this/these” are used to focus more emphatically on an entity. Therefore, what is added in the case of these determiners is the desire to bring to the foreground the preceding text and signal it as important in the discourse.

If the main functions of A-nouns are referential continuity and bringing entities into focus so that they can be discussed in more detail, then it is quite logical that “that/those” should be far less numerous

when used with A-nouns. The function of “that/those” is to focus on an entity or idea in order to marginalize it (see McCarthy’s (1994) discussion of pronouns in section V.3.2.10.1.).

The determiner “such” is also a predominant determiner preceding A-nouns in editorials and scientific texts. This would also seem to suggest that the types of determiners preceding A-nouns cross genre boundaries. The large number of A-nouns preceded by “such” suggests to me that it has a similar function to “this/these”. In many cases “such” seems to be interchangeable with either without any noticeable change of meaning. This is the reason I do not include “such” among the comparatives (see section IV.3.1.3.) as Halliday suggested (1976 79).

The differences between the demonstratives are often complex and conclusions hard to come by, and that, according to Lakoff (1974), is something of an understatement. Many of the ideas we have about determiners are still, to a great extent, intuitional.

The data with respect to DPRs suggests that there is a connection between these and the determiners preceding A-nouns. I found that both DPRs and A-nouns are often preceded by “this”, which seems to suggest that the function of both metadiscursive A-nouns and DPRs are connected. The fact is that the relation between these two devices has been noticed by several researchers. What I have found is that the counterpart of “non-reference this” (Dillon: 1981: 94) with respect to metadiscursive A-nouns is the determiner “this”.

It appears that both DPRs and Metadiscursive A-nouns feature “this” and thus focus more strongly on the meaning of the antecedent, whereas non-metadiscursive nouns are usually preceded by “the”, at least in the editorial corpus, which maintains low-intensity focus on a particular entity without signalling it as emphatically. It is not surprising then, that the definite article, which is neutral with regards to focus is even more common in non-metadiscursive A-nouns.

Conclusive evidence for the relation between DPRs and metadiscursive A-nouns can be found in the data in graph IX5 in the last chapter which shows that often when one is employed heavily in a text the other is absent. The choice of either seems to be a matter of personal style. I have found no evidence that the use of DPRs is due to subject matter or structure. Nevertheless, it may be that A-nouns are preferred when the antecedent is less obvious and the relationship has to be made more explicit using a determiner plus headword.

X.4. Re-entry items and length of text

My hypothesis that length of text would be an important factor in the use of re-entry items was borne out only in part. It appears that *The Independent*, which has the longest texts of all has the lowest total lexical density for re-entry items. The reasons for this are open to conjecture. From a purely subjective point of view I would say that the editorials in *The Independent* are generally “looser” than other broadsheets even when they deal with one major protagonist and the DT is text-initial. They seem to be wider-ranging than the other

broadsheets, which may ultimately have something to do with their length.

The conclusions with regards to the presence of pronouns and length of text are undecided. The broadsheets with longer editorials seem to have more pronouns except in the case of *The Telegraph*, which has more than the both *The Guardian* and *The Times* even though it has the shortest editorials. I regard this as another piece of evidence pointing to the tabloid nature of this newspaper.

The hypothesis that a higher density of paragraphs should yield fewer pronouns was not backed up by the evidence. Moreover, if more paragraphs should mean fewer pronouns, the opposite case should also be true, i.e., that the larger the number of paragraphs the more noun-phrases used as re-entry items should be found. However, I have not carried out an analysis with regards to noun phrases as these would necessarily include items appearing in the text for the first time, which is outside the parameters of this dissertation.

X.5. Syntagmatic Association

The presence of syntagmatic associations such as SAG or SAW is a direct consequence of the design of the re-entry items that I have carried out, especially of repetition devices. This is because of my view of repetition, which is explained in chapter VI. Because I treat, for example, “Labour party” as re-entry of the antecedent “Labour” plus a new element “party” the relationship SAW exists, that is syntagmatic

association through word-order. The same is true of **SAG**, syntagmatic association through a genitive relationship. Thus, these associations can be seen as a side-product of my re-entry typology.

Because of this, I have not gone into the role that they play with the same amount of detail as with re-entry items proper. Having said that, I would claim that this kind of association is a very convenient way of introducing new entities through anaphoric expressions. Moreover, I believe that it is a strategy used by writers in an unconscious fashion.

The results show that **SAGs** and **SAWs** depend to a great extent on the kind of subject matter dealt with in a particular editorial. The editorials on national and international politics seem to have a greater number of them than other types of articles. This, in my opinion, is due to the fact that new entities can be added on to party names very easily.

As **SAWs** and **SAGs** are ways of introducing new entities it would be interesting to be able to compare their incidence in texts with that of new entities that are introduced by other means. Hypothetically, the easiest way to introduce new entities would simply be by mentioning them for the first time without them having to form part of a re-entry device. If this is true, it would be interesting to compare the number of entities entered using either method to be able to come to conclusions of a stylistic nature.

To sum up, it seems clear that re-entry patterns do exist in newspaper editorials and they depend, to a certain extent, on subject matter and information structure. What is more important, they correlate with

extra-linguistic features. This fact is worth highlighting as it is this type of correlation which is often so important if we wish to claim that a particular set of texts do indeed belong to a particular genre. Clearly broadsheet editorials form a sub-genre of which there are more central and more marginal members.

The obvious way forward from a research point of view would seem to be the analysis of other genres to discover the patterns of re-entry devices and attempt to find similarities and differences between said patterns and those found in broadsheet editorials. This would enhance what we already know about this and other genres.

Another possible direction for research would be to compare re-entry items in English and Spanish. What work has been done in this area has taken the form of decontextualized examples taken from literary texts (see Fernández 1951, Mederos 1988).

The detailed analysis of texts is an important job if we are to have a greater understanding of how they work. Even though this work will never be finished; in the words of Sinclair (1991: 8):

It has never been anticipated that a close study of text will solve the problems of description, but merely that it will indicate more clearly what problems there are to solve

Pedagogical Implications of this dissertation

As I said in the introduction to this dissertation, the dual objectives of an academic should be the search for knowledge in a particular field and the quest for ways to improve our performance as lecturers. The last paragraphs of my dissertation will thus be dedicated to the coming to conclusions on what I have learnt in this dissertation with a view to achieving the latter.

In general terms, the writing of a thesis should, in itself, help us to improve as researchers and as lecturers, for the more we know the better our teaching, both of English and about it, should be. In this sense, writing a dissertation of this kind is a way of becoming a more knowledgeable and, therefore, more capable lecturer. In today's world each of us has the responsibility to learn as much as possible about the language we are teaching but the onus now is to specialize in a particular branch of language study.

With regards to teaching the English language itself, writing a dissertation is of the greatest interest. It is this aspect of our teaching that I would like to deal with in more depth in what is left of this dissertation.

If we look at the history of teaching English and even the situation nowadays, it is clear that learning language divorced from context has been the predominant method for a very long time. Although learning specific structures and lexis out of context is a traditional, and without

doubt, useful exercise, it is becoming increasingly obvious that we need to look at language in the way that it is meant to be seen, in context.

For instance, a problem associated with the learning of vocabulary—a typical activity in the classroom—is that there are many kinds of texts, depending on the subject matter and the intended audience. Different genres may often share little vocabulary and sometimes even have few structures in common. Texts on biblical exegesis are certain to contain words that are not found in a recipe or an advertisement in a newspaper.

Lexical items are useful, no-one would deny that, but it might be more interesting for teachers to concentrate on how words and meanings relate to each other within the text and leave the learning of vocabulary items for the students to look up in the dictionary at home. What is more, much of the vocabulary students need to learn in English is of Latin origin, or has come to us through French, and so the meaning of many words should be quite easy to infer.

Given the vast amount of printed material on English teaching, very little has been written on the usefulness of discourse for the teaching and learning of English. A notable exception is McCarthy's (1991) *Discourse Analysis for Language Teachers*. Practical material is also hard to come by, Salkie (1995) is one of the few books on extra-sentential relations in general that is available for the language teacher. Until the teachers of tomorrow are thoroughly conversant with discourse structure, however, this situation will not change.

It is in the field of discourse, and more specifically in coherence relations and information structure that I hope my dissertation will have been of use to me in my future classes. I can think of several reasons for studying re-entry in discourse. The first is that the relationships that link up re-entry items and their antecedents are by no means straightforward and often include opaque semantic relationships. Explicating these relations will help students to understand the way texts hang together and the many different ways that we can structure the information in a text and would, undoubtedly, constitute a more useful activity than looking at decontextualized vocabulary.

Another reason for studying re-entry is that these items in English and Spanish might be subtly different and may lead to serious problems of understanding. Connected to this is the differences between the way texts are structured in English and Spanish texts.

An important result of this research is that the most important re-entry items have been identified (see table Table IX 1). It might, therefore, be a good idea in our teaching to concentrate on these. In view of this fact I will look at some of them in the paragraphs that follow.

We have seen from the conclusions, for example, that text equivalents are much more common than the use of dictionary synonyms. We would do well to remember this. A close look at the relationships between antecedents and L2 re-entry items would be, in my opinion, an interesting class activity and make students more aware of the complex relations that may exist in texts. Simple repetition would probably

require less time from both teachers and students although here the accompanying syntagmatic associations might be of interest.

If we take the case of A-nouns, for example, students should be made aware of their existence and how they are divided into meta- and non metadiscursive types and their similarity to DPRs. Focusing on A-nouns and other re-entry items is feasible as they are local coherence markers and are quite easy to identify and not too numerous, which makes activities connected with them less time-consuming than looking at vocabulary in general. In the case of metadiscursive A-nouns we have seen that they are often preceded by “this” and by “such”. Focusing on A-nouns and their determiners in class may help students to write more coherent and connected texts as they are very useful when connecting paragraphs.

These devices should be taught alongside linking words, topic development, repetition and other insights into the structure of written texts to improve students’ comprehension, and perhaps even production, of academic English. As far as I am aware as an experienced English teacher, very little material is available on any of the devices mentioned above, with the possible exception of linking words like “therefore”, “however”, etc. It is my opinion that non-metadiscursive A-nouns, for instance, are very useful as they transcend one particular type of text and that a list of the most common ones and the way that they are used would be of great use from a pedagogical point of view.

In our capacity as teachers, it is important to remember that making classes enjoyable is a more successful way of guaranteeing learning than

making students learn things by rote. In this respect, analyzing the links between re-entry items and their antecedents can be a stimulating and challenging activity for students and that their attitude to learning English will thus be improved.

Unfortunately, at the present time, re-entry items, like most discursal relations still do not occupy the place they deserve in the teaching of English. Books tend to stick to the study of vocabulary and structures out of context, or perhaps even worse, to simply have students answer comprehension questions on complete texts or excerpts from texts. Discourse patterns in both cases are ignored. The dearth of materials designed to make students aware of the way texts hang together does not make the situation any better. The lack of meaningful, challenging, non time-consuming activities can and should be addressed. This dissertation amounts to a first step on my own personal road to that end.

X1 BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Allen, J. 1987. *Natural Language Understanding*. Menlo Park, California: The Benjamin/Cummings Publishing Company.
- Anderson, A., S. C. Garrod & A. J. Sanford 1983. "The accessibility of pronominal antecedents as a function of episode shifts in narrative discourse". *Quarterly Journal of Experimental Psychology*, 35a: 427-40.
- Anderson, R. C., R. E. Reynolds, D. L. Schallert & E. T. Goetz 1977. "Frameworks for understanding discourse". *American Educational Research Journal*, 14, 367-381.
- Anderson, R. C. & Z. Shiffrin 1980. "The meaning of words in context". In R. J. Spiro, B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 31-348.
- Arapoff, N. 1968. "The semantic role of sentence connectors in extra-sentence logical relationships". *TESOL Quarterly* 2.
- Bach, E. 1968. "Nouns and noun phrases". In E. Bach & R. T. Harms (eds.) *Universals in Linguistic Theory*. New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston.
- Bach, E., & B. H. Partee. 1980. "Anaphora and Semantic structure". In J. Kreimann & A. Ojeda (eds.) *Papers from the*

- Parasession on Pronouns and Anaphora*. Chicago: Chicago Linguistic Society.
- Bakhtin, Mikhail M. 1981 *The Dialogic Imagination*. Austin: University of Texas Press.
- Baldinger, K. 1990. *Semantic theory: Towards a Modern Semantics*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- Barthes, R. 1988. "The death of the author". In D. Lodge (ed.) *Modern Criticism and Theory: A reader*. London & New York: Longman.
- Basham, C., & P. Kwacha 1991. "Reading the world differently: A cross-cultural approach to writing assessment". In L. Hamp-Lyons (ed.), *Assessing ESL Writing in Academic Contexts*. Norwood, NJ: Ablex, 37-49.
- Beaman, K. 1984. Coordination and subordination revisited: Syntactic complexity in spoken and written narrative discourse. In D. Tannen (ed.), *Coherence in Spoken and Written Discourse*. Norwood, NJ: Ablex. 45-80.
- Beech, J. & A. Colley (eds.) 1987. *Cognitive Approaches to Reading*. Chichester, New York, etc.: John Wiley & Sons.
- Behre, F. 1961. "On the principle of connecting elements of speech in contemporary English". In G. A. Bonnard (Ed.) *English Studies Today*. Bern: Francke Verlag.
- Bell, A. 1991. *The Language of News Media*. Basil Blackwell, Ltd.
- Bernárdez, E. 1982. *Introducción a la Lingüística del Texto*. Madrid: Espasa-Calpe S. A.
- Bernárdez, E. (Comp.)1987. *Lingüística del Texto*. Madrid: Arco

- Bernárdez, E. 1990. "Las macroestructuras textuales como objeto de estudio lingüístico". *Actas de las 1 Jornadas de Lengua y Literatura Inglesa y Norteamericana*. Logroño: Colegio Universitario.
- Bernárdez, E. 1991. "Linguística del texto composición". *Actas del XII Congreso AEDEAN*, 51-67.
- Bhatia, V. K. 1993. *Analysing Genre: Language Use in Professional Settings*. Harlow, Burnt Mill: Longman.
- Biber, D & E. Finegan 1994. "Intra-textual variation within medical research articles". In N. Oostdijk & P. de Haan (eds.), *Corpus-based Research into Language*. Amsterdam: Rodopi, 201-22.
- Biber, D. 1985. "Investigating macroscopic textual variation through multifeature/multidimensional analyses". *Linguistics*, 23, 155-178.
- Biber, D. 1986. "Spoken and written textual dimensions in English: Resolving the contradictory findings". *Language*, 62: 384-414.
- Biber, D. 1988. *Variation Across Speech and Writing*. Cambridge: CUP.
- Biber, D. 1995. *Dimensions of Register Variation: a Cross-linguistic Comparison*. Cambridge: CUP.
- Billig, M. 1987. *Arguing and Thinking: A Rhetorical Approach to Social Psychology*. Cambridge: Cambridge: CUP.
- Black, J. B. & G. H. Bower 1980. "Story understanding and problem solving". *Poetics*, 9, 233-250.
- Black, J.B. & Wilensky, R. 1979. "An evaluation of story grammars". *Cognitive Science* 3: 213-230.

- Blass, R. 1986. "Cohesion, coherence and relevance". *Notes on Linguistics*, 34, Dept. of Linguistics, Univ College, London and Summer Institute of Linguistics, 41-64.
- Bolinger, D. 1977. "Pronouns and repeated nouns". Bloomington, Indiana: Indiana University Linguistics Club.
- Bolívar, Adriana 1994. *Discurso e Interacción en el Texto Escrito*. Caracas: Universidad Central de Venezuela.
- Bolívar, Adriana 1995. "The structure of newspaper editorials". In M. Coulthard (ed.), 276-294.
- Bouton, L. F. 1970. "Antecedent-contained pro-forms". *C. L. S.* 6: 154-167.
- Bransford, J. D. & M. K. Johnson 1972. "Contextual prerequisites for understanding: Some investigations of comprehension and recall". *Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behavior*, 11, 717-721.
- Bransford, J. D. & M. K. Johnson 1973. "Consideration of some problems of comprehension". In W. G. Chase (ed.) *Visual Information Processing*. New York: Academic Press.
- Bresnan, J. 1970. "An argument against pronominalization". *Linguistic Inquiry* 1: 122-123.
- Bresnan, J. 1971. "Note on the notion 'identity of sense anaphora'". *Linguistic Inquiry*, 2: 589-597.
- Brewer, William F. 1980. "Literary theory, rhetoric and stylistics: Implications for psychology". In R. J. Spiro, B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 221-239.
- Brooke-Rose, C. 1967. "A grammar of metaphor". In Chatman & Levin (eds.) *Essays on the Language of Literature*.

- Brown G. & G. Yule. 1983. *Discourse analysis*. Cambridge: CUP.
- Bühler, Karl (1934)1965. *Sprachtheorie*. 2nd ed. Stuttgart: Fischer.
- Butler, C. 1985. *Statistics in Linguistics*. Oxford: Blackwell.
- Carden, Guy 1982. "Backward anaphora in discourse context". *Journal of linguistics*, 18, 361 - 387.
- Carpenter, P., and M. A. Just. 1977. "Integrative Processes in Comprehension". In D. LaBerge & S. J. Samuels (eds.) *Basic processes in Reading*. Hillsdale, N. J.: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.
- Carrell, P. L. 1987. "Content and formal schemata in ESL reading". *TESOL Quarterly*, Vol 21, No. 3., 461-481.
- Carter, R. 1982. A note on core vocabulary, mimeo. University of Nottingham.
- Carter, R. 1988. "The language of written sports commentary: soccer - a description." In M. Ghadessy, (ed.) *Registers of Written English, Situational Factors and Linguistic Features*. London: Frances Pinter, 17-51.
- Carter, R., and W. Nash. 1990. *Seeing Through Language: An Introduction to Styles of English Writing*. Oxford and Cambridge, MA. : Basil Blackwell.
- Chafe, W. L. 1972. "Discourse structure and human knowledge". In J. B. Carroll & C. Linde Washington (eds.) *Language Comprehension and Acquisition of Knowledge*. Washington D. C.: V. H. Winston and Sons.
- Chafe, W. L. 1974. "Language and consciousness". *Language*, 50, 111-33.

- Chafe, W. L. 1976. "Givenness, contrastiveness, definiteness, subjects, topics, and point of view". In C. N. Li (ed.) *Subject and Topic*. New York: Academic Press, 25-35.
- Chafe, W.L. 1982. Integration and involvement in speaking, writing, and oral literature. In D. Tannen (ed.), *Spoken and Written Language: Exploring Orality and Literacy*. Norwood, NJ: Ablex, . 35-53.
- Charolles, M. 1986. "Text connexity, text coherence and text interpretation processing". In M. Charolles, J. S. Petöfi & E. Sözer (eds.).
- Charolles, M., J. S. Petöfi & E. Sözer (eds.)1986. *Research in Text Connexity and Text Coherence: A Survey*. Hamburg: Helmut Buske Verlag.
- Cicourel, A. 1974. *Cognitive Sociology: Language and Meaning in Social Interaction*. New York: Free Press.
- Clark, H. H. & S. E. Haviland 1977. "Comprehension and the given-new contract". In R. O. Freedle (ed.) *Discourse Production and Comprehension*. Norwood, N.J.: Ablex.
- Cockroft, Robert 1990. "Rhetoric and coherence". *Ocassional Papers in Systemic Linguistics*, 4, 89-101.
- Colley, A. M. 1987. "Text Comprehension". In J. Beech & A. Colley (eds.) *Cognitive Approaches to Reading*. Chichester, New York, etc.: John Wiley & Sons, 113-138.
- Conte, Maria-Elisabeth, Janos S. Petöfi, Emel Sozer (eds.) 1984. *Text and Discourse Connectedness: Proceedings of the Conference on Connexity and Coherence, Urbino, July 16-21*. Amsterdam; Philadelphia: J. Benjamins.

- Cooper, C., Cherry, R., Gerber, R., Fleischer, S., Copley, B., & Sartisky, M. 1980. Writing abilities of regularly-admitted freshmen at SUNY/Buffalo. Unpublished manuscript, University Learning Center, State University of New York at Buffalo.
- Cornish, F. 1986. *Anaphoric Relations in English and French: A Discourse Perspective*. London; Dover, N.H.: Croom Helm. Based on author's thesis (doctoral) Univ. Sussex. 242. p.
- Corum, C. 1973. "Anaphoric peninsulas". *Papers from the Ninth Regional Meeting of the Chicago Linguistic Society*, Chicago: University of Chicago Department of Linguistics, 89-97.
- Coulthard, M. (ed.) 1992. *Advances in Spoken Discourse Analysis*. London: Routledge.
- Coulthard, M. (ed.) 1994. *Advances in Written Text Analysis*. London: Routledge.
- Coulthard, M., and M. Montgomery. (eds.) 1981. *Studies in Discourse Analysis*. London, Boston and Henley: Routledge & Kegan Paul.
- Coulthard, Malcolm 1977. *An Introduction to Discourse Analysis*. London: Longman.
- Coupland, N., J. Coupland, H. Giles & K. Henwood 1988. "Accommodating the elderly: invoking and extending a theory". *Language in Society* 17/1: 1-41.
- Couture, B. 1986. "Effective ideation in written text: a functional approach to clarity and exigence". In B. Couture (ed.), *Functional Approaches to Writing Research Perspectives*. Norwood, NJ: Ablex, 69-91.

- Crystal, D. A *Dictionary of Linguistics & Phonetics*. London: Blackwell
- Crystal, D. and D. Davy. 1969. *Investigating English Style*. London: Longman.
- Cuddon, J. A. 1977 *A Dictionary of Literary Terms*, Harmondsworth, Middlesex: Penguin Books.
- Dahbi, M. 1980 "Writing, testing, and culture". Unpublished paper: Georgetown University.
- Daneman, Meredyth. 1987. "Reading & working memory". In J. Beech & A. Colley (eds.) *Cognitive Approaches to Reading*. Chichester, New York, etc.: John Wiley & Sons, 57-86.
- Daneß, F. 1947. "Functional sentence perspective and the organisation of the text". In F. Daneß, (ed.) *Papers on Functional Sentence Perspective*. The Hague: Mouton.
- Davis, H. and P. Walton (eds.). 1983. *Language, Image, Media*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- de Beaugrande, R. & W. Dressler. 1981. *Introduction to Text Linguistics*. London: Longman.
- Dell, G. S., G. McKoon and, R. Ratcliff. 1983. "The activation of antecedent information during the processing of anaphoric reference in reading". *Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behaviour*, 22, 121-132.
- Dik, S. C. 1981. *The Theory of Functional Grammar. Part 1*. Dordrecht Foris.
- Dillon, G. L. 1981. *Constructing Texts: Elements of a Theory of Composition and Style*. Bloomington: Indiana Universtiy Press.

- Dixon, J. 1987 "The question of genres". In I. Reid (ed.) *The Place of Genre in Learning: Current Debates*. Deakin University: Centre for Studies in Literary Education, Deakin University, 9-21.
- Doloureaux, P.R.N. (1971) "A note on one's Privates". In A. M. Zwicky, et. al. (eds.) *Studies Out in Left Field*, Edmonton, Alberta: Linguistic Research, Inc.
- Downing, Angela 1996. "Register and/or genre?" In I. Vázquez & A. Hornero (eds.), 11-27.
- Dressler, W. 1970. "Towards a semantic deep structure of discourse grammar". *Papers from the Sixth Regional Meeting of the Chicago Linguistic Society*. Dept. Of Linguistics, University of Chicago, 202-209.
- Dressler, W. (ed.) 1978. *Current Trends in Textlinguistics*. Berlin; New York: de Gruyter.
- Edmonson, W. 1981. *Spoken Discourse: A Model for Analysis*. Burnt Mill, Harlow: Longman.
- Eggington, W. & T. Ricento 1983. "Discourse analysis as a pedagogical tool". *California Association of Teachers of English to Speakers of Other Languages*, 9, 74-83.
- Eggington, Suzanne. 1994. *An introduction to Systemic Functional Linguistics*. London: Pinter Publishers.
- Emmott, C. 1989. "Reading between the lines: Building a comprehensive model of participant reference in real narrative". Ph.D. Thesis, University of Birmingham.
- Enkvist, N. E. (1964) "On defining style". In J. Spencer (ed.), *Linguistics and Style*. Oxford University Press, London, 3-56.

- Erkú, F. & J. Gundel 1986. "The pragmatics of indirect anaphors". In J. Vershueren (ed.) *The Pragmatic Perspective: Selected Papers from the 1985 International Pragmatics Conference*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins Publishing Company, 533- 545
- Ervin-Tripp, Susan 1972. "On sociolinguistic rules: Alternation and co-occurrence". In J. J. Gumperz and D. Hymes (eds.), *Directions in Sociolinguistics; The Ethnography of Communication*. New York: Holt Rinehart and Winston, 213-250.
- Ervin-Tripp, Susan M. 1968. "An analysis of the interaction of language, topic and listener". In J. Fishman (ed.) *Readings in the Sociology of Language*, 192-211.
- Evans, G. 1980. "Pronouns". *Linguistic Inquiry*, Volume 11, Number 2 , Spring, 337-362.
- Ewer, J. R. 1979. *The Modals in Formal Scientific Discourse: Function, Meaning and Use*. Santiago, Chile: Research Report, Department of English.
- Fairclough, N. 1995. *Media Discourse*. London, New York, etc.: Edward Arnold
- Ferguson, C. A. 1983. "Sports announcer talk: syntactic aspects of register variation". *Language in Society* 12: 153-72.
- Fernández, S. (1951) *Gramática Española. Los Sonidos, el Nombre y el Pronombre*. Madrid: Revista de Occidente.
- Fillmore, C. J. 1975. *Santa Cruz Lectures on Deixis, 1971*. Bloomington: Indiana University Linguistic Club.

- Findler, N. (ed.) 1979. *Associative Networks. The Representation and Use of Knowledge in Computers*. New York: Academic Press.
- Fitzgerald, J., & D. L. Spiegel 1986. "Textual cohesion and coherence in children's writing". *Research in the Teaching of English*, 20, 263—280.
- Ford, M., J. W. Bresnan & R. M. Kaplan 1982. "A competence based theory of syntactic closure". In J.W. Bresnan (ed.) *The Mental Representation of Grammatical Relations*. Cambridge: MIT Press.
- Foucault, M. 1972. *The Archeology of Knowledge and the Discourse of Language*. Trans. by S. M. Sheridan Smith. New York: Harper.
- Fowler, Roger. 1993. *Language in the News: Discourse and Ideology in the Press*. London, [etc]: Routledge.
- Fox, B. 1987. *Discourse Structure and Anaphora. Written and Conversational English*. Cambridge: C. U. P.
- Francis, G. 1986. *Anaphoric nouns*. Birmingham: ELR.
- Francis, G. 1995. "Labelling discourse: an aspect of nominal-group cohesion". In M. Coulthard (ed.), 83-101.
- Fries, P. H. 1983. "Micro and macro connexity of text". In J. S. Petöfi and E. Sozer (eds.) *Papers in Text Linguistics*. Hamburg: Buske.
- Fries, P. H. 1982. "On repetition and interpretation". *Forum Linguisticum* VII/I: 50-64.
- Fries, P.H. 1992. "Lexico-grammatical patterns and the interpretation of text". *Discourse Processes* 15: 73-91.

- Gardner, Roderick 1987. "The identification of topic in spoken interaction". *Semiotica* 65-1/2, 129-141.
- Garnham, A., J. Oakhill & P. N. Johnson-Laird 1982. "Referential continuity and the coherence of discourse". *Cognition*, 11 29-46.
- Garrod, S., and A. Sanford. 1977. "Interpreting anaphoric relations: The integration of semantic information while reading". *Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behaviour* 16: 77-90.
- Gernsbacher, M. A. & T. Givón. 1995. *Coherence in Spontaneous Text*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins Publishing Company.
- Ghadessy, M. 1988. *Registers of Written English, Situational Factors and Linguistic Features*. London: Frances Pinter.
- Giles, H. & P. F. Powesland 1975. *Speech Styles and Social Evaluation*. London: Academic Press.
- Giles, H., A. Mulac, J. J. Bradac & P. Johnson 1987. "Speech accomodation theory: the first decade and beyond". In M. L. McLaughlin (ed.), *Commuinication Yearbook 10*. Beverly Hills: Sage, 13-48.
- Giora, R. 1984 "Notes towards a theory of text coherence". *Poetics Today*, 6: 699-715.
- Giora, R. 1985. "What's a coherent text ?". In M. Charolles, J. S. Petöfi & E. Sözer (eds.)
- Givón, T. 1979. *Syntax and Semantics Volume 12: Discourse and Syntax*. New York: Academic Press.
- Givón, T. (ed.) 1983. *Topic Continuity in Discourse*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.

- Givón, T. 1995. "Coherence in text vs. coherence in mind". In M. A. Gernsbacher & T. Givón (eds.), 59-115.
- Goatley, A. 1994 "Register and the redemption of relevance theory". *Pragmatics*, volume 4, n° 2: 139-182.
- Goetz, E. T. & B. B. Armbruster 1980. "Psychological correlates of text structure". In R. J. Spiro, B. C. Bruce, and W. F. Brewer (eds.), 201-220.
- Goffman, E. 1981. *Forms of Talk*. Oxford: OUP.
- Grabe, W. 1991. "Current developments in second language reading research". *TESOL Quarterly* 25, 3, 375-406.
- Graesser, A. C. 1981. *Prose Comprehension Beyond the Word*. New York: Springer.
- Graesser, A. C. & G. H. Brown (eds.) 1990. *Inferences and Text Comprehension*. San Diego, etc.: Academic Press.
- Graustein, G. & W. Thiele 1987. *Properties of English Texts*. Leipzig: VEB Verlag Enzyklopädie.
- Green, G. & J. Morgan 1981. "Pragmatics, grammar and discourse". In P. Cole, ed., *Radical Pragmatics*. New York: Academic Press, 167-181.
- Green, Georgia 1989. *Pragmatics and Natural Language Understanding*. Hillsdale, N.J.: Erlbaum.
- Gregory, M. & S. Carroll. 1978. *Language and Situation: Language in Restricted Domains: Sublanguage Description and Processing*. Hillsdale, N.J.: Lawrence Erlbaum.
- Grimes, J. E. 1975. *The Thread of Discourse*. The Hague: Mouton.
- Grinder, J., and P. M. Postal. 1971. "Missing antecedents". *Linguistic Inquiry*, 2, 3, 269-312.

- Grosz, B. 1977. "The representation and use of focus in dialogue understanding". Stanford Research Institute Technical Notes 5.
- Gumperz, John 1982. *Discourse Strategies*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Gumperz, John 1982. *Language and Social Identity*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Gundel, J. 1974. "The role of topic and comment in linguistic theory". Ph.D. dissertation, University of Texas, Austin.
- Gunter, R. 1963. "Elliptical sentences in American English". *Lingua* 12, 137-150.
- Gutwinski, W. 1976. *Cohesion in Literary Texts: A Study of Some Grammatical and Lexical features of English Discourse*. The Hague: Mouton.
- Haberlandt K. & A. C. Graesser. 1990. "Information and buffering of new information". In A C. Graesser & G. H. Bower (eds.), 71-87.
- Haberlandt, K. F. & A. C. Graesser 1985. "Component processes in text comprehension and some of their interactions". *Journal of Experimental Psychology: General*. 114, 357-374.
- Halliday, M. A. K. & R. Hasan 1976. *Cohesion in English*. London: Longman.
- Halliday, M. A. K. & R. Hasan 1980 "Text and context: aspects of language in a social-semiotic perspective". *Sophia Linguistica, Working Papers in Linguistics*, 6, 4-91.
- Halliday, M. A. K. 1979. "Differences between spoken and written language: some implications for literacy teaching". In G. Page, J. Elkins, & B. O'Connor (eds.), *Communication*

- Through Reading: Proceedings of the 4th Australian Reading Conference*, vol II, 37-52. Adelaide: Australian Reading Association.
- Halliday, M. A. K. 1985. "Dimensions of Discourse analysis: grammar". In 1985 *Handbook of Discourse Analysis, Vol. 2*. London: Academic Press.
- Halliday, M. A. K. 1994. *An Introduction to Functional Grammar* (2nd Ed.) London, Melbourne, Auckland: Edward Arnold.
- Halliday, M. A. K. & R. Hasan. 1985. *Language, Context, and Text: Aspects of Language in a Social Semiotic Perspective*. Oxford: OUP.
- Hankamer, J. 1978. "On the nontransformation derivation of some null VP anaphors". *Linguistic Inquiry, Volume 9*, Number 1, Winter, 66-74.
- Hankamer, J. & I. Sag. 1976. "Deep and surface anaphora". *Linguistic Inquiry, Volume 7*, Number, 3, 391-426.
- Harlow, S., and N. Vincent. 1988. "Generative linguistics: an overview". In F. J. Newmeyer (Ed.) *Linguistics: The Cambridge Survey. I Linguistic Theory: Foundations*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Harman, Gilber 1976. "Anaphoric pronouns as bound variables: Syntax or semantics?" *Language*, 52. 78 -81.
- Harnett, G.G. 1986. "Static and dynamic cohesion: Signals of thinking in writing". In B. Couture (ed.) *Functional Approaches to Writing: Research Perspectives*. London: Pinter.
- Harris, Z. 1946. "From morpheme to utterance". *Language* 22/3: 161-183. *Reprinted in Papers in structural and*

- transformational linguistics*. 1970: Dordrecht: Reidel, 100-125.
- Harris, Z. 1952. "Discourse analysis". *Language* 28/1: 1-30. Reprinted in *Papers in Structural and Transformational Linguistics*. 1970: 313-48. Dordrecht: Reidel
- Hasan, R. 1971. "Rime and reason in literature". In S. Chatman (ed.), *Literary Style: A Symposium*. New York: Oxford University
- Hasan, R. 1975. "The place of stylistics in the study of verbal art". In H. Ringbom (ed.), *Style and Text*. Amsterdam: Skriptor.
- Hasan, R. 1978. "Text in the Systemic-functional model". In W. Dressler (ed.) *Current trends in Textlinguistics. Papers in Textlinguistics* 20, 2. Hamburg: Helmut Buske Verlag, 369-390.
- Hasan, R. 1984. "Coherence and cohesive harmony". In J. Flood (ed.) *Understanding Reading Comprehension*. Delaware: International Reading Association, 181-219.
- Hasan, R. 1985. "Texture". In M. A. K. Halliday & R. Hasan, *Language, Context, and Text: Aspects of Language in a Social Semiotic Perspective*. Oxford: OUP.
- Haswell, Richard H. 1988. "Critique: length of text and the measurement of cohesion". *Research in the Teaching of English, Vol 22, N° 4, December*, 428-433.
- Hatakeyama, K., J. S. Petöfi & E. Sözer 1985. "Text, connexity, cohesion, coherence". In M. Charolles, J. S. Petöfi & E. Sözer (eds.)

- Hattim, B and I. Mason. 1990. *Discourse and the Translator*.
Burnt Millow, Harlow: Longman.
- Haviland, S. E. & H. H. Clark 1974. "What's new? Acquiring
information as a process in comprehension". *Journal of
Verbal Learning and Verbal Behaviour*, 13: 512-21.
- Hawkins, J. A. 1978. *Definiteness and Indefiniteness*. London:
Croom Helm.
- Heinemann, W. & Viehweger D. 1991. *Textlinguistik*. Eine
Einführung. Tübingen: Niemeyer.
- Hemphill, L. 1973. *The Relationship of Language and Belief:
With Special Emphasis on English 'For' Constructions*. Ph.D.
thesis Linguistics Department, Stanford University.
- Hendricks, W. O. 1976. *Grammars of Style and Styles of
Grammar*. Amsterdam: North-Holland Publishing Company.
- Heritage, J.D. and D. R. Watson 1979. "Formulations as
conversation objects". In *Everyday Language: Studies in
Ethnomethodology*, George Psathas (ed.), 123-162. New York:
Irvington.
- Hetzron, R. 1970. "Nonverbal sentences and degrees of
definiteness in Hungarian". *Language*, 46, 899-927.
- Hinds, J. 1979. "Organizational patterns in discourse". In T.
Givón, (ed.) *Syntax and Semantics Volume 12: Discourse and
Syntax*. New York: Academic Press.
- Hlavsa, Z. 1968. "On the operators of reference". *Travaux
Linguistiques de Prague* 3. 95-103.
- Hobbs, J. R. 1979. "Coherence and coreference". *Cognitive
Science*, 3: 67-90.

- Hoey, M. 1983. *On the Surface of Discourse*. London: George Allen & Unwin.
- Hoey, M. 1991. *Patterns of Lexis in Text*. OxfordOUP.
- Hofmann, T. R. 1989. "Paragraphs, & anaphora". *Journal of Pragmatics* 13, North Holland, 239-250.
- Horowitz, D. 1986 "What professors actually require: Academic tasks for the ESL classroom". *TESOL Quarterly*, 20, 445-462.
- Huckin, T. N. & L. A. Olsen, 1983. *English for Science and Technology: A Handbook for Nonnative Speakers*. New York: McGraw-Hill.
- Huddleston, R. (1978) "On classifying anaphoric relations". *Lingua* 45: 333-54.
- Huddleston, R. D. 1980. *English Grammar: An Outline*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Huddleston, R. D. 1984. *Introduction to the Grammar of English*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Huggins, A. W. F. & Marilyn Jager Adams 1980. "Syntactic aspects of reading comprehension". In R. J. Spiro, B. C. Bruce, and W. F. Brewer (eds.), 87-112.
- Hughes, G. 1988. *Words in Time*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- Hunt, K.W. 1965. *Grammatical Structures Written at Three Grade Levels*. (Research Rep. No. 3), Urbana, IL: NTCE.
- Hunt, K.W. 1977. Early blooming and late blooming syntactic structures". In C.R. Cooper & L Odell (eds.), *Evaluating Writing*. Urbana, IL: NTCE, 91-104.
- Hurtig, Richard 1977. "Toward a functional theory of discourse". In R. O. Freedle (ed.) *Discourse Processes: Advances in*

Research and Theory, vol 1: Discourse Production and Comprehension. New Jersey: Ablex, 89-106.

Hymes, D. 1984. "Sociolinguistics: stability and consolidation". *International Journal of the Sociology of Language* 45: 39-45.

Hřebíček, L. 1985. "Text as a unit and co-references". In T. T. Balmer (ed.) *Linguistic Dynamics: Discourses, Procedures and Evolution.* Berlin and New York: Walter de Gruyter.

Iser, W. 1975. *The Implied Reader.* Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Jakobson, R. 1956. "Two aspects of language and two types of aphasic disturbances". In R. Jakobson & M. Halle (eds.) *Fundamentals of Language.* The Hague: Mouton, 55-82.

Jakobson, R. 1988. "The metaphoric and metonymic poles". In D. Lodge (ed.) *Modern Criticism and Theory: A Reader.* London & New York: Longman.

Jespersen, O. 1933. *Essentials of English Grammar.* London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd.

Johnson, P. 1981. "Effects on reading comprehension of language complexity and cultural background of a text". *TESOL Quarterly*, 15, 169-181.

Johnstone, B. 1987. "An Introduction". *Text*, 7, 205-214.

Jordan, M. P. 1984a. *Fundamentals of Technical Description.* Malabar, Florida: Robert E. Krieger Pub.Co.

Jordan, M. P. 1984b. *Prose Structures in Everyday English Texts.* London: George Allen and Unwin.

Jordan, M. P. 1984c. "Complex lexical cohesion in the English clause and sentence: An extension of the system of nominal

- group continuity in everyday English use". In A. Manning, P. Martin & K. McCalla (eds.) Columbia S. C.: Hornbeam Press.
- Jordan, M. P. 1985. "Non-thematic re-entry: an introduction to and extension of the system of nominal-group reference/substitution in everyday English use". J. D. Benson & W. S. Greaves (eds.) *Systemic Perspectives in Discourse, Volume 1: Selected Theoretical Papers from the 9th International Systemic Workshop*. New Jersey: Ablex.
- Jordan, M. P. 1995. "Pragmatic, stylistic and grammatical limitations on choice: A study of cause-effect signalling in English". Paper presented at the 7th International Systemic Functional Workshop, Univ. Valencia, Spain.
- Jucker, A. H. 1986 *News interviews: A Pragmalinguistic Analysis*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins.
- Jucker, A. H. 1992. *Social Stylistics: Syntactic Variation in British Newspapers*. Berlin and New York. : Mouton de Gruyter.
- Kantor, R. 1976. "Discourse connection and demonstratives". Delivered at the Winter LSA Meeting in Philadelphia.
- Kaplan, J. P. 1989. *English Grammar: Principles and Facts*. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice Hall.
- Keenen, E. O. & B. B: Shieffelin 1976. "Topics as a discourse notion: A study of topic in the conversations of children and adults". In *Subject and Topic*, Charles N. Li (ed.), 335-384. New York: Academic Press.
- Kempson, R. M. 1984. "Pragmatics, anaphora, and logical Form". In Schiffrin, D. (ed.) *Meaning, Form and Use in Context*:

Linguistic Applications. Washington, D. C.: Georgetown University Press.

Kintsch, W. 1974. *The Representation of Meaning in Memory*. Hillsdale, N. J. Lawrence Erlbaum.

Kintsch, W. 1991. "How readers construct situation models for stories: The role of syntactic cues and causal inferences". In A. F. Healy, S. M. Kosslyn, & R. M. Shiffrin (eds.) *From learning processes to Cognitive Processes: Essays in Honor of William K. Estes*. Hillsdale, N.J.: Erlbaum, 261-78,

Kintsch, Walter. 1995. "How readers construct situation models for stories: The role of syntactic cues and causal inferences". In M. A. Gernsbacher & T. Givón (eds.), 139-160.

Klein, E. & M. Johnson. 1986. "Discourse anaphora and parsing". In *Proceedings of the 11th. International Conference on Computational Linguistics and the 24th. Annual Meeting of the Association for Computational Linguistics*. Bonn University: Institut für Kommunikationsforschung und Phonetik.

Koster, J. & E. Renland (eds.)1991. *Long-distance anaphora*. CUP.

Kress, G. 1985. *The Linguistic Expression of Social Meaning: Discourse, Genre, Text*. Geelong, Vic.: Deakin University Press.

Kroll, B. 1977. "Combining ideas in written and spoken English: A look at subordination and coordination". In E. O. Keenan & T. Bennett (eds.), *Discourse Across Time and Space*. Southern California occasional papers in Linguistics (5). Los Angeles: University of Southern California, 69-108.

Labov, W. 1968. *The Social Stratification of English in New York City*. Washington, DC: Center for Applied Linguistics.

- Labov, W. & J. Waletzky 1967. "Narrative analysis. Oral versions of personal experience". In J. Helm (ed.) *Essays on the verbal and visual arts*. Seattle: University of Washington Press, 12-44.
- Labov, W. 1972. "The transformation of experience in narrative syntax". In W. Labov, *Language in the Inner City*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 219-247.
- Lackstrom, J. 1978. "Teaching modals in EST discourse". In L. Trimble, M. T. Trimble & K. Drobnik (eds.), *English for Specific Purposes: Science and Technology*. Corvallis: Oregon State University, 53-73.
- Lakoff, G. & J. R. Ross 1973 *Is Deep Structure Necessary?* IULC, Bloomington.
- Lakoff, R. 1974. "Remarks on *This* and *That*". *Proceedings of the Tenth Regional Meeting of the Chicago Linguistic Society*, 345-56.
- Landis, M. H. & H. E. Burt 1924. "A study of conversations". *The Journal of Comparative Psychology* 4, 81-89.
- Langacker, R. W. 1987. *Foundations of Cognitive Linguistics*. Stanford: Stanford U. P.
- Leech, G. 1981. *Semantics*. Harmondsworth: Penguin Books.
- Lesgold, A. M., S. F. Roth & M. E. Curtis 1979. "Foregrounding effects in discourse comprehension". *Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behavior*, 18, 291-308.
- Li, Charles N. 1976. "Subject and topic: A new typology of language". In C. N. Li (Ed.) *Subject and Topic*. New York: Academic Press.

- Linde, C. 1979. "Focus of attention and the choice of pronouns in discourse". In T. Givón (ed.) *Syntax and Semantics*, vol.12. New York: Academic Press.
- Long, M. H., W. Allen, A. Cyr, C. Pomeroy, E. Richard, N. Spada & P. Vogel 1980. *Reading English for Academic Study*. Rowley, Mass.: Newbury House.
- Longacre, R. E. 1979. *The Paragraph as a Grammatical Unit*. The University of Texas at Arlington: Summer Institute of Linguistics.
- Lovejoy, Kim Brian 1991. "Cohesion and information strategies in academic writing: analysis of passages in three disciplines". *Linguistics and Education* 3, 315 - 343.
- Lovejoy, Kim Brian 1991. "Information management and cohesion in the study of written discourse". *Linguistics and Education* 3, 251 - 273.
- Lybbert, E.K. 1972. "Substitutes as 'replacements'" *Linguistics* 91, 5-16.
- Lyons, J. 1977. *Semantics.*, 2 vols. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Lyons, J. 1981 *Language, Meaning and Context*, Bungay: Fontana.
- Mandler, J. M. & N. S. Johnson 1977. "Remembrance of things parsed: Story structure and recall". *Cognitive Psychology*, 9, 111-191.
- Mann, William C. & Thompson, S. A. 1988. "Rhetorical structure theory: Toward a functional theory of text organization". *Text*. 8/3: 243-281.

- Martin, J. R. 1985 "Process and text: two aspects of human semiosis". In J. D. Benson & W. S. Greaves (eds.) *Systemic Perspectives on Discourse, I: Selected Theoretical Papers from the 9th International Systemic Workshop*. Norwood, NJ: Ablex, 248-274.
- Martin, J. R. 1985. *Factual Writing*. Deakin University Press (reprinted 1989. Oxford: Oxford University Press).
- Martin, J.R. 1989. 'Ideation: the company words keep'. Paper delivered to the 10th Finnish Summer School of Linguistics, University of Jyväskylä, June 8th, 1989.
- Martin, James. 1992. *English Text: System and Structure*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- McCarthy, M. 1987. "Some vocabulary patterns in conversation". In R. Carter & M. McCarthy (eds.) 1987: 181-200.
- McCarthy, M. 1991. *Discourse Analysis for Language Teachers*. Cambridge: CUP.
- McCarthy, M. 1994 "It this and that". In M. Coulthard (ed.), 267 - 275.
- McKoon, G., & R. Ratcliff 1992 "Inference during reading". *Psychological Review*, 99: 440-66.
- Mederos Martín, H. 1988. *Procedimientos de Cohesion en Español Contemporáneo*. Diputación Insular de Tenerife.
- Mervis, Carolyn B. 1980. "Category structure and the development of categorization". In R. J. Spiro, B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 279-308.
- Metzing, M. 1975. *Frame Conceptions and Text Understanding*. Berlin: de Gruyter.

- Meyer, B. & G. E. Rice 1982. "The interaction of reader strategies and the organization of text. *Text*, 2(1): 155-92.
- Millis, K., K. D. Morgan & A. C. Graesser 1990. The influence of knowledge-based inferences on the reading time of expository text. In A. C. Graesser & G. H. Bower (eds.), 197-212.
- Minsky, M. 1975. "A framework for the representation of knowledge". In P. H. Winston (ed.) *The Psychology of Computer Vision*. New York: McGraw-Hill.
- Minsky, M. 1986. *The Society of the Mind*. New York: Simon Schuster.
- Mitchell, D.C. 1987. "Lexical guidance in human parsing: Locus and processing characteristics". In M. Coulthard (ed.) *Attention and Performance XII: The Psychology of Reading*. Hillsdale, N.J.: Erlbaum.
- Mitchell, Don C. 1987. "Reading and Syntactic Analysis". In Beech, John; & Ann Colley (eds.) *Cognitive Approaches to Reading*. Chichester, New York, etc.: John Wiley & Sons, 87-112.
- Moenthal, P. B. 1985. "Defining the expository discourse continuum: towards a taxonomy of expository text types". *Poetics* 14: 387-414.
- Morgan, J.L. & M.B. Sellner. 1980. 'Discourse and linguistic theory'. In R. J. Spiro (ed.) In R. J. Spiro, B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 165-200.
- Morgan, Jerry 1978. "Two kinds of convention in indirect speech acts. In Peter Cole, ed., *Radical Pragmatics*, New York: Academic Press, 261-280.

- Morrow, Daniel G., Gordon H. Bower & Steven L. Greenspan 1990. "Situation-based inferences during narrative comprehension". In A C. Graesser & G. H. Bower (eds.), 123-136.
- Murray Singer, Russell Revlin & Michael Halldorson 1990. "Bridging-inferences and Enthymemes". In A C. Graesser & G. H. Bower (eds.), 35-51.
- Nathinger, J. R. & J. S. Decarnco 1992. *Lexical Phrases and Language Teaching*. Cambridge: C.U.P.
- Neuner, J.L. 1985 "Writing quality, coherence, and cohesion". *Research in the Teaching of English*, 19, 92—105.
- Newmark, Peter 1988 *A Textbook of Translation*. London: Prentice Hall.
- Norman, D. A. & D. E. Rumelhart 1975. "Memory and knowledge". In D. A. Norman & D. E. Rumelhart (eds.) *Explorations in Cognition*. San Francisco: Freeman.
- Odell, L., & Goswami, D. 1982. Writing in a non-academic setting. *Research in the Teaching of English*, 16, 201.
- Ostler, S. E. 1981. "English in parallels: A study of Arabic style". Unpublished paper: University of Southern California.
- Oxford Advanced Learner's Dictionary 1989. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Paduceva, E. V. 1968. "Anaphoric relations and their representation in the deep structure of a text". *Proceedings of the Tenth International Congress of Linguistics*, 224-232. The Hague: Mouton .
- Papegaaij, B., & K. Schubert. 1988. *Text Coherence in Translation*. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter & Co.

- Parsons, G. 1990. *A Comparative Study of the Writing of Scientific Texts. Focusing on Cohesion and Coherence*. Nottingham: Depart. of English Studies Univ. of Nottingham.
- Pennock, B. 1994. "The rhetoric of coherence: Reformulation, repetition and augmentation of given information in newspaper texts", *Actas del Primer Encuentro Interdisciplinar Sobre Retórica, Texto y Comunicación* (9, 10 y 11 de diciembre de 1993). 227-237. Cadiz.
- Pennock, B. & E. Llacer "Text coherence in scientific translations". Unpublished talk given at the *Seventh International Systemic-Functional Workshop. Language as Choice*. Universidad Internacional Menéndez Pelayo, Valencia, 29 of July 1995.
- Perfetti, C. A. & S. R. Goldman. 1974. "Thematization and sentence retrieval". *Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behaviour* 13: 70-9.
- Perry, J. 1988 "The problem of the essential indexical". In N. Salmon & S. Soames (eds.), *Propositions and Attitudes*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Petöfi, J. S. (Ed.)1988. *Text and Discourse Constitution. Empirical Aspects, Theoretical Approaches*. Berlin/New York: Walter de Gruyter.
- Phillips, M. 1983. "Lexical macrostructures in science text". Ph. D Thesis, University of Birmingham.
- Phillips, M. 1989. *The Lexical Structure of Text*. (Discourse Analysis Monographs No 12). Birmingham English Language Research, University of Birmingham. Hoey 1..

- Phillips, M. 1985. *Aspects of Text Structure: an Investigation of the Lexical Organization of Text*. Amsterdam: North Holland.
- Pike, K.L. 1967. 2nd. edition [1954-9]. *Language in Relation to a Unified Theory of the Structure of Human Behaviour*. The Hague: Mouton.
- Pike, K.L. & Pike E.G. 1977. "Grammatical analysis". *Summer Institute of Linguistics Publications in Linguistics No 53*. Dallas: Summer Institute of Linguistics and The University of Texas at Arlington.
- Poole, M & Field, T.W. 1976. A comparison of oral and written code elaboration. *Language and Speech*, 19, 305-311.
- Postal, P. M. 1969. "Anaphoric islands". *Papers from the Fifth Regional Meeting of the Chicago Linguistic Society, Chicago: University of Chicago Department of Linguistics*, 205-239.
- POSTAL, P. M. (1971) "Problems in linguistic representation of reference". In D. Steinberg & D. Jacobovits (eds.) L.A., *Semantics: An Interdisciplinary Reader in Philosophy, Linguistics and Psychology*. Cambridge: CUP.
- Prince, E. 1981. "Toward a taxonomy of given-new information". In P. Cole (ed.), *Radical Pragmatics*. New York: Academic Press.
- Pütz, M. 1992. *Thirty years of linguistic evolution*. Philadelphia/Amsterdam: John Benjamins Publishing Company.
- Quirk, R. et al. 1985. *A Comprehensive Grammar of the English Language*. London & New York: Longman.

- Randquist, M. G. 1985. "The barely visible glue. Some aspects of textual connectedness". In M. Charolles, J. S. Petöfi & E. Sözer (eds.)
- Rayner, K., M. Carlson & L. Frazier 1983. "The interaction of syntax and semantics during sentence processing: Eye movements in the analysis of semantically biased sentences". *Journal of Verbal Learning and Verbal Behavior*, 22, 358-374.
- Reid, J. 1989. "ESL expectations in higher education: The expectations of the academic audience". In B. Kroll (ed.), *Second language Writing: Research Insights for the Classroom*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 191-210.
- Reid, J. 1992. "A computer text analysis of four cohesion devices in English discourse by native and nonnative writers". *Journal of Second Language Writing*, 1 (2), 79-107.
- Reinhart, T. 1980. "Conditions of coherence". *Poetics Today* 1(4):61-180.
- Reinhart, T. (1981) "Pragmatics and Linguistics: An analysis of sentence topic". *Philosophica* 27: 1, 53-59.
- Reiß, K, y J. Vermeer 1976. *Texttyp und Übersetzungsmethode. Der Operative Text*. Regensburg: Scriptor Verlag Kronberg.
- Richards, J. C., J. Platt & H. Platt 1992 (2nd Ed.) *Dictionary of Language teaching and Applied Linguistics*. Burnt Mill, Harlow: Longman.
- Riesbeck, C. 1975. "Conceptual analysis". In R. C. Schank (ed.) *Conceptual Information Processing*. Amsterdam: North Holland.

- Rigau i Oliver, G. 1981. *Gramàtica del Discurs*. Bellaterra: UAB.
- Rimmon-Kenan, S. 1980. "The paradoxical status of repetition". *Poetics Today*. 1/4: 151-159.
- Rumelhart, D. E. 1975. 'Notes on schema for stories' in Bobrow, D.G. & Collins, A. (eds.) *Representations and Understanding: Studies in Cognitive Science*. N.Y.: Academic Press, 211-236.
- Rumelhart, David E. 1980. "Schemata: the building blocks of cognition". In R. J. Spiro, B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 33-58.
- Sag, I. A. 1979. "The nonunity of anaphora?". *Linguistic Inquiry*, 10, 1, Winter, 152-164.
- Salkie, R. 1995. *Text and Discourse Analysis*. London and New York: Routledge.
- Sandford, A. J. & L. M. Moxey. 1995. "Aspects of coherence in written language: a psychological perspective". In M. A. Gernsbacher & T. Givón (eds.), 161-187.
- Sanford, C. A. & S. Garrod 1981. *Understanding Written Language*. Chichester: Wiley.
- Scarcella, R. 1984. How writers orient their readers in expository essays: A comparative study of native and non-native English writers. *TESOL Quarterly*, 671-688.
- Schacter, D. L. 1989. "Memory". In M. I. Posner (ed.), *Foundations of Cognitive Science*. Cambridge, MA: MIT press.
- Schank, R. C. 1982. *Dynamic Memory*. New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Schank, R. C., and R. P. Abelson. 1977. *Scripts, Plans, Goals and Understanding*. Hillsdale, N. J. : Lawrence Erlbaum.

- Schank, R., Abelson C., & R. P. Abelson. 1987. *Guiones, planes, metas y entendimiento*. Barcelona, Paidós.
- Schank, Roger 1977. "Rules and topics in conversation". *Cognitive Science* 1(4), 421-441.
- Schiffrin, D. 1988. *Discourse Markers*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Schlegloff, Emanuel A. 1972. "Notes on conversational practice: formulating place". In D. Sudnow (ed.), *Studies in Social Interaction*, New York: Free Press, 75-119.
- Schopen, T. 1973. "Ellipsis as grammatical indeterminacy". *Foundations of Language* 10, 65-78.
- Scinto, L. F. M. 1982. *The Acquisition of Functional Composition Strategies for Text*. Hamburg: Helmut Buske Verlag.
- Searle, J. R. 1980. "Minds, brains, and programs". *The Behavioral and Brain Sciences* 3, 427-517.
- Searle, J. R. 1990. "Who is computing with the brain". Author's reponse, *The Behavioral and Brain Sciences* 13 (4), 632-640.
- Secco, D. & P. Van Den Broek. 1984. "Causal cohesion and story coherence". In H. Mandl, N.L. Stein & T. Trabasso (eds.) *Learning and Comprehension of Text* . 83-112. Hillsdale, N.J.: Erlbaum.
- Seifert, Colleen M. 1990. "Content-based inferences in text". In A C. Graesser & G. H. Bower (eds.), 103-122.
- Selinker, L. 1979. "On the use of informants in discourse analysis and language for specialized purposes. *IRAL* 17: 189-215.
- Shepherd, Susan, C. 1990. "Functions of Repetition: Variation in Narrative and Conversational Discourse". In J. Edmundson, C

- Feagin, & P. Mulhlausler, *Development and Diversity*, 629-638.
- Shobun, Edward, J. 1980. "Theories of semantic memory: Approaches to knowledge and sentence comprehension". In R. J. Spiro (ed.) In R. J., B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 309-330.
- Silberstein, Sandra 1994. *Techniques and Resources in Teaching Reading*. New York: Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Sinclair, J. McH. & R. M. Coulthard. 1975. *Towards an Analysis of Discourse*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Sinclair, J. & M. Coulthard 1992. "Towards an analysis of discourse". In M. Coulthard (ed.), 1-34.
- Sinclair, J. 1991. *Corpus, Concordance, Collocation*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Sinclair, J. McH. 1988. "Sense and structure in lexis". In J. D. Benson, M.J. Cummings & W.S. Greaves (eds.) *Linguistics in a Systemic Perspective. Vol. 39 of Current Issues in Linguistic Theory: 73-97*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins Pub. Co.
- Sinclair, J. McH. 1966. Taking a poem to pieces. In R. Fowler (ed.), *Essays on Language and Style*. London: Routledge & Kegan Paul.
- Smith, C. S. 1971 "Sentences in discourse: an anlysis of a discourse by Bertrand Russell". *Journal of Linguistics* 7: 213-36.
- Sørenson, H. S. 1959. "The function of the definite article in modern English". *English Studies*, 40, 400-420.

- Sperber, D., & D. Wilson. 1986. *Relevance: Communication and Cognition*. London: Blackwell.
- Spiro, R. J., B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.) 1980. *Theoretical Issues in Reading Comprehension: Perspectives from Cognitive Psychology, Linguistics, Artificial Intelligence and Education. Psychology of Reading*. Hillsdale, N. J. : Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.
- Spiro, Rand J. 1980 "Constructive process in prose comprehension and recall". In R. J., B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 245-278.
- Sproat, R. 1988. "On Anaphoric islandhood". In M. Hammond & M. Noonan (eds.) *Theoretical Morphology: Approaches in Modern Linguistics*. London: Academic Press, Inc.
- Steffensen, M. S. & R. C. Anderson 1979 "A cross cultural perspective on reading comprehension. *Reading Research Quarterly*, 15, 10-29.
- Stein, N. & Glenn, C. 1979. "An analysis of story comprehension in elementary school children". In R. Freedle (ed.) *New Directions in Discourse Processing*. Norwood, N. Y: Ablex, 53-120.
- Steinberg, David D. 1982. *Psycholinguistics: Language, Mind and the World*. London & New York: Longman.
- Stenning, K. 1978. "Anaphora as an approach to pragmatics", in M. Halle, J. Bresnan & G.A. Miller, eds., *Linguistic Theory and Psychological Reality*, Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT Press, 162-200.
- Stoddard, Sara E. 1991 *Text and Texture: Patterns of Cohesion*. Norwood, N.J.: Ablex Pub. Corp.

- Stotsky, W. 1983. "Types of lexical cohesion in expository writing: implications for developing the vocabulary of academic discourse". *College Composition and Communication* 34/4: 430-446.
- Stubbs, M. *Discourse Analysis*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Swales, J. 1981. "Aspects of article introductions" (Aston ESP Research Report No. 1) University of Aston, Birmingham, England.
- Swales, J. 1985. "A genre-based approach to language across the curriculum". Paper given at RELC Conference, Singapore.
- Swales, John M. 1990. *Genre Analysis*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Szabo, Z. 1985. "The importance of text coherence for the global stylistic analysis". In M. Charolles, J. S. Petöfi & E. Sözer (eds.)
- Tadros, A. 1981. "Prediction in Economics Text". *Discourse Analysis Monographs*, N° 10, English Language Research. Birmingham: University of Birmingham.
- Tannen, Deborah. 1987. Repetition in conversation: Towards a poetics of talk. *Language*, Volume 63, Number 3, 575-605.
- Tannen, Deborah, 1989. *Talking Voices: Repetition, Dialogue and Imagery in Conversational Discourse*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Taylor, J. R. 1989. *Linguistic Categorization. Prototypes in Linguistic Theory*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.
- Tfouni, Leda Verdiani & Roberta L. Klatzky 1983. "A discourse analysis of deixis: pragmatic, cognitive and semantic factors in the comprehension of *that*, *here*, and *there*". *Journal of Child Language*, 10, 123 - 133.

- Thakerer, J., H. Giles & J. Cheshire 1982. "Psychological and linguistic parameters of speech accommodation theory". In C. Fraser & K. R. Scherer (eds.), *Advances in the Social Psychology of Language*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 205-55.
- Thompson, Susan 1994. "Aspects of Cohesion in Monologue". *Applied Linguistics*, Vol 15, No. 1, 58 - 75.
- Thorndyke, P. 1977. "Cognitive structures in comprehension and memory of narrative discourse". *Cognitive Psychology* 9: 77-110.
- Thorndyke, P. W. 1977. "Cognitive structures in comprehension and memory of narrative discourse". *Cognitive Psychology*, 9, 77-110.
- Todorov, T. 1991. *Genres in Discourse*. Porter, C. (trans) Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Tomlin, Russel, S. (ed.) 1987. *Coherence and Grounding in Discourse: Outcome of a Symposium, Eugene, Oregon, June 1984*. Amsterdam; Philadelphia: J. Benjamins Pub. Co.
- Trabasso, T., T.
- Trabasso, T., P. van den Broek, & S. Suh 1989 "Logical necessity and transitivity of causal relations in stories". *Discourse Processes*, 12: 1-25.
- Trabasso, T., S. Suh & P. Payton. 1995. "Explanatory coherence in understanding and talking about events". In M. A. Gernsbacher & T. Givón (eds.), 189-214.
- Traxler, M. J. & M. A. Gernsbacher 1995 "Improving coherence in written communication". In M. A. Gernsbacher & T. Givón (eds.), 215-237.

- Trudgill, P. 1974. *Sociolinguistics: An Introduction*. New York: Penguin.
- Tsohatzidis, S. L. (Ed.) 1990. *Meanings and Prototypes. Studies in Linguistic Categorization*. London/New York: Routledge.
- Turner, G. W. 1973. *Stylistics*. Harmondsworth, Middlesex: Penguin Books.
- Tyler, A. 1994. "The role of repetition in perceptions of discourse coherence". *Journal of Pragmatics* 21, 671-688.
- Tyler, A., A. Jefferies & C. Davies, 1988. "The effect of discourse structuring devices on listener perceptions of coherence in nonnative university teachers' spoken discourse". *World Englishes* 7: 101-110.
- Tyler, A. & C. Davies, 1990. "Cross-cultural communication missteps". *Text* 10: 385-411-
- Ullman, S. 1967. *Semantica*, Madrid: Aguilar.
- Unger, C. 1996. "The scope of discourse connectives: implications for discourse organization". *Journal of Linguistics*, 32: 403-438.
- Ure, J. N. 1971. "Lexical density and register differentiation". In G. E. Perren & J. L. M. Trim (eds.) *Applications of linguistics: selected papers of the Second International Congress of Applied Linguistics*. Cambridge: C.U.P.
- van den Broek, Paul 1990. "Causal inferences; and the comprehension of narrative texts". In A. C. Graesser & G. H. Bower (eds.), 175-196.
- van Dijk Teun A. 1972. *Some aspects of Text Grammars*. The Hague: Mouton.

- van Dijk, T. A. 1977. *Text and Context: Explorations in the Semantics and Pragmatics of Discourse*. London & New York: Longman.
- van Dijk, T. A. 1983. "Discourse analysis: Its development and application to the structure of news". In *Journal of Communication*, Spring 1983.
- van Dijk, T. A. 1986. "News schemata". In C. R. Cooper & S. Greenbaum (eds.), *Studying Writing. Linguistic Approaches* Beverly Hills, CA: Sage, 155- 186
- van Dijk, T. A. 1987. *Communicating Racism. Ethnic Prejudice in Thought and Talk*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
- van Dijk, T. A. 1988a. *Macrostructures*. Hillsdale, N.J.: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Publishers.
- van Dijk, T. A. 1988b. *News Analysis: Case Studies of International News in the Press*. Hillsdale, N.J.: Lawrence Earlbaum.
- van Dijk Teun A. (ed.) 1988c. *Handbook in Discourse Analysis*. New York: Academic Press.
- van Dijk T. A. 1980. *La Noticia como Discurso. Comprensión, Estructura y Producción de la Información*. Barcelona: Paidós 1990.
- van Dijk, T. A. & W. Kintsch, 1983. *Strategies of Discourse Comprehension*. New York: Academic Press.
- Vázquez, I & A. Hornero (eds.), *Current Issues in Genre Theory*. Zaragoza: Mira Editores.
- Vázquez, I. 1996. "Register, Genre and Linguistic Choice". In I. Vázquez & A Hornero (eds.), 29-50.

- Ventola, E. 1987. *The Structure of Social Interaction: A Systemic Approach to the Semiotics of Service Encounters*. London: Francis Pinter.
- Verdiani Tfouni, L., & R. L. Klatzky. 1983. "A discourse analysis of deixis: pragmatic, cognitive and semantic factors in the comprehension of 'this', 'that', 'here' and 'there'". *Journal of Child Language*, 10, 123-133.
- Wagener-Wender, M. & K. F. Wender 1990. Expectations, mental representations, and spatial inferences. In A C Graesser & G. H. Bower (eds.), 137-157.
- Wales, K. 1989. *A Dictionary of Stylistics*. London & New York: Longman.
- Wallace, W. D. 1977. "How registers register: A study in the language of news and sports." *Studies in Linguistic Sciences* 7.1: 46-78.
- Wardaugh, R. 1986. *An Introduction to Sociolinguistics*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- Watson, J. & R. J. Potter 1962. "An analytic unit for the study of interaction". *Human Relations* 15, 245-263.
- Watt, W.C. 1975. "The indiscreteness with which impenetrables are penetrated". *Lingua* 37, 85-124.
- Webber, B. L. 1980. "Syntax beyond the sentence: Anaphora". In R. J., B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 141-164.
- Werlich, E. 1983. *A Text Grammar of English*. Hamburg: Helmut Buske Verlag.
- Werth, P. 1984. *Focus, Coherence, and Emphasis*. London; Dover, N.H.: Croom Helm.
- Widdowson, H. G. 1975. *Stylistics and the Teaching of Literature*. London: Longman.

- Wilks, Y. 1977. "Natural language understanding within the AI paradigm: a survey". In A. Zampolli (ed.) *Linguistic Structure Processing*. Amsterdam: North Holland.
- Winston, P. 1977. *Artificial Intelligence*. Rowley Mass.: Addison-Wesley.
- Winter, E. O. 1971 "Connection in science material: a proposition about the semantics of clause relations". *C.I.L.T. Papers and Reports* 7: 41-52. London Centre for Information on Language Teaching and Research for British Association for Applied Linguistics.
- Winter, E.O. 1974. "Replacement as a function of repetition: a study of some of its principle features in the clause relations of contemporary English". Ph.D. Thesis, University of London.
- Winter, E.O. 1976. "Fundamentals of information structure: a pilot manual for further development according to student need". The Hatfield Polytechnic.
- Winter, E.O. 1977. "A clause relation approach to English texts: a study of some predictive liexical items in written discourse". *Instructional Science* 6/1: 1-92.
- Winter, E.O. 1979. Replacement as a fundamental function of the sentence in context. *Forum Linguisticum* 4/2: 95-133.
- Witte, S. P. & Faigley, L. 1981. "Coherence, cohesion and writing quality". *College Composition and Communication*, 32, 189—204.
- Wittgenstein, L. (1918) *Tractatus Logico Philosophicus*. New York: The Humanities Press [1961].
- Woods, W. A. 1980. "Multiple theory formation in speech and reading". In R. J., B. C. Bruce, & W. F. Brewer (eds.), 59-82.

Bibliography

Young, D. J. 1980. *The Structure of English Clauses*. London:
Hutchinson.

Zipf, G. K. 1949. *Human Behaviour and the Principle of Least
Effort*. Cambridge, MA: Addison-Wesley.

A new spin on pay policy

Mr Brown must discipline the private sector too

(P1L1) No interview with Gordon Brown is allowed to get very far these days before words like fairness, priorities, tight control, and tough choices make a prominent appearance. (P1L2) Together, they have become a ruthlessly honed mantra which the Shadow Chancellor recites at every opportunity. (P1L3) And Mr Brown is right. (P1L4) Our ICM poll this week showed very clearly that Labour has won only part — though admittedly an important part — of the pre-election propaganda war on taxation and spending. (P1L5) Huge areas of public scepticism about Labour's spending intentions remain, though it is an open question whether they are actually doing Labour much damage. (P1L6) The prudent conclusion is that Mr Brown cannot afford to relax his efforts to impress the sternness of his principles on an electorate which still harbours such doubts about the extent of Labour's commitment to economic self-discipline.

(P2L7) So Mr Brown was at it again yesterday, with the announcement, carefully timed to precede today's cabinet decision, that Labour will freeze top salaries in the public sector for its first year in office. (P2L8) Top salaries, the would-be iron Chancellor made clear, cannot be exempted from the strictness which has long ago been injected into every aspect of Labour's pre-election thinking. (P2L9) They must be judged in the context of the deficit which Labour expects to inherit, of the need for disciplined control of public finance as a precondition for wider credibility, and of the requirement always to spend fairly and in accordance with Labour's priorities within public expenditure limits.

(P3L10) As an overall approach, there is little wrong with this. (P3L11) It is realistic and principled, and the question of top salaries provides a suitable stage on which to display it. (P3L12) Though the package would save no more than £20 million, a tiny drop in the £300 billion annual public spending total, the decision sends a powerful signal that Labour really means what it says. (P3L13) By denying themselves promised ministerial and parliamentary increases, and by imposing the same severity on senior civil servants and service chiefs, Labour underlines the seriousness of its political and fiscal purposes. (P3L14) It tells the voters that Labour is neither spendthrift nor hypocritical, and that it can

be trusted to keep to its pledges. (P3L15) But it also embodies something more — that underlying such choices there is a genuine wish to redistribute spending in accordance with a set of socially progressive priorities.

(P4L16) From the point of view of a party entering government after long years in opposition, the message is clear: start as you mean to go on. (P4L17) The problems, however, are genuine. (P4L18) One is that any freeze on MPs' pay puts at risk the strategy adopted last summer of paying MPs a rate which diminishes the temptation to supplement their earnings from outside sources. (P4L19) Another is that to freeze this particular set of salary increases, however high profile and symbolic, may simply dump the need for tight discipline on to the public sector, ignoring parallel changes in the private sector which would be needed to make the policy truly fair. (P4L20) A progressive chancellor would raise more money if he allowed the review body awards to be paid and then partly clawed them back through increased taxes on high salaries both in the public sector and in the private sector: but he has specifically ruled that option out. (P4L21) As a result the move looks suspiciously like a pay policy which does not quite dare to speak its name. (P4L22) Lopping a few thousand pounds off a judge's or an MP's salary is more rewarding politics than telling company directors, not to mention teachers and NHS workers, that they too must keep within a tight norm, but they are blood relatives all the same.

Backing our boys

(P1L1) The extent to which Tony Blair now challenges the Tories on their traditional ground is astonishing. (P1L2) Labour regularly poses, without any apparent embarrassment, as the natural party of both law and order and low taxation. (P1L3) But Mr Blair's article on the facing page, in which he presents Labour as, in effect, the party that supports "our boys", is surely one of his boldest moves yet.

(P2L4) Much of his critique of Conservative defence policy is correct. (P2L5) Nevertheless, Mr Blair is careful not to go much beyond what one might find in any reasonably intelligent sixth-form essay on the British Armed Forces since the war. (P2L6) This newspaper has long argued that the end of the Cold War made a strategic review necessary. (P2L7) But whether the relationship between defence and foreign policy is quite so clear-cut as Mr Blair supposes is doubtful. (P2L8) The primary aim of defence policy is to ensure the defence of the realm and its dependencies. (P2L9) Central to that is our wider role in the Western alliance. (P2L10) Yet many aspects of foreign policy have little, if any, bearing on this. (P2L11) Any defence review would be of value only if it could work to a well thought out and clearly defined agenda.

(P3L12) Of that, there is little sign in Mr Blair's article. (P3L13) He says nothing, for example, about Nato enlargement, or the EU's ambition to take over the Western European Union. (P3L14) He makes no mention of the Government's decision to spend £16 billion on the Eurofighter, conceived in the early 1980s as a defence against a massed attack by Russian MiGs. (P3L15) Last week the Defence Secretary, Michael Portillo, defended the decision in terms of job creation. (P3L16) Is this how Labour would see it, or would it want to consider whether this huge sum could be better spent on more prosaic requirements?

(P4L17) Instead, Mr Blair has stuck to his favourite and his most successful tactic: adopting Conservative rhetoric while criticising the Conservative record. (P4L18) Yet he specifically rules out reversing the Tory defence cuts of recent years. (P4L19) Given Labour's other priorities, and its promise of a two-year freeze in overall public spending, the Services may suspect a ruse whereby Labour could indulge in further cuts under the pretext of modernisation. (P4L20) That, after all, would be the outcome that many of its backbenchers would favour.

(P5L21) Hence the need for Mr Blair to make his agenda clear from the outset. (P5L22) Misdirected spending on defence is quite as harmful as underfunding. (P5L23) Any review would have to start by considering whether all the numerous commitments that Mr Blair approvingly lists in his article are really necessary. (P5L24) Should our forces spend so much time and effort helping to police the world under UN supervision or, as sometimes seems to be the case, as the armed wing of Oxfam? (P5L25) Or should their commitment be more tightly limited to Nato? (P5L26) Should they, at some future date, become part of an integrated European force? (P5L27) These are the questions a review would have to tackle. (P5L28) Mr Blair should be aware that none of them is susceptible to easy answers.

Constitutional Clash

Conservatives undermine themselves by resistance to change

(P1L1) As our third election guide published today outlines, constitutional matters seem set to occupy an unusually prominent place in the forthcoming campaign. (P1L2) That has not happened because of intense pressure from the electorate. (P1L3) Polls suggest voters rarely see those issues as a high priority. (P1L4) However, the same surveys suggest considerable sympathy for a range of proposed reforms.

(P2L5) The electorate takes an eminently defensible position. (P2L6) For most people, most of the time, their employment prospects or the quality of education are obviously of greater importance than the incorporation of the European Convention on Human Rights into national law. (P2L7) The claim, often made by Liberal Democrats among others, that the current British system and structures represent an affront - if not an outright threat to democratic life, strikes a majority as either exaggerated or implausible. (P2L8) The next Parliament should not have an agenda saturated by such questions.

(P3L9) That is not to say that the constitution has no need of care and attention. (P3L10) Limited but important innovation is long overdue. (P3L11) Our historic arrangements have served us well but should not be worshipped as the embodiment of perfection. (P3L12) They have been severely strained by the demands of European Union membership and an increasingly assertive European Court of Justice. (P3L13) The Major administration has enthusiastically pursued the concept of government by contract, producing, quite properly, mountains of data on schools, hospitals, the police and transportation. (P3L14) How odd, then, that it should rule out the merest possibility of writing down some of the most fundamental contracts of them all.

(P4L15) Reform would augment, not offend, the Conservative Party's principles. (P4L16) Fear of the intrusive state, and thus attraction to a Bill of Rights and Freedom of Information Act, should come naturally to those who profess a preference for smaller government. (P4L17) Similarly, suspicion of centralisation, and thus backing for stronger checks and balances, should rest comfortably with Tories.

(P5L18) In recent times far too much control has been seized by Whitehall. (P5L19) More enlightened Thatcherites such as Ferdinand

Mount have recognised this trend and encouraged its reversal. (P5L20) It seems unlikely that such thinking will be reflected in the Conservative manifesto. (P5L21) If so, the electorate will face a choice that can be crudely summarised: no change (Tory); some change (Labour); or all change (Liberal Democrat). (P5L22) In that case many might regard the option advanced by Tony Blair as the acceptable middle course.

(P6L23) There is much, though, in both the principle and detail of Labour's plans that demands vigorous scrutiny. (P6L24) The future relationship between a national and Scottish parliament requires much greater clarification. (P6L25) Jack Straw's plans for the English regions have failed to captivate even those otherwise inclined towards constitutional change. (P6L26) The depth of Tony Blair's commitment to restoring local government is uncertain. (P6L27) At present only London has received precise promises of new powers.

(P7L28) Were the Tories willing to promote thoughtful proposals of their own, they might reap rich rewards from a debate on the constitution. (P6L29) But instead they appear determined to stand as the defenders of official secrecy and overbearing centralism. (P7L30) This blinkered and rigid approach may allow Labour to proceed with a package that wants considerable improvement. (P7L31) A one-sided discussion would not be in the best interests of constitution or country. (P7L32) If it happens, the Conservatives will have only themselves to blame.

Cook finds the right recipe for Europe

(P1L1) Probably we will stay out in the first wave; probably we will enter by 2002. (P1L2) That is how Robin Cook would like us to read his latest comments on British entry to a single currency. (P1L3) It sounds like a cautious compromise. (P1L4) It is. (P1L5) But don't knock it.

(P2L6) In the circumstances, the position that Labour is gradually carving out for itself on economic and monetary union is the most sensible available stance. (P2L7) In fact, it is the only tenable one; Kenneth Clarke must be wishing he could persuade the Conservative Party to endorse it too.

(P3L8) If monetary union is working well, and if the British economy is suffering by remaining outside a single currency bloc, then the chances are a Labour government will sign up to the euro. (P3L9) The Labour Party's door, in other words, is hesitantly half-open to the single currency.

(P4L10) The Conservatives' door is half-shut, and swinging firmly closed. (P4L11) We can understand the Euro-sceptics' anxiety. (P4L12) We would be happier if all this were not really happening. (P4L13) The democratic threat posed by a single currency, on top of the economic uncertainty about its effectiveness, both lead us to feel profoundly wary.

(P5L14) But no one is going to wish this thing away. (P5L15) That essentially, is what the Conservative campaign team want to do. (P5L16) Their weeping lion (the latest Saatchi image) suggests a somewhat fairy-tale view of the future. (P5L17) The evil-eyed wicked witch of the west, otherwise known as Tony Blair, is forcing a single currency on his hard-pressed munchkins. (P5L18) But the tearful lion accompanied by a brainless scarecrow and a heartless tinman are going to bound off down the yellow-brick-road and home to safety, far away from those nasty Europhile lefties.

(P6L19) Nonsense. (P6L20) There isn't anywhere for Britain to escape to. (P6L21) Monetary union is happening. (P6L22) It will almost certainly happen on schedule, since the French and German political elites are so committed to it.

(P7L23) If it works, and that is still a big if, then it is hardly plausible that Britain could stay out for ever. (P7L24) Imagine Europe in 2010. (P7L25) Inside a large single currency bloc are Germany, France, the Benelux countries, Austria, Italy, Spain, Scandinavia, the Czech republic, Hungary... the list goes on. (P7L26) Within the huge eurozone, businesses don't have to bother their heads about currency speculation. (P7L27) They don't have to worry that the cash they pay their producers with will suddenly rise in value compared to the cash they collect from their customers across the border, squeezing their profit margins beyond their control. (P7L28) Across the Channel, however, things look rather different. (P7L29) Companies have to add to the hassle and cost of sending goods across the sea to European customers, the unpredictability of currency changes and the higher interest rates that Britain would probably suffer. (P7L30) It does not take a Toyota chief to work out the best place for future investment. (P7L31) And the British people, watching the disparities grow, are likely to opt for a single currency too.

(P8L32) So Robin Cook is right to say that if EMU is successful, a Labour government would find it hard to keep Britain out. (P8L33) But he is equally right to prevaricate about going in as part of the first wave.

(P9L34) Consider the timetable. (P9L35) Joining up would require some quick thinking, quick decision-making, and quick persuading, by a fresh and, untested Labour government. (P9L36) Parliamentary timetables would be entirely clogged up by Euro legislation. (P9L37) A new Blair government would have to risk going to the polls in a referendum on a single currency, after hardly any time to make a positive case for joining. (P9L38) Although the British public may accept the euro if they can see it working, they are too conservative and too sceptical for a leap in the dark.

(P10L39) Moreover, serious problems with the euro remain. (P10L40) The risk of economic crisis in Europe under a single currency remains considerable. (P10L41) The low interest rates currently needed by Germany would be hopelessly inflationary if applied to Britain, which came out of recession earlier than the Continent. (P10L42) If structured badly, the single currency could lead to terrible persistent unemployment in some parts of the union, provoking political tensions that could destroy the entire project. (P10L43) Waiting to allow further economic convergence and that means real integration of European

markets, not just similar inflation rates and government borrowing requirements - has a lot to be said for it.

(P11L44) And then, of course, there is the democratic deficit. (P11L45) Signing up blind to an economic system which provides almost no democratic accountability for policy decisions which have a huge impact on people's lives would be a mistake. (P11L46) A British government which is not opposed to a single currency in principle should be fighting fiercely to influence and reform the EMU project before taking the plunge. (P11L47) So Mr Cook's position makes sense: accept the difficulties of staying out for good, point out the reasons for staying out in the short term, and keep all options open along the way.

(P12L48) The best aspect of his position, however, is that if a Labour government is elected, we will have a proper discussion about the merits of the single currency. (P12L49) With the Conservatives in power we cannot have that argument, because any plausible Tory leader would have to suppress the full range of views within his or her own party. (P12L50) Out of power, Tories would be free to give full voice to their views, pro-, anti-, and not entirely sure.

(P13L51) Robin Cook, Gordon Brown and Tony Blair, and everyone else, would have plenty of time to listen to Mr Portillo and Mr Clarke arguing, while finding out (because they might start talking to us) what the French and Germans are really up to.

Edging towards the Euro

Labour steers a sounder course on the single currency

(P1L1) Robin Cook's statement that Labour would take Britain into a European single currency by 2002 if it proved to be "stable" marks a very significant development of Labour policy. (P1L2) While the Conservatives appear to be drifting further and further away from joining, Labour is edging closer, as though it is preparing the way rather than inventing new forms of procrastination as the Conservatives are. (P1L3) Suddenly Labour seems to have switched from a policy of delaying entry until it is economically justified to a strategy of planning to join unless something untoward deflects them. (P1L4) The trouble is that you can't suddenly decide to join in 2002 - the date when domestic notes and coins are scheduled to be replaced by euros - for the simple reason that massive preparations have to be made. (P1L5) Billions of notes will have to be printed, millions of business systems and slot machines converted. (P1L6) And then there is the small matter of calling and winning a referendum. (P1L7) To be ready for entry by 2002 a Labour government will have to decide several years earlier and to have embarked on the full cost of conversion.

(P2L8) The hardening of Labour's attitude may well owe something to the warning made by Toyota about more investment going to the continent of Europe if Britain doesn't sign up to the euro. (P2L9) New Labour accepts the reality of market forces and goes out of its way to weigh up the priorities of business—as well as those of other social partners in its decision making. (P2L10) This is the right thing to do in general but especially so with regard to the massive implications of joining a single European currency. (P2L11) This involves the surrender of a vital arm of economic policy—the ability to change interest rates unilaterally—to an independent European bank on which we would be represented. (P2L12) It is a complicated calculus of pros and cons about which economists can't agree. (P2L13) Britain could lose jobs if we surrender our historic right to bail us out of trouble by devaluing the pound. (P2L14) The Toyota warning, however, reminds us that there may also be big job losses from reduced inward investment if we stay out. (P2L15) In recent years inward investment has played a large role in job creation in the UK when domestic corporations have been reluctant to invest.

(P3L16) In theory there is not much difference between the Government's view that it is "very unlikely" Britain will join at the launch date of 1999—(coupled with Kenneth Clarke's belief that the project will be delayed anyway) and Labour being minded to join by 2002. (P3L17) In reality a big gulf in attitudes is opening up. (P3L18) Neither side need apologise for adopting a "watching and waiting" role over a decision with such massive implications. (P3L19) And especially when the timetable is for the convenience of countries like Germany and France who are driven by an urgent political impulse which Britain doesn't share. (P3L20) But at least Labour's position now looks much more constructive than the shambolic policymaking of the Conservatives.
Fight the battle of ideas

(P1L1) The Conservatives are rapidly becoming the monocausal explanation for all of Britain's ills. (P1L2) Consider, for example, the verdict offered by Polly Toynbee, an exemplar of the sensibilities of the metropolitan Liberal-Left: (P1L3) "The Conservative tribe is the clan of the Haves and the Wannahaves," she opined. (P1L4) "Meanness of spirit is their guide, suspicion of others, a desire to stop things, lock people up, shut out the poor, build partitions and blame the underdog." (P1L5) No matter what compromises New Labour may have made on such policies as income tax, she concludes, they are still preferable as people to the Tories. (P1L6) In other words, men matter as much as, if not more than, the measures.

(P2L7) Playing the man rather than the ball has proved to be a successful strategy for New Labour, though they would not formulate their statements quite so unsubtly. (P2L8) In the bizarre twilight zone of the current parliament - when few initiatives of substance are launched - it is worth examining this approach in detail. (P2L9) Essentially, New Labour's message runs as follows: "The corrupt, dishonest, uncaring and weak crew that have run this country must be ejected from office forthwith, before they can do further damage". (P2L10) The past 18 years have been a disaster for Britain, causing untold suffering to millions of ordinary people. (P2L11) Therefore, we shall go on doing what they have done. (P2L12) Vote New Labour." (P2L13) Even some of Britain's corporate chiefs are impressed, miraculously discovering the virtues of a minimum wage and more training as Labour's poll ratings have soared.

(P3L14) Many think New Labour to be phenomenally slick and sophisticated: but when deconstructed, their message is, in fact, contradictory, not to say bizarre. (P3L15) The Conservatives seem unsure how to respond. (P3L16) Partly, this is because too many of their prominent figures seem busier with the preliminary rounds of the next leadership contest than the battle at hand. (P3L17) This is a pity, since the new Fabian self-righteousness is a very vulnerable target - much more so, in fact, than the Conservatives' own "Back to Basics" programme to shore up traditional values. (P3L18) A mere glance at the shameful record of many Labour-controlled councils should give the Tories ammunition as well as hope.

(P4L19) It is not merely a question of going on the offensive against the new moralisers, though that certainly dovetails neatly with the goal of portraying Labour as the party of the revamped and ever-primmer nanny state. (P4L20) And it requires something rather more than just citing random reasons why it is good to be alive today - to wit, the Prime Minister's celebration of the vibrancy of Britain's pubs and clubs, or ministers babbling on about the triumphs of the fashion and design industries. (P4L21) Such rhetoric means that they cannot complain when people unfairly blame them for misfortunes that are properly none of their business. (P4L22) Instead, what they need to do is to extol their own record of improving living standards and public services with ever greater clarity and style. (P4L23) The Tory measures are there: the question is whether the Tory men are up to the task of conveying that message to the electorate.

Give the new pressure parties a good airing

(P1L1) Buying a Party Election Broadcast could be one of the cheapest kinds of advertising, and a host of "pressure parties" have sprung up to take advantage of it. (P1L2) For just £25,000, the cost of 50 deposits at £500 per candidate, anyone posing as a political party is entitled to a five-minute broadcast.

(P2L3) The anti-abortionists are at the head of the growing queue for guaranteed airtime. (P2L4) Behind them are the pro- and anti-handgun lobbies, fathers who don't like the Child Support Agency, animal rights activists and maybe the gay rights pressure group Outrage. (P2L5) At this rate, every seat in the general election will boast an array of candidates as colourful as any by-election, with Green, Referendum, UK Independence, Monster Raving Loony and Natural Law candidates in

many or most seats as well as the staple fare of Tory, Lab and Lib Dem. (P2L6) But this is not (just) the lovable eccentricity of British tradition - the Bill Boaks Tendency, for those of us old enough to remember that veteran of lost deposits. (P2L7) Pressure parties are the new phenomenon of British politics.

(P3L8) Once, people who felt passionate about a cause went on demonstrations. (P3L9) People who are old enough to remember Commander Bill Boaks probably remember those too. (P3L10) But as a way of putting pressure on mainstream politicians, demos were cold, time-consuming and ineffective. (P3L11) So today's pressure groups have gone in different directions: direct action and professional lobbying are two avenues; but, as the election nears, a third approach has come to the fore—using the electoral system to gain publicity and exert leverage on the main political parties.

(P4L12) Some see "single issue" candidates as a threat. (P4L13) Unsurprisingly, these include some sitting MPs. (P4L14) Tim Wood, Conservative MP for marginal Stevenage, yesterday described the development as "a perversion of the normal democratic processes". (P4L15) We disagree. (P4L16) We welcome the use of the democratic system by people who care passionately and want to see change. (P4L17) That is what democracy is for. (P4L18) The last thing we should do is set out to frustrate it.

(P5L19) With the possible exception of Sir James Goldsmith's Referendum Party, we know that almost all the pressure party candidates will have no impact whatever on the outcome in their constituencies, but they will have an impact on politics defined more broadly. (P5L20) Even in safe Labour seats, of which pollsters tell us there are around 500 at present, fringe candidates will force the future MPs to state their position at least on abortion, gun control, crated veal and no doubt many other issues. (P5L21) The pressure groupies will take part in hustings and radio debates, get local television coverage, be taken seriously by local newspapers. (P5L22) The issues that they want to get discussed will get discussed. (P5L23) Clearly this paper lends no support to the so-called pro-life lobby; but the best way to deal with poor arguments is to expose them to democratic scrutiny. (P5L24) What better scrutiny is there than an election? (P5L25) Besides, putting up candidates is better than the intimidatory American approach of picketing clinics and harassing nurses and doctors.

(P6L26) It should be added that the Pro-Life Alliance has no chance of using its political broadcast, as some of its members want, to show footage of a late aborted foetus. (P6L27) This would, quite rightly, be ruled out of order by the television regulators under existing taste and decency guidelines.

(P7L28) With that off the agenda, a vigorous debate about abortion is healthy. (P7L29) The invention of pressure parties will likewise promote debate on other "single issues", and bring democratic pressure to bear on the broad coalitions which are the main parties. (P7L30) However, this flowering of competitive democracy will only last until 1 May, or whenever the day falls. (P7L31) Forming a party may be a cheap way of buying five minutes of airtime on three channels, but you can only do it once every few years (during general and European election campaigns). (P7L32) Then, after the first-past-the-post system has delivered its winner-takes-all verdict, the campaigners will disband their parties and wind down their propaganda.

(P8L33) The intriguing question raised by this new style of pressure-politics is what would happen under a fairer voting system. (P8L34) What would we say if an anti-abortion party of half-a-dozen MPs held the balance of power in a new horseshoe-shaped assembly? (P8L35) In reality, the single issue of abortion could not sustain a political party, even under a reformed system. (P8L36) It is conceivable that the abortion issue could form part of the platform of an explicitly Christian party, and this may be the intention of some of those on the fringes of the Movement for Christian Democracy, whose chairman is standing against Michael Portillo in Enfield Southgate. (P8L37) But any attempt to particularise and politicise Christian beliefs in this way is bound to lead to a splintering even of committed Christian voters.

(P9L38) It is true that some issues are less single than others, and then they might, under a proportional system, gain the odd seat or two. (P9L39) Environmental concerns, for example, amount to a coherent philosophy. (P9L40) If the green movement became big enough and strong enough again, then it should be heard in parliament - as it should have been heard in the European Parliament in 1989, when the Green Party won 15 per cent of the vote.

(P10L41) In short, there is nothing to fear from pressure parties. (P10L42) The only thing to fear is what follows when their voices fall silent.

Going, Going

Sotheby's must act fast before its reputation has wholly gone

(P1L1) From Cambodia and China to Iraq and Italy, the smuggling of antiquities and works of art is a flourishing illegal business. (P1L2) The lesson for local legislators is everywhere a difficult one: the more draconian the restrictions that are set on legitimate exports, the more active and well-organised the smuggling is likely to be. (P1L3) China, which has a blanket export ban on all but very recent objects, is being pillaged on a massive scale, in some cases with the collusion of corrupt officials. (P1L4) Italy, whose cultural inheritance is similarly rich and large, faces similar problems with policing its law requiring export licences for any work that predates 1939.

(P2L5) Britain, by contrast, operates the liberal Waverley rules which impose a delay on the export of particularly important works in order to give the nation a chance to match the price offered by a foreign bidder. (P2L6) That strikes a fair balance between the public interest in keeping truly "national" treasures in the country, respect for private property rights and the belief that art is for the world to enjoy, regardless of frontiers.

(P3L7) This carefully calibrated policy has also made Britain a mecca for the legal international market, helping to establish the global pre-eminence of such great auction houses as Sotheby's and Christie's. (P3L8) But it is not only opportunity that has built their businesses; nor only their expertise; it is their reputation for honesty and integrity in the conduct of their business. (P3L9) The evidence of wrongdoing at Sotheby's which we start serialising today should therefore appal both the art world and the Department of Trade and Industry. (P3L10) The practices uncovered range from the ethically questionable to the plainly illegal. (P3L11) The clear and direct involvement of Sotheby's employees in art smuggling, the subject of today's article, is inexcusable.

(P4L12) Recorded on tape and by a hidden camera, Roeland Kollewijn, a Sotheby's Old Masters expert in Milan, undertakes to organise the illegal export of a painting by the 18th century northern Italian artist Giuseppe Nogari to London, for sale by Sotheby's there. (P4L13) At the London end, the painting is duly seen by a member of Sotheby's staff, entered for auction and sold. (P4L14) This classic journalistic sting is backed by a mass of documents and circumstantial evidence, from the Far East as

well as Italy, indicating that this was not an isolated case involving one or two bad apples in an otherwise sound barrel. (P4L15) Mr Kollewijn, who treats the transaction as routine, claims the complicity of his colleagues, saying that if he were an Italian judge he would order wiretaps on Sotheby's in Milan because "they know it's happening all the time" and adding that "if I were in power I would arrest the whole lot" at the Milan office.

(P5L16) Last month the art squad of the Italian carabinieri, announcing a haul worth £25 million of smuggled antiquities illegally excavated from archaeological sites, accused "employees of important international auction houses" of acting as intermediaries. (P5L17) There must be grave doubts about Sotheby's proud claims to operate according to strict rules and to co-operate with governments and law enforcement agencies worldwide in the recovery of stolen or looted objects. (P5L18) The onus is on the company, and on the eminent men and women on its board, to respond to these charges; if it cannot counter them, it should announce forthwith how it proposes to come back within the law.

Guessing Milosevic's next move

If it's repression in Kosovo, the West must be prepared

(P1L1) Not to give Slobodan Milosevic the benefit of the doubt is elementary commonsense for anyone who has watched him pull the strings in Belgrade over the past decade. (P1L2) Next week's approval by parliament of a bill reinstating the opposition electoral victories (which he has blocked for nearly three months) should be a formality. (P1L3) But the protest will not be called off till approval has been delivered. (P1L4) If Mr Milosevic has indeed conceded, the opposition now has to anticipate what new strategy he will choose. (P1L5) There has been an air of tactical disorganisation over the past few days: last Sunday he appeared to have shifted towards a tougher line by sending in the paramilitaries against the demonstrators — only to concede the disputed issue two days later. (P1L6) But such shifts are not new: Mr Milosevic has shown himself to be a past master (with Radovan Karadzic a close second) in stringing along the international community. (P1L7) He has no compunction about treating his own people in the same way. (P1L8) Even if he lets the verdict in these municipal elections stand, he may be retreating in order to prepare the ground more effectively for the parliamentary and presidential elections to be held by the end of this year.

(P2L9) One possibility is that Mr Milosevic will now be tempted to play the Kosovo card - which he used in the late 1980s to such effect to rally Serb nationalism behind him. (P2L10) It had become conventional post-Dayton wisdom that he might prefer to allow the Albanian majority there a degree of autonomy in order to improve relations with the West. (P2L11) An agreement between him and the Kosovo leader Ibrahim Rugova providing for Albanian youth to return to state schools seemed to point in this direction. (P2L12) But political survival for Mr Milosevic must come first. (P2L13) He knows that chauvinist sentiment with Kosovo at its core runs deep in the ranks of the Zajedno coalition which has opposed him in the streets. (P2L14) Official propaganda in Belgrade has recently revived the familiar theme of the alleged plight of the Serbian minority in Kosovo. (P2L15) He has also mounted an assertive crackdown on alleged "perpetrators of terrorist acts in Kosovo": on Monday he lauded the Interior ministry for its successful operation— which included shooting three Albanians in what was claimed to be a "shoot-out" last week.

(P2L16) Some of these incidents may be attributed to radical Albanians who refuse to endure the denial of rights indefinitely: others may be Serb provocations.

(P3L17) The new disorder across the border in Albania proper only makes this region more potentially explosive. (P3L18) The US was right to react quickly, sending a strong message to the Milosevic regime that these actions were not doing his case any good, and condemning the Serbian "state of repression" in Kosovo. (P3L19) That message should be repeated by the EU collectively and individually and by anyone (including former British foreign secretaries) who has dealings in Belgrade.

Have the debate

(P1L1) The Americans have always had an unusual insight into British politics - it was an American politician who first said that we had lost an empire and not yet found a role. (P1L2) Our close relationship means that political developments in the United States often provide a preview for future changes to our own political scene.

(P2L3) So many in the Labour Party will have been disappointed yesterday to learn that some Americans have lost their enthusiasm for Tony Blair's charms. (P2L4) Both Daphne Barak, the NBC's influential interviewer, and the CBS's primetime 60 Minutes programme have nicknamed him Tony Blinton - and it is not a compliment. (P2L4) They accuse Mr Blair of borrowing President Clinton's best soundbites. (P2L5) Miss Barak also says that he acted like a scared child when she interviewed him. (P2L6) In contrast, they say, Mr Clinton at least has substance and charisma on television.

(P3L7) The Americans have a point. (P3L8) This is not just a case of our version is better than yours. (P3L9) Mr Blair does seem to lack Mr Clinton's chutzpah, grasp of policy detail and presentational originality. (P3L10) Mr Blair's fuzzy political image may allow him to appeal to a wide range of voters, but their commitment is shallow. (P3L11) All of which should give Mr Major and his media strategists something to mull over. (P3L12) Far from exposing Majorite flaws, a head-to-head presidential style television debate with Mr Blair could give the Prime Minister just the platform he needs before polling day.

(P4L13) Of course the Liberal Democrats would complain that it would be unfair if Paddy Ashdown were not included, and they could take legal action against the broadcasters for bias. (P4L14) The Tories could not risk a three-cornered debate that would pit Mr Major against the Opposition leaders. (P4L15) But they could ask for three two-way debates. (P4L16) This would mean two semi-finals: Mr Blair versus Mr Ashdown and Mr Major versus Mr Ashdown followed by a grand finale with Mr Major facing Mr Blair without Mr Ashdown.

(P5L17) The question of the SNP and Plaid Cymru could probably be answered by allowing them four-way debates broadcast in Scotland and Wales with the relevant secretaries of state and shadow secretaries. (P5L18) Michael Forsyth and William Hague should be delighted to comply and raise their profiles. (P5L19) Mr Major has nothing to lose

and everything to gain. (P5L20) Lagging so far behind in the polls he will look like the plucky challenger rather than the smug incumbent (P5L21) People warm to his quirky phraseology and impression of awkward sincerity, as he proved with his soapbox in 1992. (P5L22) His grasp of detail makes up for his lack of rhetoric. (P5L23) In his speech in Brussels yesterday he gave a lucid exposition of the facts and figures which show Britain now outpacing her European partners in most areas. (P5L24) He is better at this than at soundbites. (P5L25) The decent amount of time a full-dress debate provides would display his gifts to advantage.

(P6L26) Mr Blair would have the chance to prove that he is not just a ruthless party manager or a smiling Clinton clone. (P5L27) Mr Ashdown, who comes across well in people's living rooms, would be able to put clear pink water between himself and Mr Blair. (P5L28) Whoever won, the viewers would find it refreshing to hear a proper debate rather than trial by slogan. (P5L29) And, for once, it would be Mr Major rather than Mr Blair who would have taken an idea from across the Atlantic.

High minded in high places

At Davos, world leaders can afford to take a lofty view

(P1L1) For a few days each February, the global village decamps to a real one. (P1L2) Except that Davos in the Swiss Alps is a real village only in the same sense that Gleneagles is a real hotel or Britannia a real yacht. (P1L3) For there is nothing run-of-the-mill about the 1,000-strong guest list which Klaus Schwab entices each year to his so-called World Economic Forum. (P1L4) Princes, premiers and bankers (not to mention journalists) hurry to Davos when Mr Schwab blows his alpenhorn. (P1L5) This week the acceptees have included several dozen world leaders from Nelson Mandela to Binyamin Netanyahu. (P1L6) The prime minister of Russia has been there, as has the leader of the world's newest superpower, Bill Gates of Microsoft. (P1L7) The stories that have come out of Davos this week have embraced Japanese and Korean economic reform, Middle East peace moves, loan guarantees for Iran, and the future of Jewish deposits placed in Swiss banks under the Third Reich. (P1L8) Truly a summit meeting in every sense!

(P2L9) The rise and rise of Davos is a phenomenon of our times. (P2L10) Mr Schwab's Geneva-based Forum has only existed since 1970, when he first convened a conference to discuss Europe's international business future. (P2L11) Since then, Davos has mushroomed to its present-day status as the most prestigious freebie on the planet. (P2L12) As its importance has grown, however, doubts have begun to grow. (P2L13) Most famously, the American political scientist Samuel Huntington has charged that Davos embodies a blinkered Western-centred view of the world, in which the entire globe is now uncritically assumed to be modernism along neo-liberal capitalist lines - and to be right to do so. (P2L14) Professor Huntington's critique certainly receives some support from the hubristic literature put out by the Forum, which catalogues without irony the WEF's claims to have played the pioneer role in such events as the end of apartheid in South Africa, the reunification of Germany, the Israel-Palestine accords and the ending of Vietnam's international isolation.

(P3L15) However self-important all this may seem, the annual trek to Davos obviously meets a felt need by those who attend it. (P3L16) It is not hard to see why. (P3L17) Human beings from Moses to Mohammed have sought wisdom in the high places of the world, so who are we to deny such things to society's leaders

today? (P3L18) A century ago, the Swiss Alps were widely seen as a place apart from the conflict and pestilence of the real world, a place of health, reason and justice, a make-believe land of mentally rewarding play for those who could afford its often exorbitant prices. (P3L19) That is why Davos itself was the perfect setting for the great reflective novel of pre-1914 Europe, Thomas Mann's The Magic Mountain. (P3L20) As then, so also now. (P3L21) The Victorian social critic Frederic Harrison once called the Swiss Alps "the sanatorium and diversorium of the civilised world". (P3L22) It is curiously reassuring to learn that Davos still plays that same role more than a century later.

Irreversible Opt-In

Business should weigh the social chapter's true cost

(P1L1) Britain's opt-out from the social chapter, Labour's Shadow Foreign Secretary, Robin Cook, argued yesterday, serves Tory dogma and not national interests. (P1L2) Mr Cook repeated Labour's pledge to sign Britain up to the Maastricht treaty's seven enabling clauses on social affairs. (P1L3) On the previous evening in Brussels, the Prime Minister had not only defended the value of his social opt-out but blamed the Continent's high unemployment rate on over-regulation in general and the social chapter in particular.

John Major cannot be convicted of merely dogmatic repetition. (P1L4) He all too plainly believes his economic achievements to be under threat. (P1L5) But he tends to muddle different kinds of business burdens which inhibit the creation of new jobs in some continental economies. (P1L6) EU obligations make a relatively small contribution to employers' non-wage costs; more damage is done by intricate, accumulated welfare and labour rules established at national level. (P1L7) The Dutch Government lives with the social chapter; by starting its campaign to deregulate its national labour market in the 1980s, The Netherlands is posting job creation figures almost as good as Britain's.

(P2L8) Britain's social opt-out in 1991 called a bluff. (P2L9) No sooner were the Maastricht treaty and its social protocol signed, than the flow of EU social legislation dried up. (P2L10) The regulatory climate in Brussels and continental capitals, although falling well short of realism, did change. (P2L11) Three directives have been passed under the social chapter: mandatory works councils for firms above a certain size, three months paid parental leave, and a shift in the burden of proof towards claimants in discrimination cases. (P2L12) Two other measures are under discussion: extending the works council rules to a much greater number of companies and a law giving minimum rights on dismissal.

(P3L13) It is no defence of these laws that they will do less harm than some Conservative ministers might like to suggest. (P3L14) Mr Major told his audience in Brussels that "one signature on the social chapter would mean half a million signatures on the dole" —an assertion for which he has produced no evidence or calculation. (P3L15) The case against the social chapter goes far deeper than specific directives. (P3L16) Britain should retain its opt-out because the chapter provides an irreversible opportunity to pass anti-competitive

and expensive laws at any time. (P3L17) It is not impossible to reverse an EU directive, but no social legislation has yet been repealed.

(P4L18) Mr Major himself has already discovered that a mistake once made cannot be rectified: his retrospective attempt to exempt Britain from the directive limiting the working week to 48 hours stands little chance of success. (P4L19) The fact that there is relatively little law in the Brussels machine at the moment gives no guarantee about the quantity which might be processed in the future.

(P5L20) Businessmen in Britain trying to work out what the social chapter might mean for their companies may turn for consolation to various statements from the Opposition hinting that a Labour government will protect business from damaging EU law. (P5L21) But directives under the broad headings of equal opportunities, "working conditions" and "information" can be passed under the social chapter by majority vote. (P5L22) The freedom to choose the social law appropriate to a national bargaining culture, business environment and legal system—a freedom perfectly compatible with an open EU market—lies in the flexible arrangement which Britain enjoys at present.

Kids alone: who minds?

Employers should become more family-friendly

(P1L1) Guardian Women get back to your sinks. (P1L2) Two full-time working mothers — a university researcher and a BBC Panorama producer — have joined forces to add another indictment to the charge sheet facing working women: jeopardising their children's educational prospects. (P1L3) According to the BBC, children whose mothers work full-time are twice as likely to fail GCSE exams compared to those whose mothers only work part-time. (P1L4) The "parenting deficit" appears to be bigger than even Etzioni suggested. (P1L5) A leak to the Sunday Times and a BBC press release ensured yesterday's Daily Mail was already reporting — before any of the details were known — that the study "appears to belie the long-held belief that working mothers provide a financial and intellectual role model for their children".

(P2L6) Margaret O'Brian, who carried out the research, is not an ideologue and is respected by liberal family policy-makers. (P2L7) The results were a surprise to her. (P2L8) But she did not help her cause yesterday, or the interests of women, by withholding publication of her report and refusing to talk to the press. (P2L9) The limited facts released—a study of 600 families in the Barking and Dagenham area of London for a two-year period up to GCSE — raised far more questions than they answered and contained a contradiction. (P2L10) Children who had a mother at home full-time did even worse, in terms of GCSE passes, than children of both full-time and part-time working mothers.

(P3L11) Before total panic sets in, here are some cool facts for policy-makers to remember. (P3L12) The proportion of women with dependent children who work full-time is still only 22 per cent. (P3L13) They are not a homogeneous group. (P3L14) They range from highly-paid professional women who can afford well-trained careers to poor, unskilled mums who cannot afford to pay for any childcare. (P3L15) More interestingly, as Jonathan Gershuny who is the director of the ESRC Research Centre on Microsocial Change at Essex University has shown, the amount of time full-time employed mothers devoted to childcare in 1995 was greater than that of full-time homemakers in 1961. (P3L16) So much for the golden era of motherhood. (P3L17) Thanks to faster food preparation — and easier washing and cleaning — full-time working mothers can still provide "quality time". (P3L18) Typically, they spend two and a half hours on housework and two hours on childcare. (P3L19)

More men are now helping too, even if women still do twice as much. (P3L20) Contrary to popular opinion, proportionally more blue collar than white collar workers have become New Men. (P3L21) Only four out of 10 professional men help out. (P3L22) A 15-year-old on last night's programme grumbled about feeling neglected. (P3L23) Yet a survey of pupils by Parents at Work in 1995 showed it is difficult to generalise. (P3L24) Secondary school pupils in the 1995 survey expressed satisfaction at their independence and the sense of freedom and space which being alone at home provided. (P3L25) Obviously there is less supervision of television, but with the increasing number of children with tv sets in their bedrooms they're already unsupervised.

(P4L26) One reason why even more women will work is the Government's new pension policy: earn your own. (P4L27) Another is the increase in divorce. (P4L28) Yet there is a work watershed - perhaps 50 hours at which point families do suffer. (P4L29) There are still far too few family-friendly employers. (P4L30) Too many excessive hours are worked for fear of losing a job or promotion. (P4L31) A party of the family would not leave it to employers but provide a legislative underpinning against excessive working hours. (P4L32) Dare it be said, they might even endorse the EU directive or embrace the social chapter to ensure such protection.

Labour aims at the top

(P1L1) If Tony Blair and Gordon Brown consider that a Labour cabinet would not be worth the increased level of pay that Parliament has approved, that is a matter for them. (P1L2) Looking at some of Labour's shadow team, perhaps they have a point. (P1L3) The pay rise that MPs awarded themselves, at the same time as the Commons approved the ministerial increases, certainly stuck in the public's gullet. (P1L4) But there is no good reason why the pay awards due to judges, top civil servants and senior military officers should also, as Labour proposes, be withheld. (P1L5) No one has seriously suggested that these groups are overpaid, least of all in comparison with the private sector.

(P2L6) The bald fact is that Labour's proposed freeze on "top people's" pay has no economic or financial justification. (P2L7) In relation to the overall public pay bill, the saving would be minimal. (P2L8) Nor has Mr Brown suggested that the generals, judges and mandarins are falling down on the job. (P2L9) Instead, he says they should forgo their pay rise to show leadership. (P2L10) That is surely the job of politicians, not public servants.

(P3L11) But then this proposal is a purely political gesture. (P3L12) Mr Brown is distrusted by both the unions and Left-wing Labour backbenchers. (P3L13) When he let it be known that an incoming Labour government would abide by any decision to phase next year's pay awards to more than a million public sector workers, both groups were dismayed. (P3L14) Now Mr Brown hopes that his critics will be mollified by a display of hostility towards those whom they quite wrongly consider to be "fat cats".

(P4L15) Of course nobody likes to hear that his pay rise will be phased. (P4L16) If, as seems likely, the Cabinet decides this morning to phase in next year's pay awards, many hard-working public servants will be upset. (P4L17) But any government has a duty to manage the public finances responsibly. (P4L18) The pay review bodies that decide these matters for much of the public sector are independent. (P4L19) If they come up with awards higher than the Exchequer can afford, then sometimes these will have to be phased.

(P5L20) That, however, is different from picking on a few particular groups for purely political reasons. (P5L21) Senior officials and military

officers —and certainly judges — are generally paid less than they might earn elsewhere, but in return they expect the system to treat them by the rules. (P5L22) To single them out, as Mr Brown has, is deeply unfair.

(P6L23) Ominously, this latest move appears to be one of a kind with several other Labour proposals. (P6L24) Its refusal to fund a new royal yacht and its determination to scrap the assisted places scheme and to impose a windfall tax all have one thing in common. (P6L25) They are intended to reassure the Left that the old notions of class war and enforced equality have not been entirely forgotten. (P6L26) Unable or unwilling to spell out its plans for government, Labour seems increasingly to be falling back on gestures and pretty mean gestures at that —to reassure its own core supporters that it could be trusted in office.

Labour's Inspector

Increasing unanimity on school standards is to be welcomed

(P1L1) In no other area of policy have the two main parties come together so far and so fast since Tony Blair became Labour leader than over the issue of school standards. (P1L2) In the old days Labour supported the teachers and the Tories backed the inspection service. (P1L3) Now there is near-unanimity and, in some areas, cross-fertilisation. (P1L4) Yesterday, the Conservatives developed two ideas which were originally Labour's, while Chris Woodhead, Chief Inspector of Schools, delivered his annual report safe in the knowledge that he would keep his job if Labour won.

(P2L5) Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary, announced her plans for the first round of five-year-old tests, known as "baseline assessment" because they provide a base against which the subsequent performance of primary schools can be judged. (P2L6) First suggested by Labour, these ought to enable schools to be compared with each other, with due allowance made for the quality of their intake. (P2L7) In theory, parents will be able to see in which schools pupils make the biggest improvement.

(P3L8) Unfortunately, in a typical example of trimming from Mrs Shephard, this admirable aim will not be achieved. (P3L9) Because the Education Secretary is unwilling to insist upon a standardised national test, schools will use different ones and parents will not be able to compare like with like. (P3L10) Given how simple and uncontentious the proposed tests are - counting to ten, recognising letters, writing one's name and so on - it seems extraordinary that Mrs Shephard has not demanded a uniform design. (P3L11) She accepts that "in due course" a national scheme would "suggest itself". (P3L12) Why not now?

(P4L13) Mrs Shephard's announcement came, perhaps not coincidentally, on the day that Mr Woodhead published his annual report. (P4L14) The relationship between the two has its prickly moments: if Labour wins the election, it would be helpful if David Blunkett and Mr Woodhead saw each other more as allies than rivals.

(P5L15) While the Chief Inspector has his political enemies (chief among whom is Don Foster, the misguided Liberal Democrat education spokesman), Messrs Blunkett and Blair have so far shown themselves to

be supportive. (P5L16) The very confirmation that Mr Woodhead should stay in his post, despite complaints from the Left that he is too close to the Tories, is in itself a welcome gesture.

(P6L17) Mr Woodhead is exactly the lightning conductor that Labour would need if it were to have any success in reversing the culture of low standards and low expectations that the Chief Inspector so deplors.

(P6L18) Mr Blunkett is fierce in his denunciation of poor teachers and schools; Mr Woodhead would be in a position to furnish the supporting evidence, and could absorb much of the inevitable flak from the teaching profession.

(P7L19) The danger for all Education Secretaries is that they come to identify themselves with the school system and become defensive about its faults. (P7L20) Then they are liable to see legitimate criticism by the Chief Inspector as politically embarrassing. (P7L21) For Mr Blunkett to succeed in his aims as Education Secretary, he would need to maintain for as long as possible a distance from the system over which he presided. (P7L22) This would also mean being prepared to criticise Labour local education authorities which were not up to scratch.

(P8L23) The best way to ensure this distance would be to guarantee the independence of Ofsted, over which Mr Woodhead presides, and to use Ofsted reports as ammunition in the battle against bad teachers and schools. (P8L24) So far Mr Blunkett has protected Mr Woodhead against ill-advised attacks from his own side. (P8L25) If he has any sense, he will continue to do so if he wins office.

Lords on target

(P1L1) The Government's defeats in the Lords on the firearms Bill are just deserts for its weakness and opportunism following Dunblane. (P1L2) As we have argued from the very beginning of this sorry episode, the legislation is a coercive measure born of a tide of understandable but unreasoning emotion. (P1L3) By contrast, the Lords have showed their mettle. (P1L4) They did what they are supposed to do: to revise hasty and injudicious measures without fear of public opinion. (P1L5) In standing up for an unfashionable minority, namely gunowners and manufacturers, they proved that the survival of our liberties owes as much to pre-democratic components of the constitution as to those parts based on the universal franchise.

(P2L6) Although they will be reversed in the Commons by agreement between the Government and Opposition front benches, the Lords' amendments none the less served as useful reminders of the extent of the forthcoming deprivation of freedom. (P2L7) As one peer observed, the Bill—as drafted—practically eliminates the sporting use of pistols while providing for a negligible increase in public safety. (P2L8) The amendments were designed to iron out some of the legislation's more perverse side-effects: 70-75 per cent of pistol clubs would go out of business because they could not afford the prohibitively expensive provisions to keep the remaining legal weapons secure, not to mention the manufacturers and dealers who would be compensated only to the value of their current stock.

(P3L9) In both cases, the Government's responses were inadequate. (P3L10) It rejected the option of "disassembly" of weapons. (P3L11) Its grounds for so doing were that "determined and motivated" individuals could reassemble guns at will. (P3L12) But peers correctly rejoindered that such persons would not go through the tortuous procedure of acquiring possibly incompatible parts, when they could obtain complete weapons illegally. (P3L13) And, on the question of compensation, it offered no proper answer to the point that the loss of livelihood in a licensed business is no less interference with the peaceful enjoyment of possessions and property as is the loss of the right to use land or to own shares.

(P4L14) The answer, of course, is that the Government has compounded the injury of instant legislation with the insult of parsimony. (P4L15) In such a climate, those most affected have not had a fair hearing, and an Opposition frontbencher even accused the cross-bench coalition of dissidents of succumbing to the special pleading of interested parties. (P4L16) But as another peer pointed out, that is what the High Court of Parliament is all about —the forum for the vexed or the wronged to secure relief from the great men of the kingdom.

Mental illness needs a broader treatment

(P1L1) "Mental illness" doesn't exist. (P1L2) No, that is not to recycle some fashionable Sixties nostrum. (P1L3) It is to say we use the phrase to cover a variety of quite different medical conditions responding to no single set of therapies.

(P2L4) Mental illness demands the attention of no one set of professionals. (P2L5) In seven years the schizophrenic Christopher Clunis was seen by four teaching hospitals, three local psychiatric services, one probation hostel, two prisons, five social services departments, one sheltered housing scheme and five bed-and-breakfast placements. (P2L6) Bad enough: but manic depression is as prevalent as schizophrenia; it is just less visible. (P2L7) Up to 30 per cent of those aged 80-plus suffer from dementia, while up to one in five young people suffers from some kind of severe mental problem or disorder. (P2L8) And most mentally ill people spend most of their lives in our midst, in "the community", albeit often out of sight.

(P3L9) All that is to make the point that there can never be a definitive national scheme or system for the treatment of mental illness or the care of the mentally ill. (P3L10) Much more can and should be done to coordinate the flow of funds into general health and social services budgets intended to provide for the mentally ill. (P3L11) The care of the mentally ill demonstrates a pathology of government in the UK - "departmentalism" and the refusal of professionals and specialised policy-makers to surrender turf.

(P4L12) Some of that professional rivalry is based on genuine differences of view. (P4L13) In some case histories, there is no single "right answer". (P4L14) What that implies is that the space for experimentation needs to be as broad as possible, so that we can all learn what works. (P4L15) That inevitably means a degree of administrative untidiness. (P4L16) The trick - and cases such as Clunis and Zito demonstrate the human cost of failure - is to preserve space for innovation while ensuring that needy people do not fall through it; to patch together the medical and social services agencies into a seamless whole.

(P5L17) So: community care is dead - long live community care!
(P5L18) The high hopes of a decade and a half ago for closing the

hospitals and accommodating the mentally ill down the street have evaporated. (P5L19) Realism has dawned. (P5L20) We probably now have too few beds in dedicated psychiatric units and hospitals. (P5L21) But we also know that what matters as much as bed numbers is throughput — that is to say, not allowing patients who do not need residential care to block beds.

(P6L22) Stephen Dorrell's Green Paper is the Whitehall equivalent of wetting a finger and sticking it in the air to see which way the wind is blowing. (P6L23) The Health Secretary's good intentions are not in doubt; a decent and serious man, as well as an ambitious one, he deserves credit for giving the care of the mentally ill his attention - there are few votes in it.

(P7L24) He certainly deserves a more considered response than his shadow was prepared to give him yesterday. (P7L25) Chris Smith has fallen into the trap of reflex reactions to government announcements, always of a carping and critical nature. (P7L26) (Since Gordon Brown's announcement banning additional spending by Labour, Mr Smith really will have to start singing a more convincing tune than the archaic melody that says spend, spend, spend.)

(P8L27) The problem with the Green Paper yesterday was obvious on page one. (P8L28) It was signed by a single secretary of state - yet the core of the problem is that responsibility has to be shared between the domains of government. (P8L29) It ought to have been co-written with the Environment, Employment and Social Security Secretaries as well as the Health Secretary. (P8L30) At least it should have recognised that lack of co-ordination at the centre is part of the reason why "community care" has not lived up to the expectations of struggling families, worried neighbours and angry health professionals. (P8L31) Government passes money to local authorities through a support grant manipulated by the Environment Department, which has too little contact with the Department of Health. (P8L32) Some new arrangement is needed, perhaps a dedicated ministerial task force or a policy agency with a mission to deliver across departmental boundaries.

(P9L33) Those who present themselves to the state as mentally ill need a single and enduring reference in the system, a case worker who stays on the case — who persists. (P9L34) The mentally ill won't worry about whether they are being entered into a Care Programme (what the NHS

offers the mentally ill) or receiving Managed Care (how local authority social services define things): what matters is that there is a path that can lead out of medical treatment into a Benefits Agency office and a housing association.

(P10L35) The Green Paper, hedging its bets, offers options for remaking the local commissioning agency for mental illness. (P10L36) One of them —the creation of new ad hoc authorities - is said to be a brainchild of Number 10. (P10L37) Whoever its author, it is a still-born solution. (P10L38) Such an agency would be a creature of central government, but provision for the mentally ill is predominantly a local service, depending as it does on variations in jobs, housing, demography and (not to be forgotten) public attitudes towards mentally ill neighbours.

(P11L39) This is a ferociously complicated subject, which requires sharper government thinking and clearer lines of communication. (P11L40) It is not a popular subject; you will hear few, if any, speeches about it during the election campaign. (P11L41) But it is hugely important to tens of thousands of our fellow citizens and their families. (P11L42) "Mental illness" may not exist as a single category. (P11L43) But the pain, fear and confusion is widespread and under-discussed; and these sufferers have had a rotten deal from the rest of us.

Milosevic And Friends

The world must speak to Belgrade with one voice

(P1L1) With water-cannon, tear-gas and baton charges that have injured hundreds of peaceable Serbian protesters, Slobodan Milosevic has turned to his feared paramilitary police — the last organ of authority on which he believes he can rely — to manufacture a breakdown in public order. (P1L2) His purpose is presumably to give himself a pretext for declaring a state of emergency, which would enable him to ignore any court order reinstating the opposition local election victories in Belgrade and other Serbian centres which he has refused to respect.

(P2L3) This abuse of police power is just what student and opposition leaders have feared from the start, 78 days ago, of their remarkable vigil for democracy; and for the first time, events may be slipping beyond their control. (P2L4) A few of the thousands of demonstrators have finally lost patience and hit back with stones and bottles. (P2L5) That plays Mr Milosevic's game. (P2L6) Overnight, the situation in Serbia has become dangerous.

(P3L7) From Prague to London, European governments have reacted with indignation and anxiety. (P3L8) As Malcolm Rifkind said yesterday, violence will do nothing to solve the crisis in Serbia. (P3L9) But the only basis for political dialogue is for Mr Milosevic to cede the electoral ground first - if not on principle, which is not a word in his vocabulary, then on the pragmatic ground that using force to override inconvenient voting results merely stacks up more trouble to come. (P3L10) At present, he seems not to care about the long term, so long as he can suppress the symptoms of disgust with his rule for a few days or weeks.

(P4L11) It only takes 500 heavily armed paramilitaries to stop 50,000 unarmed marchers. (P4L12) Yet Mr Milosevic is gambling with a weak hand. (P4L13) The army is uneasy, some of his own ministers have publicly denounced him without his daring to sack them as he would once have done — and the Orthodox Church, which has sided emphatically with the protesters, is challenging the police to behave as guardians of order and not of a regime "sinking into ignorance".

(P5L14) What the West can do is to underline its support for democracy, as France is doing by extending recognition to the Zajedno opposition coalition and inviting its leaders to Paris, and to emphasise in deed as well as word that Mr Milosevic is returning Serbia to international isolation.

(P6L15) The greater the co-ordination of Western policies towards Serbia, the better. At government-to-government level, a serious effort is being made. (P6L16) But in Britain's case, the impact of official firmness is weakened by the business involvement with Mr Milosevic of Douglas Hurd, the former Foreign Secretary, and of Dame Pauline Neville-Jones, who was the Foreign Office representative at the Dayton talks.

(P7L17) Of his success in securing for NatWest Markets, his part-time employer, a contract worth £10 million to organise the privatisation of Serbia's telecommunications, Mr Hurd airily says that he "can't do anything about the political side" while claiming that NatWest is justified in making money out of promoting market liberalisation in Serbia. (P7L18) Neither statement bears scrutiny. (P7L19) As to political influence, Mr Hurd knows that he is seen in Belgrade as a link with government. (P7L20) And he should surely have learnt by now that Mr Milosevic is a man whose dedication to free markets goes no deeper than the calculation that selling off Serbia's only profitable state enterprise will replenish the cashflow he needs to pay his riot police.

Milosevic at Bay

(P1L1) Slobodan Milosevic's decision to recognise all opposition gains in the municipal elections is a tremendous victory for those who have braved riot police and bitter cold to condemn his arbitrary rule. (P1L2) The Serbian president's capitulation, which will give the Zajedno coalition control of the capital, Belgrade, could well be a watershed in his political fortunes. (P1L3) If the opposition can sustain the drive for reform which it has evinced over the past 11 weeks, it will thoroughly undermine Mr Milosevic's power as his term draws to a close. (P1L4) By the end of the year, even the bolt-hole offered by the presidency of the Yugoslav rump (Serbia and Montenegro) could be barred. (P1L5) Thus, the ruthless architect of Greater Serbia would be swept away along with his revanchist dreams.

(P2L6) That moment has yet to come. (P2L7) The immediate challenge for the opposition leaders is to maintain pressure on the government, to convince their followers that the electoral concession is no gracious gesture of conciliation, but rather the signal for broadening their attack on the whole rotten fabric of the Milosevic dictatorship. (P2L8) The demands made by students yesterday for the resignation of the Interior Minister, Zoran Sokotovic, and the punishment of riot police who assaulted demonstrators on Sunday and Monday, were a good start: it is the police, rather than the army, who are the president's ultimate line of defence.

(P3L9) Obvious targets for the opposition are the stranglehold which Mr Milosevic exercises over the media; the dire state of the economy; abuses of human rights; the free rein given to paramilitary groups; and widespread criminality in what has become a kleptocracy.

(P4L10) The main Western states, having once cultivated Mr Milosevic as a source of stability in the region, must translate their new-found distaste for his methods into a clear warning of the consequences of further misbehaviour. (P4L11) He should be told that any attempt to bludgeon the opposition or to stoke the fires of Serbian nationalism over Kosovo or the Bosnian town of Brcko will be met by the re-tightening of economic sanctions and, in the case of Bosnia, by the armed might of the Nato-led Stabilisation Force.

(P5L12) The opposition and the outside powers would do well to coordinate a squeeze on Mr Milosevic. (P5L13) His future should hold not the prospect of continued high office, rather investigation as a war criminal by the international tribunal in The Hague.

Nawaz Sharif's landslide

The urgent need is to strengthen democracy

(P1L1) Who will guide Pakistan's democracy after the sweeping success of Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League?

(P1L2) The unexpected size of his victory over Benazir Bhutto gives him the strength to take on the president and generals whose version of "guided democracy" has dominated the past eight years — if he dares. (P1L3) But the huge number of non-voters suggests that most Pakistanis have adopted a more sceptical view.

(P2L4) Mr Sharif's supporters were busy yesterday claiming that the result gives the green light to democracy. (P2L5) They argue that he offers a modern alternative to the semi-feudal Pakistan People's Party of Ms Bhutto, and the prospect of evolving towards full parliamentary rule.

(P2L6) If this is really so, then Mr Sharif has the chance to prove it very soon. (P2L7) Last week the Supreme Court upheld the power to dismiss elected governments — by virtue of the notorious Eighth Amendment dating back to the era of direct military rule which was used by President Farooq Leghari to remove Ms Bhutto last November (and had previously been employed against Mr Sharif in 1993). (P2L8) The Court ruled that this amendment can only be removed by a two-thirds majority in Parliament. (P2L9) Mr Sharif now has the strength to persuade the smaller parties to join him in doing so. (P2L10) He could also press for abolition of the new Council for Defence and National Security set up by Mr Leghari in January. (P2L11) This supposedly "advisory" body gives the military its first formal say in government affairs. (P2L12) Opponents of Mr Sharif claim he struck a secret deal with Mr Leghari under which he would be allowed to regain power as long as he listened to the Council. (P2L13) Instead of saying weakly that parliament should "wait and see" how the Council behaves, he could scotch the rumour fast by taking action. (P2L14) For a politician who began his career as a protégé of the dictator General Zia ul-Haq, it would be quite a test of his resolve.

(P3L15) Another way in which Mr Sharif could prove he is a modern capitalist alternative to the populist feudalism of the PPP would be to revive the abortive attempt of Ms Bhutto's father to carry out a genuine land reform and break the power base of the sardars and zamindars.

(P3L16) Mr Sharif is likely to do little more than tinker with the question by offering more rural credit: his own party is after all also

heavily dependent upon cash and blocs of vote delivered by loyal landlords. (P3L17) There is less doubt about his intention of implementing the "tough" reforms already instituted (under pressure from the International Monetary Fund) by Mr Leghari — which will do nothing to improve the daily lot of most Pakistanis.

(P4L18) Imran Khan and his illusory Movement for Justice should now be given an overdue break from Western media attention which was too easily magnetised by his cricket and his wife. (P4L19) But what are we to think of Ms Bhutto? Her tarnished record and dubious connections have made her the author of most of her misfortunes. (P4L20) But she has also suffered domestically for daring to be a woman, and abroad from criticism which is sometimes tinged with malice. (P4L21) While denouncing the result, her reaction to defeat yesterday was more sober than had been predicted by her enemies. (P4L22) She wished Mr Sharif good luck and offered her cooperation "in creating stability in the country." (P4L23) To some extent this is an acknowledgement of the PPP's new weakness, reduced from national status to that of virtually a provincial party. (P4L24) But Ms Bhutto may also reckon that if Mr Sharif is at all inclined to do what is needed to strengthen democracy, then even now he may need her help.

Pakistan fails to vote

(P1L1) Since the mid-1980s, democracy has made striking advances across Asia, from the Philippines to South Korea and Pakistan. (P1L2) This trend, likewise evident in Latin America and Africa, has substituted political pluralism for dictatorship and pushed the military out of government and back to barracks. (P1L3) The transition has not been easy: illiberal habits acquired under the old systems have proved hard to kick. (P1L4) Yet the popular enthusiasm which greeted, say, the fall of President Marcos or the end of General Zia's rule left no doubt that Asians wanted more say in the way they were governed. (P1L5) The end of the Cold War, and the consequent waning of Western interest in backing anti-Communist autocrats, has imparted additional momentum to the democratic cause. (P1L6) Dictatorial regimes such as those in China, North Korea and Burma appear increasingly anomalous.

(P2L7) It is in the light of this political evolution that the result of yesterday's election in Pakistan is so dispiriting. (P2L8) First, it saw the return to power of Nawaz Sharif, a man who, with Benazir Bhutto, has been prominent in a polity marked over the past decade by fraud,

corruption and violence. (P2L9) More significant, the remarkably low turn-out suggests that the Pakistani electorate is losing interest in democracy, that the hopes raised by General Zia's death in 1988 have given way to bitter indifference. (P2L10) Successive governments have been dismissed by successive presidents on grounds of improper behaviour, but the same leaders have re-emerged as prime minister and the situation has steadily worsened. (P2L11) In such circumstances, it is hardly surprising that Pakistanis should be disinclined to vote. (P2L12) The feeling of helplessness must be akin to that under military rule.

(P3L13) The result is a political vacuum. (P3L14) The legitimacy of the new prime minister is weakened by the low electoral turn-out. (P3L15) The Army, while happy to remain influential behind the scenes, does not want to return to running the country. (P3L16) The lack of clear authority gives rise to conditions in which religious and ethnic extremism can thrive. (P3L17) Voters who believe that their views cannot be properly represented in parliament will more readily turn to illegal means of seeking satisfaction. (P3L18) Such absence of leadership will damn Pakistan's chances of attracting investment and strengthening a floundering economy.

(P4L19) The answer to these problems lies with the politicians themselves. (P4L20) If they abandoned their corrupt ways, they could start to win back the confidence of the electorate. (P4L21) If the two main parties co-operated in the National Assembly, they could remove the constitutional vestiges of military rule bequeathed by General Zia and buttress the position of the prime minister. (P4L22) Unless that happens, Pakistan will continue to drift through a minefield of sectarian violence, economic indiscipline and confrontation with India.

(P5L23) As the 50th anniversary of partition approaches, it is up to the civilian rulers of Pakistan to prove that the creation of their country has not been a mistake of historic proportions.

Pakistan's Opportunity

The economy must be put before political vengeance

(P1L1) Mian Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League (PML) has won an unexpectedly decisive victory in the Pakistan elections so decisive that it frees Mr Sharif to govern without currying favour with Pakistan's Islamist parties. (P1L2) If, as expected, the final count gives his party Ω the two-thirds majority required to alter the constitution, he should also be in a position to reassert the authority of Parliament in relation to the President and the military. (P1L3) Both prospects —of firm one-party government instead of precarious coalitions and of a power shift in favour of elected politicians — will be welcomed by most educated Pakistani democrats.

(P2L4) If, which is far from certain, Mr Sharif uses power more wisely than he did as Prime Minister from 1990 to 1993, he has an opportunity to stabilise his economically, socially and politically bankrupt country. (P2L5) But this is an eagle's eye view of Pakistani politics; the majority of voters showed, by staying away from the polling booths, that they do not share the same perspective. (P2L6) Constitutional reform exercises their minds far less than deepening poverty, violent streets and the corruption and misgovernment hanging over the governing class.

(P3L7) They chose a politician whose dismissal on grounds of corruption dates back four years rather than another, Benazir Bhutto, whose dismissal on the same grounds last November is fresh in the memory. (P3L8) Imran Khan's appeal as a fresh face evaporated possibly because he lacked the money to bus voters to the polling booths but equally possibly, and encouragingly, because voters do not really want an Islamist government or the introduction of sharia.

(P4L9) But the electorate showed little faith that these elections would transform Pakistan. Voter apathy was the main enemy of all the parties contesting these elections; and apathy won more votes than any of them. (P4L10) Given the abysmal turnout, Mr Sharif's mandate is less than resoundingly convincing. (P4L11) As for Miss Bhutto, whose party lost all but a quarter of its parliamentary seats, whatever she may find to complain about in the conduct of the elections even she cannot dispute that this is a stinging defeat. (P4L12) International observers found irregularities, but do not dispute the result. (P4L13) Sagely, Miss Bhutto

appears to have withdrawn her campaign threat to boycott Parliament and take to the streets if defeated.

(P5L14) In return, Mr Sharif should be careful to ensure that any corruption charges brought against Miss Bhutto, her husband and associates are processed with exemplary respect for the rule of law.

(P5L15) That must be part of the new start the voters have been promised; given the possibility that writs could be moved seeking to disqualify Mr Sharif under the new accountability laws introduced by President Leghari, it would also be prudent on his part. (P5L16) Above all, the last thing Pakistan can afford is time wasted in political score-settling.

(P6L17) The country is at the point of defaulting on its international debt. Half its factories are closed. (P6L18) The urban unemployed, particularly the young, are easy recruits for the violent feuding between Sunni and Shia. (P6L19) But the technocrats who have been running the country since November have taken many of the tough economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked, drastically shrinking state spending and payrolls and introducing reforms to banking and the hopelessly skewed tax system. (P6L20) Mr Sharif has a reputation for erratic populism, but he is also a successful businessman. (P6L21) He should put his business instincts first and make the implementation of these reforms his absolute priority. (P6L22) Constitutional reform can wait.

Poison we must live with

(P1L1) The German playwright Bertolt Brecht once observed that Hitlerism might be dead, but "the bitch that bore her is in heat again". (P1L2) Of no group is this truer than of those "revisionist historians" who deny, that the Holocaust of six million Jews ever happened. (P1L3) In consequence, Austria, France, Germany and several other countries have made it an offence to assert that the crime of the century did not occur. (P1L4) Increasingly, Britain's relatively feeble far Right has sought to make the same poisonous claim. (P1L5) Hence the Private Members' Bill currently making its way through the House of Commons which seeks to introduce a similar law in this country. (P1L6) Such legislation has now received the endorsement, in principle, of the Labour leadership.

(P2L7) No one can doubt the anguish which "revisionist" propaganda causes, especially among Holocaust survivors and their descendants. (P2L8) Those responsible are rarely, if ever, seekers after truth. (P2L9) Rather, their purpose is ideological: the rehabilitation of the Nazi regime. (P2L10) But there is no evidence that another law is the best, or indeed appropriate, way to deal with such behaviour. (P2L11) Consider first the political aspect. (P2L12) Mercifully, British neo-Nazis are a divided, pathetic crew who command scarcely any attention compared with their continental confederates. (P2L13) Many look forward with relish to opportunities for martyrdom and free publicity that would be afforded by high-profile trials and even prison sentences.

(P3L14) On the legal side, still more important questions arise. (P3L15) It is unclear what kinds of "revisionist" activity would be covered by this new offence. (P3L16) Many neo-Nazis do not deny the Holocaust in toto but are, rather, "Holocaust reductionists": they assert that far fewer people perished than was actually the case. (P3L17) Are they also to be covered by the new law? (P3L18) If not, the proposed Bill is likely, in its own terms, to be ineffective since the cleverer neo-Nazis will push things to the very limits of what is permissible. (P3L19) But if "Holocaust reductionists" were to be included in such legislation, it is unclear how neo-Nazi pamphleteers might be distinguished from bona fide historians who believe, on factual grounds, that fewer than six million people died.

(P4L20) If it is enacted, other persecuted groups are bound to demand similar legal protection. (P4L21) Eastern European refugees will no doubt ask why communist sympathisers in the West who deny Stalin's

crimes should not also go to prison. (P4L22) There is a real danger that such well intentioned legislation could descend into profound illiberalism. (P4L23) As they prepare for the second reading, MPs must bear in mind that to criminalise opinion, however erroneous or odious, is a path fraught with tremendous perils.

Receiving you muffled and unclear, Mr

(P1L1) Sir Humphrey Apply, Mr Justice Cocklecarrot and Air Chief Marshal Sir Peter Harding are all lumped together, for the purposes of pay, as Top People. (P1L2) Their jobs are as different as can be but they sort of fit together in the public imagination. (P1L3) There, for all the lurid tales told about the death of deference and the end of authority, high public officials continue to be esteemed. (P1L4) But not so much that the public is going to think depriving them of a 5 per cent pay rise (worth £4,500 a year for someone on £90,000) is the height of injustice. (P1L5) Gordon Brown, for all his lugubrious air, is light on his feet: making an example of Top People's pay will prove tactically adept. (P1L6) It does, as they say, send a signal. (P1L7) More than one, in fact. (P1L8) It waves to lower-paid public servants, nurses included, whose 1997 pay rise may not be paid in full. (P1L9) It is also a cheery and - if one is permitted such an anachronistic word these days - fraternal gesture in a leftwards direction, towards party colleagues still smarting over his commitment not to raise income tax rates for the higher-paid.

(P2L10) Good electoral politics, then, which once more leaves the Conservatives floundering - John Major's reply yesterday was poor stuff, accusing Labour of adopting positions because of their public relations value (Shame! Shame!) (P2L11) Yet, not for the first time, Labour's accomplished playing of the electoral game raises questions about the party's capacity to switch sides when and if it finds itself taking power. (P2L12) This is, to coin a phrase, a game of two halves. (P2L13) In the second period the party's leaders will be responsible for the effective running of those public services, those courts, that army and that navy. (P2L14) Then they will realise that you can certainly depress the pay of undersecretaries and alter the balance between what judges get on the bench and what lawyers get at the Bar. (P2L15) Nothing dramatic happens at first, but gradually the quality and efficiency of those services declines and there will be no Tory government to kick around any more.

(P3L16) Still, Gordon Brown made his pronouncements on pay with some masterly touches. (P3L17) A light allusion here to the Dunkirk Spirit (© Harold Wilson in sundry hours of need), a glancing evocation there of the politics of envy. (P3L18) And was Tony Blair listening to his shadow Chancellor talk of "fairness" and "sacrifice" for all the world as if

he were addressing conference in the Winter Gardens in Blackpool in the 1970s? (P3L19) More likely he was perspiring a little at the shades of Old Labourism.

(P4L20) Still, Mr Blair's momentary sweat might have led him to consider some of his own recent political signalling. (P4L21) To treat Colonel Blimp and other readers of The Daily Telegraph to a breathless encomium to Britain's armed forces, as he did the other day, might look like a tactical foray into enemy territory. (P4L22) Unfortunately, though, it may prove to sit uneasily with a party leader who is very likely, in the near future, to need to take some hard decisions that will drastically reorganise our armed forces, and save large sums of money for spending on more urgent purposes.

(P5L23) Another telling omission in the thoughts of Labour's leader was apparent this week in his discussion of the future for London's transport. (P5L24) A word beginning with "p" seemed on the tip of his tongue more than once. (P5L25) It emerged as private sector partnership. (P5L26) He tried again with private finance but still could not quite utter the word for which he was clearly struggling. (P5L27) The word is privatisation.

(P6L28) Privatisation. (P6L29) It's not so hard to say. (P6L30) Why should new Labour have any problem uttering it? (P6L31) No one claims privatisation would remove the need for short-run revenue subsidy for London Underground. (P6L32) Even Sir George Young admits that a huge backlog of essential maintenance needs to be subtracted from the notional proceeds of a sale. (P6L33) None the less, among the ways forward for a network on which the life of the capital depends is the substitution of private management and ownership for public within a framework of regulation and subsidy. (P6L34) And yet Mr Blair could not quite spit it out.

(P7L35) It was more of a pity, because surely the future of London Underground is intimately bound up with Labour's pledge to effective government for the London conurbation; Labour's recognition, in clear distinction from the Conservatives, that the government of London has to have some measure of direct democracy, whether in the shape of a directly elected "mayor" or otherwise. (P7L36) Labour says it wants a strategic authority; well, not a mini-GLC, we hope, nor a bunch of the same tired nominees from boroughs. (P7L37) What London needs is a

strategic executive, politically led, not an authority, bureaucratically bemused. (P7L38) And we need to know if this executive gets any money to spend.

(P8L39) For London's sake it will have to tax and spend, as well as coordinate and regulate across and under the built-up area. (P8L40) Much depends on the shape privatisation takes. (P8L41) But a great advantage for a private sector Underground, under contract to an elected London government, would be its freedom to borrow on the capital markets. (P8L42) It would need to, for a massive task of investment lies ahead. (P8L43) Its incentive would be a set of London government guarantees on revenue, backed by new pan-London planning powers for road, rail and other forms of transport and a direct contribution by London business and domestic residents to pay for their infrastructure - a city tax, to be explicit.

(P9L44) The gratifying thing about the election campaign so far is that we are learning something new every day. (P9L45) The troubling thing is, we are not yet getting all the important signals loud and clear.

Stand By The Rock

Britain must not compromise on Gibraltar's sovereignty

(P1L1) Speaking in the House of Commons last week, John Major reaffirmed a British commitment to Gibraltar which should not have been in any doubt at all. (P1L2) The Government, he said, stood firmly by the Rock, and would never hand over sovereignty to Spain against the wishes of the Gibraltarian people.

(P2L3) Gibraltar was buoyed by Mr Major's declaration, as it was by a robust statement to the same effect by Malcolm Rifkind, the Foreign Secretary, put out the day before. (P2L4) Both assertions were made in response to a leaked proposal by Abel Matutes, Spain's Foreign Minister, suggesting a lengthy period of Anglo-Spanish "co-sovereignty" over Gibraltar, after which the colony would "revert to Spain".

(P3L5) In an interview with The Times, published today, Peter Caruana, Gibraltar's moderate Chief Minister, describes the Matutes proposals as "absurd and laughable". (P3L6) He is correct. (P3L7) Both Mr Major and Mr Rifkind were right to reject it without compromise: anything less would have rightly earned them widespread condemnation.

(P4L8) Britain has made a commitment to Gibraltar of a very precise kind. (P4L9) That commitment has not only been written into the colony's Constitution of 1969 (which Spain denounces as an illegal document), it has also been woven into the practice of all British Governments since then. (P4L10) That weave cannot easily be unravelled, nor should attempts be made to do so. (P4L11) Gibraltar, furthermore, is a political issue on which a cross-party consensus has always existed. (P4L12) Mr Major made the Government's position clear in public last week and Labour spokesmen on foreign affairs have privately assured Mr Caruana that a Blair government would respect the wishes of Gibraltar's people no less closely.

(P5L13) Spain, however, has never recognised the Gibraltarian people as valid shareholders in their own future. (P5L14) While that country was under the dictatorship of General Franco, such a posture was not unduly surprising: notions such as "self-determination" were not part of the General's vocabulary. (P5L15) Yet what is surprising, even bewildering, is the abject failure of a democratic post-Franco Spain to grasp the fact

that Britain can find no proposals for Gibraltar acceptable unless they take account of the freely expressed wishes of its people.

(P6L16) For that reason, "co-sovereignty" is a stillborn idea. (P6L17) Gibraltar's people simply do not want to be Spanish, even in hotly bargained fractions. (P6L18) Is it so remarkable that Gibraltarians should fail to muster even an iota of enthusiasm for Spain when its Foreign Minister blithely describes them as having "no standing" in the matter of their own future? (P6L19) Can Gibraltarians really be expected to warm to Spain when their daily experience at the border is frequently disagreeable? (P6L20) And can they be expected to condone such petty harassment as the refusal by Spain even to recognise Gibraltar's international telephone code?

(P7L21) In spite of Spain's behaviour, Mr Caruana has declared himself to be in favour of dialogue with Madrid. (P7L22) He has also addressed Spain's concerns about illicit activities on the Rock with an exemplary firmness, all but stamping out the smuggling trade which flourished under Joe Bossano, his predecessor. (P7L23) Still, Spain has shown itself incapable of shifting its policy. (P7L24) Instead, Madrid promotes projects such as "co-sovereignty", which have been mooted, and rejected, in the past. (P7L25) Spain must take account of Gibraltar's wishes, as Britain does. (P7L26) If it cannot, it will not secure the Rock even by the next millennium.

The Cook Currency

Labour remains more likely to lead Britain into EMU

(P1L1) As the election draws near, Labour politicians are finding their European pronouncements subject to the same hard scrutiny that the Conservatives have long had to endure. (P1L2) The smallest hint is interpreted not as trimming to the wind but a change of course. (P1L3) So it was that Robin Cook's remarks on Sunday were pored over yesterday for signs of a shift in the party's position on a single currency.

(P2L4) One newspaper portrayed them as "antiEMU", but most decided that the Shadow Foreign Secretary had increased the chances of a Labour government joining in a second wave. (P2L5) "If it goes ahead and it succeeds," said Mr Cook, "then you cannot stay out. (P2L6) It would take a very sober and serious calculation to stay out beyond 2002." (P2L7) This statement overshadowed his more sceptical comments about winning allies against the Franco-German domination of the EU.

(P3L8) Few believe that a new Labour government would take Britain into a single currency in 1999. (P3L9) Even if Labour leaders thought this desirable (and many do not), the legislation and argument needed, not to speak of the referendum, could destroy a new administration. (P3L10) There is little political gain to be had; and, whatever Gordon Brown may hope, much to be lost.

(P4L11) But voters who are thinking of a switch to Labour still need reassurance that their decision to give the Opposition a five-year chance will not lead to irreversible actions in that period. (P4L12) Is it now more likely that Labour would sign up to the single currency during the next Parliament than that the Conservatives would? (P4L13) Neither party is prepared to oppose EMU in principle. (P4L14) Both claim to be ready to make the judgment on pragmatic grounds. (P4L15) Those grounds could change in unpredictable ways between 1999 and 2002.

(P5L16) Both parties have, over recent years, become less enamoured of the single currency project. (P5L17) Mr Cook has added to the Maastricht criteria other indicators—such as levels of unemployment, industrial output, investment, productivity and export performance. (P5L18) This should enable him to say, closer to 1999, that the necessary convergence has not been achieved. (P5L19) The

Conservatives, meanwhile, have pointed to the fudging of other countries' statistics as a good reason for not joining in the first wave.

(P6L20) Just as the present Cabinet plays host to divergent views on Europe, so does the Shadow Cabinet. (P6L21) Mr Cook, John Prescott and Jack Straw are all sceptical; Gordon Brown, the Shadow Chancellor, is as enthusiastic as Kenneth Clarke. (P6L22) Mr Cook's comments could be seen as an attempt at a rapprochement with Mr Brown, with whom he has frosty relations. (P6L23) Tony Blair, who is as hard to pin down as John Major, does not want to see the sort of bickering over Europe among his lieutenants that the Prime Minister regularly suffers.

(P7L24) If a Labour government decided to join in 2002, the electorate would have a doublelock on its actions. (P7L25) First there would have to be a referendum. (P7L26) And secondly, there would almost certainly be a general election. (P7L27) After that election it would still be possible, albeit expensive, for a new government to extricate the country from EMU.

(P8L28) It would be desirable if voters were to know better what the chances were of EMU membership under each party. (P8L29) Instead, they hear the same equivocations from Labour as they do from the Tories. (P8L30) They can, however, look at the likely complexion of the parliamentary parties. (P8L31) Even if the party leaderships are similarly diverse in their views, the Conservative parliamentary party is more instinctively hostile to EMU than Labour. (P8L32) Mr Blair is a tougher leader than Mr Major and Labour's European policy may thus not be as dangerous as the red-weeping lion in the new Conservative advertisement seems to believe. (P8L33) But, on balance, Labour is still more likely to lead Britain into EMU.



The double sword of justice

The moral of the new OJ trial is as much economic as legal

(P1L1) The second OJ Simpson trial was unlike the first in almost every possible way: the case was already in the public domain — it was a civil action with a lesser burden of proof, there was a different mix of evidence; the judge took a different view on crucial issues of admissibility; and the jury was predominantly white rather than black.

(P1L2) Last and not least, it was not on TV.

(P2L3) It is unwise to conclude that this time justice has been done, and we should resist the temptation to become instant experts. (P2L4) All that can be said with confidence is that the evidence presented this time, in another forum with so many different features from the first - and on a lower standard of probability — pointed strongly in the direction of the verdict which was returned (and by unanimous rather than majority vote). (P2L5) The plaintiffs for Mr Simpson's wife Nicole and her friend Ronald Goodman had the considerable advantage of knowing in advance the main lines of the defence. (P2L6) This time they did not ask the defendant to "try on the gloves." (P2L7) They were able to take pretrial depositions from witnesses — a practice not allowed in criminal proceedings. (P2L8) These built up a mosaic of incriminating (though mostly circumstantial) detail which the defence was unable to demolish. (P2L9) The plaintiffs benefited too from the trial judge's refusal to admit the evidence of racist utterances by Detective Mark Fuhrman which had so strongly swayed the criminal trial jury. (P2L10) Most of all, they were able to put Mr Simpson himself on the stand and to focus on inconsistencies in his account. (P2L11) Instead of the gloves, there were the shoes — which Mr Simpson denied possessing till photos were produced. (P2L12) This was not conclusive evidence but it did his credibility no good at all.

(P3L13) The suggestion that the verdict in the first trial was influenced by the colour of the jurors is itself wholly unproven. (P3L14) They found against a prosecution case which was poorly presented, and for an accused who was brilliantly defended in the best (or worst) barnstorming tradition of the American courtroom. (P3L15) It was clear that the reaction to the outcome of that trial had a strong racial connotation, with cheering in black streets and dismay in white saloon bars. (P3L16) The more muted response yesterday on both sides of the

racial divide has much to do with the passage of time and the absence of TV coverage.

(P4L17) Cases where civil damages are sought against a defendant who has been acquitted in criminal proceedings are still rare. (P4L18) There appears to be a subjective risk of double jeopardy, however distinct the actions may be in legal terms. (P4L19) But the real constraint will be an economic one. (P4L20) Few aggrieved families can afford to take action, and not many defendants have the funds which would make a successful suit financially worthwhile. (P4L21) Perhaps it is just as well. (P4L22) This case has been distinguished by an excess of money as well as of media hype — a combination more likely to produce good theatre than good justice.

The role of a university

A degree is not just about economic returns

(P1L1) A major youth unemployment programme has hit the buffers.
(P1L2) As our education editor documented yesterday, ministers have concluded that the proportion of young people qualifying for higher education will shortly exceed the demand for graduates. (P1L3) In their written evidence to the Dearing Committee which is reviewing higher education, ministers have suggested that the increasing number of young people who obtain two A levels or the equivalent vocational qualifications should no longer be able to regard this as an automatic entry into university. (P1L4) They are worried they will end up in low level posts. (P1L5) In their narrow candle-end counting approach, ministers believe the rate of return on such investment in education would be too low. (P1L6) There was no press conference or private briefing about this decision. (P1L7) The paper setting out this bleak conclusion was just quietly placed in the House of Commons library. (P1L8) Ministers could argue, of course, that this is not new. (P1L9) The Treasury ended automatic entry when it introduced a three-year rolling cap to end the rise in student numbers in 1993. (P1L10) Even so, a watershed had been reached.

(P2L11) The expansion of higher education—within the last decade has been one of the highest social changes of the last 50 years. (P2L12) A 25-year programme designed to double the proportion of 18-year-olds going into higher education was achieved within seven years. (P2L13) The proportion now going on has been frozen at 30 per cent. (P2L14) But this huge expansion was achieved without any sense of direction, or thought about the shape of our higher education system or adequate funding. (P2L15) School leavers with little chance of getting a job piled into the higher education system. (P2L16) The squeeze has hurt both the quality of university education and the capacity of students to survive on savagely reduced maintenance grants. (P2L17) Indeed, far from the proportion of students having reached three in 10, research by Alan Smithers suggests the chance of obtaining higher education over a lifetime is now six in 10. (P2L18) On top of the famous 30 per cent there are the growing number of full-time mature students (14 per cent currently) and a further 21 per cent who are part-time mature students. (P2L19) Both the last two groups already have to pay for their own

maintenance and tuition. (P2L20) One task allotted to Dearing is to make this system fairer.

(P3L21) The financially-strapped university principals have been pressing to introduce tuition fees for a decade. (P3L22) Both major parties have refused to accept the blame for such charges but failed to provide — or in the case of Labour, promise — sufficient funds to maintain standards. (P3L23) Dearing was deliberately set up to report after the election. (P3L24) Most western states now have a contributory tuition element.

(P4L25) But it doesn't need to be either or. (P4L26) There are other options. (P4L27) The £7 billion Treasury higher education grant could be redistributed in more imaginative ways: individual scholarships, rather than crude institutional block grants, for particular purposes: to encourage pupils from poor homes on to degree courses, steer more bright pupils into under-subscribed courses like science and engineering, and possibly correct the imbalance between white and ethnic households. (P4L28) Other students would be able to go to university but would be required to repay the cost of their courses through a graduate tax, repayable over a lifetime. (P4L29) The advantage of such an approach is that it would allow ministers to achieve specific goals while at the same time allowing universities to grow organically. (P4L30) Higher education has much wider purposes than mere economic returns. (P4L31) Knowing the cost is not enough: recognising the value is equally important.

Uniforms, yes: but the issue is standards

(P1L1) That David Blunkett was on the television yesterday morning, but it was so early - what was he talking about again? (P1L2) Children to salute the Union flag on their way in to school? (P1L3) Homework to be doubled? (P1L4) The Lord's Prayer, God Save the Queen and the new Clause IV to become part of the national curriculum? (P1L5) No, no, it was school uniform: luminous blazers to make it easier for conscientious citizens to detect curfew-breakers who are not doing their homework.

(P2L6) With our liberal leanings, it would be easy to oppose school uniform. (P2L7) Few of us liked it when we were at school. (P2L8) But Mr Blunkett is, we have to admit with some regret, utterly right. (P2L9) Training shoes with flashing lights in the heels present too strong an argument.

(P3L10) It is, essentially, the "flashing trainers" argument which has swung the pendulum back from the liberalism of the Seventies.

(P4L11) The wishiest of washy liberals is now in favour of school uniform because they are opposed to fashion one-up-personship, just as they are opposed to all competitive sports. (P4L12) It is not fair on children from poor families to allow them to be visibly outdone in designer labels or expensive Reeboks. (P4L13) As soon as they are old enough to want Umbro and Nike (usually when they cease to be Infants and become Juniors), put them in uniform.

(P5L14) Mr Blunkett reflects the shift in mood. (P5L15) He was leader of Sheffield council in 1981 when it decided its schools could not make the wearing of uniforms compulsory. (P5L16) But as his sons advanced through the comprehensive education system, the more authoritarian and puritanical side of his personality came to the fore. (P5L17) As a parent, he voted to bring back uniforms in his sons' school in Sheffield. (P5L18) And yesterday he said a Labour government would encourage parents to be balloted on compulsory uniforms in all state primary and secondary schools.

(P6L19) Hillary Clinton has made the same ideological journey in America, where uniforms are rare. (P6L20) Most American schools simply have dress codes - "no knives to be worn outside the pants",

that kind of thing but she told the Democratic Convention last year that she wanted school uniforms back.

(P7L21) There is one other good argument in favour of school uniforms: it is that pupils are more recognisable outside schools, which acts as a disincentive to truancy, and makes it easier for teachers to tend their charges.

(P8L22) For the rest, arguments for and against are either trivial, or bad. (P8L23) A delightfully attractive but not at all compelling reason for having uniform is that it gives pupils something relatively harmless to rebel against. (P8L24) Instead of breaking up phone boxes or cutting up bus seats, they can focus their energies on how to tie the biggest knot with the shortest wide bit, or how they can make their skirts shorter by hitching up the waistband.

(P9L25) Poor arguments are mostly sepia-tinted. (P9L26) Getting rid of school uniforms, the blimpish right argues, symbolised the arrival of permissiveness: casual clothes in school blurred the distinction between teacher and pupil, learning and sloth, order and anarchy. (P9L27) Beyond the marginal effect on pupils in signalling that school is different from the rest of life, none of this stands up to scrutiny. (P9L28) But the Tory press will now co-opt Mr Blunkett for the most archaic forms of dress, in their nostalgic reverie of blazers and ties, gymslips and tunics. (P9L29) And the full Bufton Tufton Memorial kit probably costs far more than any Blue Bolt, Calvin Klein or Fila. (P9L30) In practice, most schools strike a sensible balance between cost, practicality and smartness. (P9L31) Ties, for example, are not necessary.

(P10L32) The trouble with the wishy-washies is that they tend to go for a pick 'n' mix approach to uniforms. (P10L33) They tend to go for "soft" uniforms, with many of the elements optional, or even just a tightened up dress code. (P10L34) That defeats the point, which is, to state the obvious, uniformity. (P10L35) Whatever is agreed should be narrowly defined and sensibly but firmly enforced.

(P11L36) That is our opinion, it is Gillian Shephard's and now it is David Blunkett's too. (P11L37) But the important point is that no government should dictate these things. (P11L38) It should be up to parents and staff, and in some degree pupils, to decide. (P11L39)

Giving pupils a say is a good way of encouraging responsibility; a uniform imposed by consent after debate is much likelier to be respected.

(P12L40) Of course, dress codes and school uniforms, like flags and prayer in the United States, are essentially peripheral matters, used for their symbolism by politicians of all stripes because the real issues that matter in education are much harder to tackle. (P12L41) Pupils wearing uniforms don't make for better teachers, nor do they instantly become cleverer: they just create a better climate for organising learning. (P12L42) So this is just a Monday morning before the election gets properly under way leading article: the serious debate should be about whether Chris Woodhead is correct to claim that 15,000 teachers are not up to scratch. (P12L43) Last week it emerged that his own inspectors had only found 4,500 substandard ones, and he responded by saying his staff were just being too lax in their judgments. (P12L44) Let's not forget that all this fuss about school uniforms, which is after all designed to gratify the Daily Mail and its readers more than The Independent and its leader writers, is merely incidental in the crusade to raise standards.

APPENDIX 2

TABLES

A new spin on pay policy Mr Brown must discipline the private sector too				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	No interview with Gordon Brown		Mr Brown	SA
P1 L1	No interview with Gordon Brown	HL		L1a
P1 L1	these days			ETE
P1 L1	words			CR (speech)
P1 L1	fairness, priorities, tight control, and tough choices	P1 L1	words	ETN "like"
P1 L1	fairness			∅
P1 L1	priorities			∅
P1 L1	tight control			∅
P1 L1	tough choices			∅
P1 L1	a prominent appearance	P1 L1	No interview	E1 (in the interview)
P1 L2	they	P1 L1	words like fairness, priorities, tight control, and tough choices	P1
P1 L2	a ruthlessly honed mantra which the Shadow Chancellor recites at every opportunity	P1 L1	words like fairness, priorities, tight control, and tough choices	ETN "become"
P1 L2	the Shadow Chancellor	P1 L1	Gordon Brown	NMDNF2a the
P1 L2	every opportunity	P1 L1	No interview ... is allowed to get very far these days ..	L2a
P1 L3	Mr Brown	P1 L1	Gordon Brown	L1a
P1 L4	Our ICM poll			ER
P1 L4	this week			ETE
P1 L4	Labour	P1 L3	Mr Brown	L2a
P1 L4	part though admittedly an important part of the pre-election propaganda war on taxation and spending			SA
P1 L4	the pre-election propaganda war on taxation and spending.			SA

P1 L4	taxation and spending			CR (economics)
P1 L5	Huge areas of public scepticism about Labour's spending intentions		Labour	SA
P1 L5	Labour's spending intentions	P1 L4		L1a
P1 L5	Labour's spending intentions			SAG
P1 L5	an open question			∅
P1 L5	they	P1 L5	Huge areas of public scepticism ... remain	P1
P1 L5	Labour	P1 L5	Labour's spending intentions	L1a
P1 L5	much damage			∅
P1 L6	The prudent conclusion	PPs	Previous paragraphs	E1 (to be drawn from what has been said)
P1 L6	Mr Brown	P1 L3	Mr Brown	L1a
P1 L6	his efforts	P1 L6	Mr Brown	P2
P1 L6	the sternness of his principles		Mr Brown	SA
P1 L6	the sternness of his principles	P1 L6		P2
P1 L6	an electorate which still harbours such doubts about the extent of Labour's commitment to economic self-discipline		Huge areas of public scepticism Labour	CR (elections)
P1 L6	such doubts	P1 L5		MDNF2a such
P1 L6	the extent of Labour's commitment			SA
P1 L6	the extent of Labour's commitment	P1 L5		L1a
P1 L6	Labour's commitment to economic self-discipline			SAG
P2 L7	Mr Brown	P1 L6	Mr Brown	L1a
P2 L7	yesterday			ETE
P2 L7	the announcement			∅
P2 L7	today's cabinet decision			CR (politics)
P2	Labour	P1	Labour's commitment	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L7		L6		
P2 L7	its first year in office	P2 L7	Labour	P2
P2 L7	its first year in office			SA
P2 L7	top salaries in the public sector			CR (pay)
P2 L7	top salaries in the public sector			CR (sector)
P2 L8	Top salaries	P2 L7	top salaries	L1a
P2 L8	the would-be iron Chancellor	P2 L7	Mr Brown	NMDNF2a the
P2 L8	the strictness which has long ago been injected into every aspect of Labour's pre-election thinking	P2 L6	the sternness	NMDNF2a the
P2 L8	every aspect of Labour's pre-election thinking			SA
P2 L8	Labour's pre-election thinking	P2 L7	Labour	L1a
P2 L8	Labour's pre-election thinking			SAG
P2 L9	They	P2 L7	top salaries	P1
P2 L9	the context of the deficit which Labour			SA
P2 L9	the context of the deficit which Labour			CR (economy)
P2 L9	Labour	P2 L8	Labour's pre-election thinking	L1a
P2 L9	the need for disciplined control of public finance			SA
P2 L9	the need for disciplined control of public finance			SA
P2 L9	the need for disciplined control of public finance			CR (economy)
P2 L9	a precondition for wider credibility			SA
P2 L9	a precondition for wider credibility	P1 L6	an electorate which still harbours such doubts	E1 (among the electorate)
P2 L9	the requirement			∅
P2 L9	in accordance with			AP
P2 L9	Labour's priorities	P2 L9	Labour	L1a
P2	Labour's priorities			SAG

L9				
P2 L9	public expenditure limits	P2 L9	the need for disciplined control of public finance	L1a
P2 L9	public expenditure limits			SAW
P2 L9	public expenditure limits			SAW
P3 L10	As an overall approach, there is little wrong with this	PP	Previous Paragraph	MDNF2a this
P3 L11	It	PP	Previous Paragraph	P4
P3 L11	the question of top salaries			SA
P3 L11	the question of top salaries	P2 L7	top salaries	L1a
P3 L11	a suitable stage on which to display it			SA
P3 L11	it	PP	Previous Paragraph	P4
P3 L12	the package	PP	Previous Paragraph	NMDNF2a the
P3 L12	£20 million,			∅
P3 L12	a tiny drop in the £300 billion annual public spending total	P3 L12	£20 million	ETAN
P3 L12	a tiny drop in the £300 billion annual public spending total			NMDNF2a indefinite article
P3 L12	the £300 billion annual public spending total	P2 L9	public expenditure limits	NMDNF1a the
P3 L12	the £300 billion annual public spending total			SAW
P3 L12	the decision	PP	Previous Paragraph	MDNF2a the
P3 L12	a powerful signal			∅
P3 L12	Labour	P2 L9	Labour's priorities	L1a
P3 L12	it	P3 L12	Labour	P1
P3 L13	themselves	P3 L12	Labour	P5
P3 L13	promised ministerial and parliamentary increases			CR (salaries)
L13	the same severity on senior civil servants and service chiefs	L13	By denying themselves promised ministerial and parliamentary increases	NMDFN2a the same
L13	the same severity on			CR

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

	senior civil servants and service chiefs			(public sector)
P3 L13	Labour	P3 L12	Labour	L1a
P3 L13	the seriousness of its political and fiscal purposes		Labour	SA
P3 L13	the seriousness of its political and fiscal purposes	P3 L13		P2
P3 L14	it	PS	Previous Sentence	P4
P3 L14	Labour	P3 L13	Labour	L1a
P3 L14	it	P3 L14	Labour	P1
P3 L14	its pledges	P3 L14	Labour	P2
P3 L15	it	P3 L13	Preceding sentence	P4
P3 L15	something more			∅
P3 L15	such choices	P2 L7	Labour will freeze top salaries in the public sector	NMDNF2a such
P3 L15	a genuine wish			∅
P3 L15	spending	P1 L4	spending	L1a
P3 L15	in accordance			AP
P3 L15	a set of socially progressive priorities			∅
P3 L16	the point of view of			∅
P3 L16	a party entering government after long years in opposition	P3 L14	Labour	E1 (such as Labour)
P3 L16	the message			∅ Cataphoric expression
P3 L16	you			IR
P3 L17	The problems			Cataphoric expression
P3 L17	The problems	P3 L14	Labour	E1 (for a party entering government ...)
P4 L18	One is that any freeze on MPs' pay puts at risk ...	P4 L17	The problems	Pro-form one
P4 L18	One is that any freeze on MPs' pay... from outside sources	P4 L17	One	ETN "is"

P4 L18	any freeze on MPs' pay			SA
P4 L18	any freeze on MPs' pay			CR (salaries)
P4 L18	the strategy adopted last summer of paying MPs a rate			NMDNF2a the
P4 L18	the strategy adopted last summer of paying MPs a rate which diminishes the temptation to supplement their earnings from outside sources	P3 L13	promised ministerial and parliamentary increases	SA
P4 L19	Another is that to freeze this particular set of salary increases	P4 L17	The problems	Pro-form another
P4 L19	Another is that to freeze ... the policy truly fair		Another	ETN "is"
P4 L19	to freeze this particular set of salary increases	P4 L18	One is that any freeze on MPs' pay	NMDNF2a this
P4 L19	the need for tight discipline	P2 L9	the need for disciplined control of public finance	DNF1a the
P4 L19	the need for tight discipline			SA
P4 L19	the public sector			DNF1a the
P4 L19	the public sector	P2 L9	public finance	SAW
P4 L19	parallel changes in the private sector			SA
P4 L19	parallel changes in the private sector	HL	the private sector	DNF1a the
P4 L19	the policy	P2 L7	Labour will freeze top salaries in the public sector	NMDNF2a the
P4 L20	A progressive chancellor	P2 L7	Mr Brown	E1 (like Mr Brown)
P4 L20	more money	P3 L12	public spending total	E1 (for public spending)
P4 L20	he	P4 L20	A progressive chancellor	P1
P4 L20	the review body awards	P4 L18	that any freeze on MPs' pay	E1 (for MPs' pay)
P4 L20	them	P4 L20	the review body awards	P1
P4 L20	increased taxes on high salaries			SA
P4 L20	increased taxes on high salaries	P3 L11	the question of top salaries	L1a
P4 L20	the public sector	P4 L19	the public sector	DNF1a the

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P4 L20	the private sector	P4 L19	the private sector	DNF1a the
P4 L20	he	P2 L7	Mr Brown	P1
P4 L20	that option	P4 L20	A progressive chancellor would ...	NMDNF2a that
P4 L21	As a result			AP
P4 L21	the move	P2 L7	Labour will freeze top salaries in the public sector	NMDNF2a the
P4 L21	looks suspiciously like a pay policy which does not quite dare to speak its name	P4 L21	the move	ETN "looks like"
P4 L21	a pay policy which does not quite dare to speak its name			DNF1d indefinite article
P4 L21	a pay policy which does not quite dare to speak its name	P4 L21	a pay policy	P2
P4 L22	Lopping a few thousand pounds off a judge's or an MP's salary	P2 L7	Labour will freeze top salaries in the public sector	L2a
P4 L22	more rewarding politics	P4 L22	Lopping a few thousand pounds off a judge's or an MP's salary	ETN "is"
P4 L22	company directors	P4 L20	the private sector	L3
P4 L22	teachers	P4 L20	the public sector	L3
P4 L22	NHS workers	P4 L20	the public sector	L3
P4 L22	they	P4 L22	company directors, not to mention teachers and NHS workers	P1
P1 L1	tight norm	P4 L19	tight discipline	RPE
P4 L22	they	P4 L22	company directors, not to mention teachers and NHS workers	P1
P4 L22	blood relatives	P4 L22	they	ETN "are"

[1]

Backing our boys				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	The extent to which Tony Blair			SA
P1 L1	Tony Blair			∅
P1 L1	the Tories			CR (Politics)
P1 L1	their traditional ground	P1 L1	the Tories	P2
P1 L2	Labour	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L2a
P1 L2	any apparent embarrassment			∅
P1 L2	the natural party of both law and order and low taxation	P1 L2	Labour	NMDNF2a the
P1 L3	Mr Blair's article	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L1a
P1 L3	Mr Blair's article			SAG
P1 L3	the facing page			ER
P1 L3	he	P1 L1	Tony Blair	P1
P1 L3	Labour	P1 L2	Labour	L1a
P1 L3	in effect			AP
P1 L3	the party that supports "our boys"	P1 L3	Labour	NMDNF2a the
P1 L3	one			SA
P1 L3	one of his boldest moves	P1 L3	Mr Blair's article on the facing page, in which he...	NMDNF2a his
P2 L4	his critique of Conservative defence policy	P1 L1	Tony Blair	P2
P2 L4	Conservative defence policy	P1 L1	the Tories	L5a
P2 L4	Conservative defence policy	P1 L1	the Tories	SAW
P2 L5	Mr Blair	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L1a
P2 L5	one			ER
P2 L5	any reasonably intelligent sixth-form essay on the British Armed Forces			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L5	the British Armed Forces	P1 L3	our boys	NMDNF2a the
P2 L5	the war			ETE
P2 L6	This newspaper			ER
P2 L6	the end of the Cold War			SA
P2 L6	the end of the Cold War			CR (Warfare)
P2 L6	a strategic review	P2 L4	Conservative defence policy	E1 (of defence policy)
P2 L7	the relationship between defence and foreign policy			SA
P2 L7	defence			CR (armed forces)
P2 L7	foreign policy	P2 L4	Conservative defence policy	L1d
P2 L7	Mr Blair	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L1a
P2 L8	The primary aim of defence policy			SA
P2 L8	The primary aim of defence policy	P2 L4	Conservative defence policy	L1a
P2 L8	the defence of the realm and its dependencies	P2 L8	The primary aim of defence policy	ETN "is"
P2 L8	the defence of the realm and its dependencies			CR (defence) Homophobic
P2 L8	the defence of the realm and its dependencies	P2 L8	the realm	P2
P2 L8	the defence of the realm and its dependencies			
P2 L9	that	P2 L8	The primary aim of the defence of the realm and its dependencies	DPR that
P2 L9	our wider role in the Western alliance	P2 L8	The primary aim of the defence of the realm and its dependencies	C2
P2 L9	our wider role in the Western alliance			SA
P2 L10	many aspects of foreign policy			SA
P2 L10	many aspects of foreign policy	P2 L7	foreign policy	L1a
P2 L10	little, if any, bearing			∅
P2 L10	this	P2 L9	our wider role in the Western alliance	DPR this
P2 L11	Any defence review	P2 L4	his critique of Conservative defence policy	NMDNF2a any
P2	Any defence review			SAW

L11				
P2 L11	it	P2 L11	Any defence review	P1
P2 L11	a well thought out and clearly defined agenda			∅
P3 L12	that	P2 L11	a well thought out and clearly defined agenda	DPR that
P3 L12	sign			∅
P3 L12	Mr Blair's article	P1 L3	Mr Blair's article	L1a
P3 L13	He	P1 L1	Tony Blair	P1
P3 L13	for example			∅
P3 L13	Nato enlargement	P2 L9	the Western alliance	L2a
P3 L13	Nato enlargement			SAW
P3 L13	the EU's ambition			CR (Europe)
P3 L13	the EU's ambition			SAG
P3 L13	the Western European Union	P2 L9	the Western alliance	DNF1a the
P3 L14	He	P1 L1	Tony Blair	P1
P3 L14	no mention of the Government's decision			SA
P3 L14	the Government's decision			CR (politics)
P3 L14	£16 billion			∅
P3 L14	the Eurofighter			CR (Defence)
P3 L14	a defence against a massed attack by Russian MiGs	P3 L14	the Eurofighter	ETN "conceived ... as"
P3 L14	a defence against a massed attack by Russian MiGs			SA
P3 L14	a defence against a massed attack by Russian MiGs			SA
P3 L14	a defence against a massed attack by Russian MiGs			CR (fighter planes)
P3 L15	Last week			ETE
P3 L15	the Defence Secretary, Michael Portillo	P3 L14	the Government's decision	L3
P3 L15	the decision	P3 L14	the Government's decision ...	DNF1a the

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P3 L15	in terms of job creation			AP
P3 L15	in terms of job creation			∅
P3 L16	this	P3 L15	defended the decision in terms of job creation	DPR this
P3 L16	Labour	P1 L2	Labour	L1a
P3 L16	it	P3 L15	defended the decision in terms of job creation	P4
P3 L16	it	P1 L2	Labour	P1
P3 L16	this huge sum	P3 L14	£16 billion	NMDNF2a this
P3 L16	more prosaic requirements	P3 L14	the Eurofighter	E1
P4 L17	Mr Blair	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L1a
P4 L17	his favourite and his most successful tactic	P1 L1	Tony Blair	P2
P4 L17	Conservative rhetoric	P2 L4	Conservative defence policy	L1a
P4 L17	Conservative rhetoric			SAW
P4 L17	the Conservative record	P4 L17	Conservative rhetoric	DNF1a the
P4 L17	the Conservative record			SAW
P4 L18	he	P1 L1	Tony Blair	P1
P4 L18	Tory defence cuts	P4 L17	the Conservative record	L2a
P4 L18	Tory defence cuts			SAW
P4 L18	recent years			ETE
P4 L19	Labour's other priorities	P1 L2	Labour	L1a
P4 L19	Labour's other priorities			SAG
P4 L19	its promise of a two- year freeze in overall public spending	P1 L2	Labour	P2
P4 L19	its promise of a two- year freeze in overall public spending			SA
P4 L19	its promise of a two- year freeze in overall public spending			SA
P4 L19	the Services	P2 L6	British Armed Forces	NMDNF5a
P4 L19	a ruse			∅

P4 L19	Labour	P1 L2	Labour	L1a
P4 L19	further cuts	P4 L18	Tory defence cuts	C1
P4 L20	That	P4 L19	Labour could indulge in further cuts	DPR that
P4 L20	the outcome	P4 L19	Labour could indulge in further cuts	ETN: "would be"
P4 L20	many of its backbenchers	P1 L2	Labour	P2
P5 L21	the need			∅
P5 L21	Mr Blair	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L1a
P5 L21	his agenda	P1 L1	Tony Blair	P2
P5 L21	The outset	P1 L1	Tony Blair	E1
P5 L22	Misdirected spending on defence	P3 L14	the Government's decision to spend £16 billion on the Eurofighter	L2a
P5 L23	Any review	P2L 11	Any defence review	E2
P5 L23	all the numerous commitments			∅
P5 L23	Mr Blair	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L1a
P5 L23	his article	P1 L3	Mr Blair's article	DNF1a his
P5 L25	our forces	P2 L6	British Armed Forces	NMDNF2a our
P5 L25	so much time and effort			∅
P5 L25	helping to police the world under UN supervision			∅
P5 L25	helping to police the world under UN supervision			SA
P5 L25	the case			∅
P5 L25	the armed wing of Oxfam	P2 L6	British Armed Forces	NMDNF2a the
P5 L25	their commitment	P2 L6	British Armed Forces	P2
P5 L25	Nato	P3 L13	Nato enlargement	L1a
P5 L26	they	P2 L6	British Armed Forces	P1
P5 L26	some future date			∅
P5	an integrated European			CR

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L26	force			(warfare)
P5 L26	These	P4 L24 /25	Previous sentences	DPR these
P5 L26	the questions	P5 L26	These	ETN "are"
P5 L27	a review	P2 L11	Any defence review	L1d
P5 L28	Mr Blair	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L1a
P5 L28	none of them	P5 L27	These are the questions	P1
P5 L28	easy answers			CR (questions)

[2]

Constitutional Clash				
Conservatives undermine themselves by resistance to change				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	our third election guide			ER
P1 L1	today			ETE
P1 L1	constitutional matters	HL	Constitutional Clash	L1a
P1 L1	constitutional matters			SAW
P1 L1	an unusually prominent place			∅
P1 L1	the forthcoming campaign			∅
P1 L2	That	P1 L1	constitutional matters ... set to occupy ... prominent place	DPR that
P1 L2	intense pressure from the electorate			SA
P1 L2	the electorate			CR (elections)
P1 L2	Polls			CR (elections)
P1 L3	those issues	P1 L1	constitutional matters	MDNF2a those
P1 L4	the same surveys	P1 L3	Polls	NMDNF5a the same
P1 L4	a range of proposed reforms		Constitutional Clash Conservatives undermine themselves by resistance to change	SA
P1 L4	a range of proposed reforms	HL		E1 (in the constitution)
P2 L5	The electorate	P1 L2	the electorate	DNF1a the
P2 L5	eminently defensible position			∅
P2 L6	most people	P1 L2	the electorate	L2a
P2 L6	most of the time			∅
P2 L6	their employment prospects	P2 L6	most people	P2
P2 L6	the quality of education	P2 L6	most people	E1
P2 L6	greater importance			∅
P2 L6	the incorporation of the European Convention on Human Rights into national law			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L6	the incorporation of the European Convention on Human Rights into national law			CR (law)
P2 L6	the incorporation of the European Convention on Human Rights into national law			CR (law)
P2 L7	The claim often made by Liberal Democrats			Cataphoric expression
P2 L7	The claim			SA
P2 L7	often made by Liberal Democrats			CR (politics)
P2 L7	others	P2 L7	The claim	Pro-form others
P2 L7	the current British system and structures	P2 L7	The claim	CR (politics)
P2 L7	an affront	P2 L7	the current British system and structures	ETN "represents"
P2 L7	an outright threat to democratic life	P2 L7	the current British system and structures	ETN "represents"
P2 L7	an outright threat to democratic life			SA
P2 L7	an outright threat to democratic life			CR (politics)
P2 L7	a majority	P2 L6	most people	E1 (of the electorate)
P2 L8	The next Parliament			CR (politics)
P2 L8	an agenda saturated by such questions			SA
P2 L8	such questions	PSs	Previous sentences	MDNF2a such
P3 L9	That is not to say	PSs	Previous sentences	DPR that
P3 L9	the constitution	P1 L1	Constitutional Matters	DNF1a the
P3 L9	no need of care and attention			SA
P3 L9	no need of care and attention			∅
P3 L10	Limited but important innovation	P3 L9	the constitution	E1
P3 L11	Our historic arrangements	P3 L9	the constitution	NMDNF2a our
P3 L11	the embodiment of perfection	P3 L9	the constitution	ETN "worshipped as"
P3 L11	the embodiment of perfection			SA
P3 L11	the embodiment of perfection			∅

P3 L12	They	P3 L11	Our historic arrangements	P1
P3 L12	the demands of European Union membership			SA
P3 L12	the demands of European Union membership			CR (European politics)
P3 L12	an increasingly assertive European Court of Justice			CR (European politics)
P3 L13	The Major administration			CR (politics)
P3 L13	the concept of government by contract			SA
P3 L13	the concept of government by contract	P3 L13	The Major administration	CR (politics)
P3 L13	mountains of data on schools, hospitals, the police and transportation			∅
P3 L13	mountains of data on schools, hospitals, the police and transportation			∅
P3 L13	mountains of data on schools, hospitals, the police and transportation			∅
P3 L13	mountains of data on schools, hospitals, the police and transportation			∅
P3 L13	mountains of data on schools, hospitals, the police and transportation			∅
P3 L13	mountains of data on schools, hospitals, the police and transportation			∅
P3 L13	mountains of data on schools, hospitals, the police and transportation			∅
P3 L14	it	P3 L13	The Major administration	P1
P3 L14	the merest possibility of writing down some of the most fundamental contracts of them all			SA
P3 L14	some of the most fundamental contracts of them all			SA
P3 L14	some of the most fundamental contracts of them all	P3 L9	the constitution	NMDNF3a the most
P4	Reform	HL	change	L5a

L15				
P4 L15	the Conservative Party's principles	HL	Conservatives	DNF1a the
P4 L15	the Conservative Party's principles			SAG
P4 L16	Fear of the intrusive state			SA
P4 L16	Fear of the intrusive state			CR (politics)
P4 L16	a Bill of Rights and Freedom of Information Act			CR (politics)
P4 L16	a Bill of Rights and Freedom of Information Act			CR (politics)
P4 L16	those			DPR those (exophoric)
P4 L16	a preference for smaller government			SA
P4 L16	a preference for smaller government			CR (politics)
P4 L17	suspicion of centralisation			SA
P4 L17	suspicion of centralisation			CR (politics)
P4 L17	backing for stronger checks and balances			SA
P4 L17	backing for stronger checks and balances			CR (politics)
P4 L17	Tories	HL	Conservatives	L5a
P5 L18	recent times			ETE
P4 L18	too much control			∅
P4 L18	Whitehall			CR (politics)
P5 L19	More enlightened Thatcherites			CR (politics)
P5 L19	Ferdinand Mount	P5 L19	More enlightened Thatcherites	L3
P5 L19	this trend	P5 L18	too much control has been seized by Whitehall	NMDNF2a this
P5 L19	its reversal	P5 L18	too much control has been seized by Whitehall	P2
P5 L20	such thinking	P5 L19	Previous sentence	MDNF2a such
P5 L20	the Conservative manifesto	P4 L15	the Conservative Party's principles	L1a
P5 L20	the Conservative manifesto			SAW

P5 L21	the electorate	P1 L2	the electorate	L1a
P5 L21	a choice			Cataphoric reference
P5 L21	no change	P3 L9	the constitution	E1
P5 L21	Tory	P4 L17	Tories	L1a
P5 L21	some change	P3 L9	the constitution	E1
P5 L21	Labour			CR (politics)
P5 L21	all change	P3 L9	the constitution	E1
P5 L21	Liberal Democrat	P2 L7	Liberal Democrats	L1a
P5 L22	that case	P5 L21	the electorate will face a choice	NMDNF2a that
P5 L22	many	P2 L5	The electorate	L3
P5 L22	the option advanced by Tony Blair	P5 L21	some change	NMDNF2a the
P5 L22	Tony Blair	P5 L21	Labour	L2a
P5 L22	the acceptable middle course	P5 L21	some change	ETN "regard ... as"
P6 L23	There is much, though, in both the principle and detail of Labour's plans that demands vigorous scrutiny.	P5 L22	the option advanced by Tony Blair	Cataphoric expression
P6 L23	much in both the principle and detail			SA
P6 L23	in both the principle and detail of Labour's plans	P5 L22	the option advanced by Tony Blair	SA
P6 L23	Labour's plans	P5 L22	the option advanced by Tony Blair	L2a
P6 L23	vigorous scrutiny			∅
P6 L24	The future relationship between a national and Scottish parliament requires much greater clarification.	P6 L23	There is much ... Labour's plans that demands vigorous scrutiny	NMDNF3a the
P6 L25	Jack Straw's plans for the English regions	P6 L23	There is much ... Labour's plans that demands vigorous scrutiny	L3
P6 L25	Jack Straw's plans for the English regions			SAG
P6 L25	those			DPR (exophoric)

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P6 L25	constitutional change	P5L 21	all change	L2a
P6 L26	The depth of Tony Blair's commitment to restoring local government	P6 L23	There is much ... Labour's plans that demands vigorous scrutiny	Cataphoric expression
P6 L26	The depth of		Tony Blair	SA
P6 L26	Tony Blair's commitment	P5L 22		L1a
P6 L26	Tony Blair's commitment to restoring local government			SAG
P6 L26	Tony Blair's commitment to restoring local government			SA
P6 L27	At present			ETE
P6 L27	London	P6 L26	The depth of Tony Blair's commitment to restoring local government	CR (local government)
P6 L27	precise promises of new powers	P6 L26	The depth of Tony Blair's commitment to restoring local government	E1 (from Tony Blair)
P6 L27	precise promises of new powers			SA
P6 L28	Tories	P4 L17	Tories	L1a
P6 L28	thoughtful proposals of their own		Tories	SA
P7 L28	thoughtful proposals of their own	P6 L28		P2
P7 L28	they	P6 L28		P1
P7 L28	rich rewards			∅
P7 L28	a debate on the constitution		the constitution	SA
P7 L28	a debate on the constitution	P3 L9		DNF1a the
P7 L29	they	P6 L28	Tories	P1
P7 L29	the defenders of official secrecy and overbearing centralism	P6 L28	Tories	NMDNF2a the
P7 L30	This blinkered and rigid approach	P7 L29	they appear determined to stand as the defenders of official	MDNF2a this

			secrecy ...	
P7 L30	Labour	P5 L21	Labour	L1a
P7 L30	a package that wants considerable improvement	P5 L21	some change	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P7 L31	A one-sided discussion	P3 L9	the constitution	E1
P7 L31	the best interests of constitution		the constitution	SA
P7 L31	the best interests of constitution	P7 L28		L1a
P7 L31	country			∅
P7 L32	it	P7 L31	A one-sided discussion	P1
P7 L32	the Conservatives	P4 L15	the Conservative Party's principles	DNF1a
P7 L32	themselves	P7 L32	the Conservatives	P5

Cook finds the right recipe for Europe				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	we			ER
P1 L1	the first wave			∅
P1 L1	we	P1 L1	we	P1
P1 L1	2002			ETE
P1 L2	That	PS	Previous sentence	DPR that
P1 L2	Robin Cook			∅
P1 L2	us	P1 L1	we	P1
P1 L2	his latest comments on British entry to a single currency	P1 L2	Robin Cook	P2
P1 L2	his latest comments on British entry to a single currency			SA
P1 L2	his latest comments on British entry to a single currency			SA
P1 L3	It	P1 L2	That	P4
P1 L3	a cautious compromise	P1 L3	It	ETN "sounds like"
P1 L4	It	P1 L2	That	P1
P1 L5	it	P1 L2	That	P1
P2 L6	the circumstances			∅
P2 L6	the position that Labour			SA
P2 L6	the position that Labour	P1 L2	Robin Cook	L2a
P2 L6	itself	P2 L6	Labour	P5
P2 L6	economic and monetary union			CR (monetary union)
P2 L6	the most sensible available stance	P2 L6	the position that Labour is gradually carving out for itself on economic and monetary union	ETN "is"
P2 L7	fact			∅
P2 L7	it	P2 L6	the position that Labour is gradually carving out for itself on economic	P1

			and monetary union	
P2 L7	the only tenable one	P2 L6	the position that Labour is gradually carving out for itself on economic and monetary union	S1
P2 L7	Kenneth Clarke			CR (politics)
P2 L7	the Conservative Party			CR (politics)
P3 L8	monetary union	P2 L6	economic and monetary union	L1a
P3 L8	the British economy			CR (economy)
P3 L8	a single currency bloc			CR (monetary union)
P3 L8	the chances			∅
P3 L8	a Labour government	P2 L6	Labour	L1a
P3 L8	Labour government			SAW
P3 L8	the euro	P1 L2	a single currency	L5a
P3 L9	The Labour Party's door	P3 L8	Labour government	DNF1a the
P3 L9	The Labour Party's door			SAG
P3 L9	other words			∅
P3 L9	the single currency	P1 L2	a single currency	DNF1a the
P4 L10	The Conservatives' door	P2 L7	the Conservative Party	DNF1a the
P4 L10	The Conservatives' door			SAG
P4 L11	We	P1 L2	us	P1
P4 L11	the Euro-sceptics' anxiety	P2 L7	the Conservative Party	L3
P4 L12	We	P1 L1	we	P1
P4 L12	all this	PS	Previous sentence	DPR this
P4 L13	The democratic threat			∅
P4 L13	a single currency	P3 L9	the single currency	DNF1a indefinite article
P4 L13	the economic uncertainty			CR (economy)
P4 L13	its effectiveness	P4 L13	the economic uncertainty	P2
P4 L13	both	P4 L13	The democratic threat the economic	Pro-form both

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

			uncertainty	
P4 L13	us	P4 L12	We	P1
P5 L14	no one			∅
P5 L14	this thing	PP	Previous paragraph	NMDNF2a this
P5 L15	That	PS	But no one is going to wish this thing away	DPR that
P5 L15	Conservative campaign team	P2 L7	the Conservative Party	L1a
P5 L15	Conservative campaign team			SAW
P5 L15	Conservative campaign team			SAW
P5 L16	Their weeping lion	P5 L15	Conservative campaign team	P2
P5 L16	(the latest Saatchi image) suggests a somewhat fairy-tale view of the future	P5 L16	Their weeping lion	ETN
P5 L16	the latest Saatchi image	P5 L16	Their weeping lion	∅
P5 L16	a somewhat fairy-tale view of the future			∅
P5 L16	a somewhat fairy-tale view of the future			SA
P5 L17	The evil-eyed wicked witch of the west			∅ Cataphoric expression
P5 L17	Tony Blair	P2 L6	Labour	L3
P5 L17	a single currency	P4 L13	a single currency	DNF1a indefinite article
P5 L17	his hard-pressed munchkins	P5 L17	Tony Blair	P2
P5 L18	the tearful lion	P5 L16	Their weeping lion	L5
P5 L18	a brainless scarecrow			CR (film characters)
P5 L18	a heartless tinman			CR
P5 L18	the yellow-brick-road			CR
P5 L18	home			∅
P5 L18	those nasty Europhile lefties			CR (Labour)
P6 L19	Nonsense			∅
P6 L20	anywhere			∅
P6 L20	Britain	P3 L8	the British economy	∅

P6L21	Monetary union	P3L8	monetary union	L1a
P6L22	It	P6L21	Monetary union	P1
P6L22	schedule			Ø
P6L22	the French and German political elites	HL	Europe	L3
P6L22	it	P6L21	Monetary union	P1
P7L23	it	P6L21	Monetary union	P1
P7L23	that	P7L23	If it works	DPR that
P7L23	a big if	P7L23	If	MR
P7L23	Britain	P6L20	Britain	L1a
P7L23	stay out for ever	P6L21	Monetary union	E1
P7L24	Europe	HL	Europe	L1a
P7L24	2010			ETE
P7L25	a large single currency bloc	P5L17	a single currency	DNF1d indefinite article SAW
P7L25	a large single currency bloc			
P7L25	Germany	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	France	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	the Benelux countries	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	Austria	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	Italy	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	Spain	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	Scandinavia	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	the Czech republic	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	Hungary	P7L24	Europe	L3
P7L25	the list	P7L25	Germany, France, the Benelux countries, Austria, Italy, Spain, Scandinavia, the Czech republic, Hungary	MDNF2a the
P7L26	the huge eurozone	P7L25	a large single currency bloc	NMDNF2a the

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P7 L26	businesses			CR (economy)
P7 L26	their heads	P7 L26	businesses	P2
P7 L26	currency speculation			CR (economy)
P7 L27	They	P7 L26	businesses	P1
P7 L27	the cash			CR (economy)
P7 L27	they	P7 L26	businesses	P1
P7 L27	their producers	P7 L26	businesses	P2
P7 L27	value			CR (economy)
P7 L27	the cash	P7 L27	the cash	L1d
P7 L27	they	P7 L26	businesses	P1
P7 L27	their customers across the border	P7 L26	businesses	P2
P7 L27	their customers across the border			SA
P7 L27	their profit margins	P7 L26	businesses	P2
P7 L27	their control	P7 L26	businesses	P2
P7 L28	the Channel	P7 L23	Britain	NMDNF2a the
P7 L28	things			∅
P7 L29	Companies			CR (economy)
P7 L29	the hassle and cost of sending goods			SA
P7 L29	the hassle and cost of sending goods			CR (economy)
P7 L29	the sea	P7 L28	the Channel	NMDNF2a the
P7 L29	European customers			CR (economy)
P7 L29	the unpredictability of currency changes			SA
P7 L29	the unpredictability of currency changes			CR (economy)
P7 L29	the higher interest rates			CR (economy)
P7 L29	Britain	P7 L23	Britain	L1a
P7 L30	a Toyota chief			CR (economy)
P7	the best place	P7	a large single currency	NMDNF2a the

L30		L25	bloc	
P7 L30	future investment			CR (economy)
P7 L31	the British people			CR (Britain)
P7 L31	the disparities grow	P7 L25 P7 L29	a large single currency bloc Britain	E1 (between both)
P7 L31	a single currency	P5 L17	a single currency	DNF1a indefinite article
P8 L32	Robin Cook	P1 L2	Robin Cook	L1a
P8 L32	EMU	P7 L31	a single currency	L5
P8 L32	a Labour government	P3 L8	a Labour government	DNF1a indefinite article
P8 L32	Britain	P6 L20	Britain	L1a
P8 L33	he	P8 L32	Robin Cook	P1
P8 L33	part of the first wave	P1 L1	the first wave	SA
P8 L33	part of the first wave	P1 L1	the first wave	DNF1a the
P9 L34	the timetable	P8 L33	part of the first wave	E1
P9 L35	Joining up	P8 L33	part of the first wave	E1
P9 L35	quick thinking			∅
P9 L35	quick decision-making	P9 L35	quick thinking	RPE
P9 L35	quick persuading	P9 L35	quick thinking	RPE
P9 L35	a fresh and, untested Labour government	P8 L32	a Labour government	DNF1a indefinite article
P9 L36	Parliamentary timetables	P9 L34	the timetable	L1d
P9 L36	Euro legislation			CR (monetary union)
P9L 37	A new Blair government	P9 L35	a fresh and, untested Labour government	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P9L 37	going to the polls			CR (politics)
P9L 37	a referendum on a single currency			SA
P9 L37	a referendum on a single currency	P7 L31	a single currency	DNF1a indefinite article
P9 L37	any time			∅
P9 L37	a positive case for joining			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P9 L37	a positive case for joining	P9 L37	a referendum on a single currency	E1
P9 L38	the British public	P7 L31	the British people	DNF5a the
P9 L38	the euro	P9 L37	a single currency	DNF5a the
P9 L38	they	P9 L38	the British public	P1
P9 L38	it	P9 L38	the euro	P1
P9 L38	they	P9 L38	the British public	P1
P9 L38	a leap in the dark			∅
P9 L39	serious problems with the euro			SA
P9 L39	serious problems with the euro	P9 L38	the euro	DNF1a the
P10 L40	The risk of economic crisis in Europe			SA
P10 L40	The risk of economic crisis in Europe			SA
P10 L40	The risk of economic crisis in Europe	P7 L24	Europe	L1a
P10 L41	The low interest rates	P7 L29	the higher interest rates	DNF1a the
P10 L41	Germany	P7 L25	Germany	L1a
P10 L41	Britain	P7 L29	Britain	L1a
P10 L41	recession			CR (economy)
P10 L41	the Continent	P7 L24	Europe	NMDNF2a the
P10 L42	the single currency	P9 L37	a single currency	DNF1a the
P10 L42	terrible persistent unemployment			CR (economy)
P10 L42	some parts of the union			SA
P10 L42	some parts of the union	P7 L24	Europe	NMDNF2a the
P10 L42	political tensions			CR (politics)
P10 L42	the entire project	P6 L21	Monetary union	NMDNF2a the
P10 L43	further economic convergence	P6 L21	Monetary union	C1
P10 L43	that	P10 L43	further economic convergence	DPR that
P10 L43	real integration of European markets	P7 L24	Europe	SA
P10	real integration of	P7	Europe	L1a

L43	European markets	L24		
P10 L43	real integration of European markets			SAW
P10 L43	similar inflation rates	P7 L24	Europe	E1
P10 L43	government borrowing requirements			CR (economy)
P10 L43	it	P10 L43	Waiting to allow further economic convergence	P4
P11 L44	the democratic deficit			∅
P11 L45	an economic system which provides almost no democratic accountability for policy decisions which have a huge impact on people's lives	P6 L21	Monetary union	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P11 L45	no democratic accountability for policy decisions			CR (politics)
P11 L45	no democratic accountability for policy decisions			SA
P11 L45	a huge impact on people's lives			SA
P11 L45	a huge impact on people's lives	P9 L38	the British public	L3
P11 L45	a huge impact on people's lives			SAG
P11 L45	a mistake	P11 L45	Signing up blind to an economic system	ETN "would be"
P11 L46	A British government which is not opposed to a single currency in principle			SA
P11 L46	a single currency	P10 L42	the single currency	DNF1a indefinite article
P11 L46	in principle			AP
P11 L46	the EMU project	P10 L42	the entire project	DNF1a the
P11 L46	the plunge	P11 L46	the EMU project	E1
P11 L47	Mr Cook's position	P8 L32	Robin Cook	L1a
P11 L47	Mr Cook's position			SAG
P11 L47	the difficulties of staying out			SA
P11 L47	the difficulties of staying out	P11 L46	the EMU project	E1
P11	the reasons for staying			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L47	out			
P11 L47	the reasons for staying out	P11 L46	the EMU project	E1
P11 L47	the reasons for staying out in the short term			SA
P11 L47	all options open along the way	P11 L46	the EMU project	E1
P11 L47	all options open along the way			SA
P12 L48	The best aspect of his position			SA
P12 L48	The best aspect of his position	P11 L47	Mr Cook's position	P2
P12 L48	a Labour government	P9 L37	A new Blair government	DNF1a indefinite article
P12 L48	we	P4 L12	We	P1
P12 L48	a proper discussion about the merits of the single currency			SA
P12 L48	a proper discussion about the merits of the single currency			SA
P12 L48	a proper discussion about the merits of the single currency	P11 L46	a single currency	DNF1a the
P12 L49	the Conservatives in power	P2 L7	the Conservative Party	DNF1a the
P12 L49	the Conservatives in power			SA
P12 L49	that argument	P12 L48	a proper discussion about the merits of the single currency	MDNF2a that
P12 L49	any plausible Tory leader	P12 L49	the Conservatives	NMDNF2a any
P12 L49	any plausible Tory leader			SAW
P12 L49	the full range of views within his or her own party			SA
P12 L49	the full range of views within his or her own party	P12 L49	any plausible Tory leader	P2
P12 L50	Out of power	P12 L49	the Conservatives in power	L1a
P12 L50	Tories	P12 L49	the Conservatives	L5
P12 L50	full voice to their views			SA
P12 L50	full voice to their views			P2
P13 L51	Robin Cook	P11 L47	Mr Cook's position	L1a

P13 L51	Gordon Brown			CR (Labour)
P13 L51	Tony Blair	P5 L17	Tony Blair	L1a
P13 L51	everyone else			∅
P13 L51	plenty of time	P9 L37	any time to make a positive case for joining	L1d
P13 L51	Mr Portillo	P12 L50	Tories	L3
P13 L51	Mr Clarke	P2 L7	Kenneth Clarke	L1a
P13 L51	they	P13 L51	Robin Cook, Gordon Brown and Tony Blair ... Mr Portillo and Mr Clarke	P1
P13 L51	us	P12 L48	we	P1
P13 L51	the French and Germans	P6 L22	the French and German political elites	DNF1a the

Edging towards the Euro Labour steers a sounder course on the single currency				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Robin Cook's statement	HL	Labour	L2a
P1 L1	Robin Cook's statement			SAG
P1 L1	Labour	HL	Labour	L1a
P1 L1	Britain			Homophoric
P1 L1	a European single currency	HL	Single currency	DNF1a indefinite article
P1 L1	2002			ETE
P1 L1	it	HL	the Euro	P1
P1 L1	a very significant development of Labour policy		Labour	SA
P1 L1	Labour policy	P1 L1		L1a
P1 L1	Labour policy			SAW
P1 L2	the Conservatives			CR (politics)
P1 L2	joining	HL	the single currency	E1
P1 L2	Labour	P1 L1	Labour	L1a
P1 L2	it	P1 L2	Labour	P1
P1 L2	the way	P1 L2	joining	E1
P1 L2	inventing new forms of procrastination	P1 L2	joining	E1
P1 L2	the Conservatives	P1 L2	the Conservatives	DNF1a the
P1 L3	Labour	P1 L2	Labour	L1a
P1 L3	a policy of delaying entry		joining	SA
P1 L3	delaying entry	P1 L2		E1
P1 L3	a strategy of planning to join	P1 L2	joining	SA
P1 L3	a strategy of planning to join	P1 L2	joining	E1
P1 L3	something untoward			∅
P1 L3	them	P1 L2	Labour	P1

P1 L4	The trouble			∅
P1 L4	you			ER
P1 L4	2002	P1 L1	2002	L1a
P1 L4	-the date when domestic notes and coins are scheduled to be replaced by euros	P1 L1	2002	NMDNF2a the
P1 L4	massive preparations have to be made	P1 L2	joining	Cataphoric expression
P1 L4	massive preparations have to be made	P1 L2	joining	E1 (to join)
P1 L5	Billions of notes will have to be printed	P1 L4	massive preparations have to be made	L3
P1 L5	millions of business systems and slot machines converted	P1 L4	massive preparations have to be made	L3
P1 L6	the small matter of calling and winning a referendum	P1 L4	massive preparations have to be made	L3
P1 L7	entry	P1 L2	joining	L2a
P1 L7	2002	P1 L1	2002	L1a
P1 L7	a Labour government	P1 L2	Labour	DNF1a indefinite article
P1 L7	a Labour government			SAW
P1 L7	several years earlier	P1 L1	2002	E1
P1 L7	the full cost of conversion			SA
P1 L7	the full cost of conversion	P1 L5	Billions of notes .. millions of business systems and slot machines converted	NMDNF2a the
P2 L8	The hardening of Labour's attitude			SA
P2 L8	The hardening of Labour's attitude	P1 L2	Labour	L1a
P2 L8	The hardening of Labour's attitude			SAG
P2 L8	something to the warning			∅
P2 L8	by Toyota			∅
P2 L8	more investment going to the continent of Europe			∅
P2 L8	Britain	P1 L1	Britain	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L8	the euro	HL	the Euro	DNF1a the
P2 L9	New Labour	P2 L8	Labour's attitude	L1a
P2 L9	the reality of market forces			∅
P2 L9	its way	P2 L8	Labour's attitude	P2
P2 L9	the priorities of business			SA
P2 L9	the priorities of business			CR (business)
P2 L9	those of other social partners	P2 L9	the priorities of business	DPR those
P2 L9	those of other social partners			SA
P2 L9	its decision making	P2 L8	Labour's attitude	P2
P2 L10	This	P2 L9	New Labour accepts the reality of market forces	DPR this
P2 L10	the right thing to do	P2 L10	This	ETN "is"
P2 L10	in general			AP
P2 L10	the massive implications of joining a single European currency			SA
P2 L10	the massive implications of joining a single European currency	P1 L3	planning to join	L1a
P2 L11	This	P2 L10	the massive implications of joining a single European currency	DPR this
P2 L11	the surrender of a vital arm of economic policy	P2 L11	This	ETN "involves"
P2 L11	the surrender of a vital arm of economic policy			SA
P2 L11	the surrender of a vital arm of economic policy			CR (economics)
P2 L11	the ability to change interest rates unilaterally	P2 L11	a vital arm of economic policy	ETAN
P2 L11	the ability to change interest rates unilaterally			SA
P2 L11	the ability to change interest rates unilaterally			CR (economics)
P2	an independent	P2	This	ETN "involves"

L11	European bank	L11		
P2 L11	an independent European bank			CR (economics)
P2 L12	It is a complicated calculus of pros and cons about which economists	PSs	Previous sentences	P5
P2 L12	economists			CR (business)
P2 L13	Britain	P1 L1	Britain	L1a
P2 L13	jobs			∅
P2 L13	we	P2 L11	we	ER
P2 L13	our historic right	P2 L13	we	P1
P2 L13	us	P2 L11	the ability to change interest rates unilaterally	P1
P2 L13	trouble			∅
P2 L13	the pound			CR (economy)
P2 L14	The Toyota warning	P2 L8	the warning made by Toyota	DNF1a the
P2 L14	us	P2 L11	we	P1
P2 L14	big job losses	P2 L13	Britain could lose jobs	E1 (in Britain)
P2 L14	reduced inward investment			CR (economy)
P2 L14	we	P2 L11	we	P1
P2 L14	In recent years			ETE
P2 L15	inward investment	P2 L15	inward investment	L1a
P2 L15	a large role in job creation			SA
P2 L15	a large role in job creation			CR (employment)
P2 L15	the UK	P1 L1	Britain	L5
P2 L15	domestic corporations			CR (economy)
P3 L16	In theory			∅
P3 L16	not much difference between the Government's view			SA
P3 L16	not much difference between the	P2 L8	Labour's attitude	E1 (and Labour's attitude)

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

	Government's view			
P3 L16	Britain	P1 L1	Britain	L1a
P3 L16	the launch date of 1999	P2 L10	joining a single European currency	E1
P3 L16	Kenneth Clarke's belief	P3 L16	the Government's view	L2a
P3 L16	Kenneth Clarke's belief			SAG
P3 L16	the project	HL	Euro	NMDNF2a the
P3 L16	Labour	P2 L8	Labour's attitude	L1a
P3 L16	2002	P1 L7	2002	L1a
P3 L17	a big gulf in attitudes	P3 L16	the Government's view & Labour	E1
P3 L18	Neither side	P3 L16	the Government's view & Labour	E1
P3 L18	adopting a "watching and waiting" role	P2 L10	joining a single European currency	E1
P3 L18	a decision with such massive implications			SA
P3 L18	a decision with such massive implications	P2 L10	the massive implications of joining a single European currency	DNF1a such
P3 L19	the timetable	P2 L10	joining a single European currency	E1
P3 L19	for the convenience of countries like Germany and France			SA
P3 L19	for the convenience of countries like Germany and France			CR (Europe)
P3 L19	an urgent political impulse which Britain	P2 L10	joining a single European currency	E1 (to join)
P3 L19	Britain	P3 L16	Britain	L1a
P3 L20	Labour's position	P3 L16	Labour	L1a
P3 L20	Labour's position			SAG
P3 L20	the shambolic policymaking of the Conservatives	P1 L2	inventing new forms of procrastination as the Conservatives are	NMDNF2a the

Fight the battle of ideas				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	The Conservatives			∅
P1 L1	the monocausal explanation			ETN "are rapidly becoming"
P1 L1	all of Britain's ills			Homophoric
P1 L1	all of Britain's ills			SAG
P1 L2	for example			∅
P1 L2	the verdict			∅ Cataphoric expression
P1 L2	Polly Toynbee, an exemplar of the sensibilities of the metropolitan Liberal-Left			∅
P1 L2	Polly Toynbee, an exemplar of the sensibilities of the metropolitan Liberal-Left			SA
P1 L2	Polly Toynbee, an exemplar of the sensibilities of the metropolitan Liberal-Left			SA
P1 L2	Polly Toynbee, an exemplar of the sensibilities of the metropolitan Liberal-Left			CR (politics)
P1 L3	The Conservative tribe is the clan of the Haves and the Wannahaves	P1 L2	the verdict	NMDNF3a the
P1 L3	she	P1 L2	Polly Toynbee	P1
P1 L4	"Meanness of spirit is their guide	P1 L2	the verdict	L3
P1 L4	a desire to stop things, lock people up, shut out the poor, build partitions and blame the underdog	P1 L2	the verdict	L3
P1 L5	No matter			AP
P1 L5	compromises			∅
P1 L5	New Labour			CR (politics)

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P1 L5	such policies as			∅ Cataphoric expression
P1 L5	income tax	P1 L5	such policies	L3
P1 L5	she	P1 L2	Polly Toynbee	P1
P1 L5	they	P1 L5	New Labour	P1
P1 L5	people	P1 L5	New Labour	ETN "preferable as"
P1 L5	the Tories	P1 L3	The Conservative tribe	L5a
P1 L6	other words			∅
P1 L6	men			∅
P1 L6	the measures	P1 L5	such policies as income tax	NMDNF2a the
P2 L7	the man			∅
P2 L7	the ball			∅
P2 L7	a successful strategy for New Labour			SA
P2 L7	a successful strategy for New Labour	P1 L5	New Labour	L1a
P2 L7	they	P2 L7	New Labour	P1
P2 L7	their statements	P1 L5	New Labour	P2
P2 L8	the bizarre twilight zone of the current parliament			SA
P2 L8	the bizarre twilight zone of the current parliament			CR (politics)
P2 L7	few initiatives of substance			∅
P2 L8	this approach	P2 L7	Playing the man rather than the ball	MDNF2a this
P2 L9	New Labour's message	P1 L5	New Labour	L1a
P2 L9	New Labour's message			SAG
P2 L9	The corrupt ... weak crew that have run this country	P1 L5	the Tories	NMDNF2a the
P2 L9	office			CR (politics)
P2 L9	they	P1 L5	the Tories	P1
P2 L9	further damage	P1 L1	The Conservatives are ... the monocausal	C1

			explanation for all of Britain's ills	
P2 L10	The past 18 years			∅
	a disaster for Britain			SA
P2 L10	Britain	P1 L1	Britain's ills	L1a
P2 L9	untold suffering to millions of ordinary people			SA
P2 L9	untold suffering to millions of ordinary people	P2 L10	Britain	E1 (in Britain)
P2 L11	we	P2 L9	New Labour's	P1
P2 L11	they	P1 L5	the Tories	P1
P2 L12	New Labour	P2 L9	New Labour's message	L1a
P2 L13	some of Britain's corporate chiefs			CR
P2 L13	the virtues of a minimum wage			SA
P2 L13	the virtues of a minimum wage and more training			CR (economy)
P2 L13	Labour's poll ratings	P2 L12	New Labour	L1a
P2 L13	Labour's poll ratings			SAG
P3 L14	Many			∅
P3 L14	New Labour	P2 L13	Labour's poll ratings	L1a
P3 L14	their message	P2 L13	Labour's poll ratings	P2
P3 L15	The Conservatives	P1 L1	The Conservatives	DNF1a the
P3 L16	this	P3 L15	The Conservatives seem unsure how to respond	DPR this
P3 L16	too many of their prominent figures			SA
P3 L16	too many of their prominent figures	P3 L15	The Conservatives	P2
P3 L16	the preliminary rounds of the next leadership contest			SA
P3 L16	the preliminary rounds of the next leadership contest	P3 L15	The Conservatives	E1
P3 L16	the battle at hand	HL	the battle	DNF1a the

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P3 L17	This	P3 L16	seem busier with the preliminary rounds of the next leadership contest	DPR this
P3 L17	the new Fabian self-righteousness	1st P.	1st. Paragraph	NMDNF2a the
P3 L17	a very vulnerable target	P3 L17	the new Fabian self-righteousness	ETN "is"
P3 L17	the Conservatives' own "Back to Basics" programme	P3 L15	The Conservatives	DNF1a the
P3 L17	the Conservatives' own "Back to Basics" programme			SAG
P3 L17	traditional values			∅
P3 L18	A mere glance			∅
P3 L18	the shameful record of many Labour-controlled councils		Labour's poll ratings	SA
P3 L18	the shameful record of many Labour-controlled councils	P2 L13		L1a
P3 L18	the shameful record of many Labour-controlled councils			SAW
P3 L18	the Tories	P3 L18	the Tories	DNF1a the
P3 L18	ammunition	P3 L16	the battle at hand	E1 (for the battle)
P3 L18	hope	P3 L16	the battle at hand	E1 (for the battle)
P4 L19	a question of going on the offensive against the new moralisers			SA
P4 L19	a question of going on the offensive			CR (the battle at hand)
P4 L19	the new moralisers	P1 L2/ P1 L5	the metropolitan Liberal-Left & New Labour	NMDNF2a the
P4 L19	the goal of portraying Labour		Labour-controlled councils	SA
P4 L19	Labour	P3 L18		L1a
P4 L19	the party of the revamped and ever-primmer nanny state			ETN "portraying as"
P4 L20	something rather more than just citing random reasons why it is good to be alive today	P3 L16	the battle at hand	Cataphoric expression

P4 L20	the Prime Minister's celebration of the vibrancy of Britain's pubs and clubs, or ministers babbling on about the triumphs of the fashion and design industries	P4 L20	it requires something rather more than just citing random reasons why it is good to be alive today	ETN "to wit"
P4 L20	the Prime Minister's celebration of the vibrancy of Britain's pubs and clubs	P3 L17	the Conservatives' own "Back to Basics" programme	L3
P4 L20	the Prime Minister's celebration of the vibrancy of Britain's pubs and clubs			SAG
P4 L20	ministers	P3 L17	the Conservatives' own "Back to Basics" programme	L3
P4 L20	the triumphs of the fashion and design industries			SA
P4 L20	the triumphs of the fashion and design industries			∅
P4 L21	Such rhetoric	P4 L20	the Prime Minister's celebration ... or ministers babbling on about the triumphs of the fashion ...	MDNF2a such
P4 L21	they	P3 L17	the Conservatives'	P1
P4 L21	people			ER
P4 L21	them	P3 L17	the Conservatives'	P1
P4 L21	misfortunes	P1 L1	all of Britain's ills	L2a
P4 L21	none of their business	P3 L17	the Conservatives'	P2
P4 L22	they	P3 L17	the Conservatives'	P1
P4 L22	their own record of improving living standards	P3 L17	the Conservatives'	P2
P4 L22	their own record of improving living standards and public services			SA
P4 L22	greater clarity			∅
P4 L23	The Tory measures	P3 L18	the Tories	DNF1a the
P4	The Tory measures			SAW

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L23				
P4 L23	the question	P4 L19	a question	L1d
P4 L23	Tory men	P4 L23	The Tory measures	L1a
P4 L23	Tory men			SAW
P4 L23	that message	P4 L22	extol their own record of improving living standards and public services	MDNF2a that
P4 L23	the electorate			CR (politics)

Give the new pressure parties a good airing				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Buying a Party Election Broadcast	HL	the new pressure parties	CR (politics)
P1 L1	one of the cheapest kinds of advertising	P1 L1	Buying a Party Election Broadcast	ETN "could be"
P1 L1	one of the cheapest kinds of advertising			SA
P1 L1	one of the cheapest kinds of advertising			∅
P1 L1	a host of "pressure parties"			SA
P1 L1	a host of "pressure parties"	HL	the new pressure parties	L1a
P1 L1	take advantage of it	P1 L1	Whole sentence	P5
P1 L2	£25,000, the cost of 50 deposits at £500 per candidate			ETAN
P1 L2	anyone			∅
P1 L2	a political party			CR (politics)
P1 L2	a five-minute broadcast	P1 L1	a Party Election Broadcast	DNF1a indefinite article
P2 L3	The anti-abortionists			∅
P2 L3	the head of the growing queue for guaranteed airtime			SA
P2 L3	the head of the growing queue for guaranteed airtime			SA
P2 L3	the head of the growing queue for guaranteed airtime			CR (reporting)
P2 L4	them	P2 L3	The anti-abortionists	P1
P2 L4	the pro- and anti-handgun lobbies	P2 L3	the growing queue for guaranteed airtime	L3
P2 L4	the pro- and anti-handgun lobbies	P2 L3	the growing queue for guaranteed airtime	L3
P2 L4	fathers who don't like the Child Support Agency	P2 L3	the growing queue for guaranteed airtime	L3
P2 L4	animal rights activists	P2 L3	the growing queue for guaranteed airtime	L3
P2 L4	the gay rights pressure group Outrage	P2 L3	the growing queue for guaranteed airtime	L3
P2 L5	this rate	PT	Previous text	NMDNF2a this

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L5	every seat in the general election			CR (politics)
P2 L5	every seat in the general election			CR (politics)
P2 L5	an array of candidates			SA
P2 L5	an array of candidates			CR (politics)
P2 L5	any by-election			CR (politics)
P2 L5	Green			CR (politics)
P2 L5	Referendum			CR (politics)
P2 L5	UK Independence			CR (politics)
P2 L5	Monster Raving Loony			CR (politics)
P2 L5	Natural Law candidates			CR (politics)
P2 L5	many or most seats			SA
P2 L5	many or most seats			CR (politics)
P2 L5	the staple fare of Tory, Lab and Lib Dem			SA
P2 L5	the staple fare of Tory, Lab and Lib Dem			CR (politics)
P2 L5	the staple fare of Tory, Lab and Lib Dem			CR (politics)
P2 L5	the staple fare of Tory, Lab and Lib Dem			CR (politics)
P2 L6	this	PT	Previous text	DPR this
P2 L6	the lovable eccentricity of British tradition			SA
P2 L6	the lovable eccentricity of British tradition	PT	Previous text	E1 (in politics)
P2 L6	the Bill Boaks Tendency			∅
P2 L6	those of us			DPR (exophoric)
P2 L6	that veteran of lost deposits	P2 L6	the Bill Boaks Tendency	NMDNF2a that
P2 L7	Pressure parties	P1 L1	a host of "pressure parties"	L1a
P2 L7	the new phenomenon of British politics	P2 L7	Pressure parties	ETN "are"
P2 L7	the new phenomenon of British politics	P2 L7	Pressure parties	SA
P2 L7	the new phenomenon of British politics	P2 L7	Pressure parties	CR (politics)

P3 L8	people			∅
P3 L8	a cause			∅
P3 L8	demonstrations			∅
P3 L9	People who are old enough to remember Commander Bill Boaks	P2 L6	those of us old enough to remember that veteran of lost deposits	L2a
P3 L9	Commander Bill Boaks	P2 L6	the Bill Boaks Tendency	L1a
P3 L9	those	P3 L8	demonstrations	DPR those
P3 L10	a way of putting pressure on mainstream politicians			SA
P3 L10	a way of putting pressure on mainstream politicians			SA
P3 L10	a way of putting pressure on mainstream politicians			CR (politics)
P3 L10	demos	P3 L8	demonstrations	L1a
P3 L11	today's pressure groups	P2 L3 P2 L4	The anti-abortionists the pro- and anti-handgun lobbies, fathers who don't like the Child Support Agency, ...	L2a
P3 L11	different directions			Cataphoric expression
P3 L11	direct action	P3 L11	different directions	L3
P3 L11	professional lobbying	P3 L11	different directions	L3
P3 L11	two avenues	P3 L11	direct action professional lobbying	ETN "are"
P3 L11	the election			CR (politics)
P3 L11	a third approach	P3 L11	two avenues	L2c
P3 L11	the fore			∅
P3 L11	the electoral system			CR (politics)
P3 L11	publicity			CR (advertising)
P3 L11	leverage			∅
P3 L11	the main political parties			CR (politics)
P4	Some			∅

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L12				
P4 L12	single issue" candidates			CR (politics)
P4 L12	a threat			ETN "see ... as"
P4 L13	these	P4 L12	Some	DPR these
P4 L13	some sitting MPs	P4 L13	these	ETN "include"
P4 L13	some sitting MPs			CR (politics)
P4 L13	Tim Wood, Conservative MP for marginal Stevenage	P4 L13	some sitting MPs	L3
P4 L13	yesterday			ETE
P4 L13	the development	P4 L12	"single issue" candidates	NMDNF2a the
P4 L13	"a perversion of the normal democratic processes".	P4 L13	the development	ETN "as"
P4 L13	"a perversion of the normal democratic processes".			SA
P4 L13	"a perversion of the normal democratic processes".			CR (politics)
P4 L15	We			ER
P4 L16	We			ER
P4 L16	the use of the democratic system			SA
P4 L16	the use of the democratic system			CR (politics)
P4 L16	people who care passionately	P4 L12	"single issue" candidates	L3
P4 L16	change	P4 L16	the democratic system	E1
P4 L17	That	P4 L16	the use of the democratic system by people who care passionately and want to see change	DPR that
P4 L17	democracy			CR (politics)
P4 L18	The last thing			∅
P4 L18	we			ER
P4 L18	it	P4 L16	the use of the democratic system by people who care	P5

			passionately and want to see change	
P5 L19	the possible exception of Sir James Goldsmith's Referendum Party			SA
P5 L19	the possible exception of Sir James Goldsmith's Referendum Party			CR (politics)
P5 L19	we			ER
P5 L19	almost all the pressure party candidates			CR (politics)
P5 L19	no impact			∅
P5 L19	the outcome in their constituencies			SA
P5 L19	the outcome in their constituencies	P5 L19	almost all the pressure party candidates	P2
P5 L19	they	P5 L19	almost all the pressure party candidates	P1
P5 L19	an impact on politics	P5 L19	no impact	L1d
P5 L19	an impact on politics			SA
P5 L20	safe Labour seats			CR (politics)
P5 L20	pollsters			CR (politics)
P5 L20	500	P5 L20	safe Labour seats	E1 (safe Labour seats)
P5 L20	at present			AP
P5 L20	fringe candidates			CR (politics)
P5 L20	the future MPs			CR (politics)
P5 L20	their position	P5 L20	the future MPs	P2
P5 L20	state their position at least on abortion, gun control, crated veal			SA
P5 L20	state their position at least on abortion, gun control, crated veal			SA
P5 L20	state their position at least on abortion, gun control, crated veal			SA
P5 L20	no doubt			∅
P5 L20	many other issues	P5 L20	their position	NMDNF2c other

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P5 L21	The pressure groupies	P2 L7	Pressure parties	NMDNF2a the
P5 L21	hustings			CR (politics)
P5 L21	radio debates			CR (reporting)
P5 L21	local television coverage			CR (reporting)
P5 L21	local newspapers			CR (reporting)
P5 L22	The issues that they want to get discussed	P5 L20	state their position at least on abortion, gun control, crated veal	MDNF2a the
P5 L23	this paper			ER
P5 L23	the so-called pro-life lobby	P2 L3	The anti-abortionists	NMDNF2a the
P5 L23	the best way			∅
P5 L23	poor arguments			E1 (in a democratic system)
P5 L23	them	P5 L23	poor arguments	P1
P5 L23	democratic scrutiny			CR (politics)
P5 L24	better scrutiny	P5 L23	democratic scrutiny	C1
P5 L24	an election			CR (politics)
P5 L25	putting up candidates			CR (politics)
P5 L25	is better than the intimidatory American approach of picketing clinics and harassing nurses and doctors	P5 L25	putting up candidates	C2
P5 L25	the intimidatory American approach of picketing clinics and harassing nurses and doctors			SA
P6 L26	the Pro-Life Alliance	P5 L23	the so-called pro-life lobby	NMDNF2a the
P6 L26	no chance			∅
P6 L26	its political broadcast	P6 L26	the Pro-Life Alliance	P2
P6 L26	some of its members			SA
P6 L26	some of its members	P6 L26	the Pro-Life Alliance	P2
P6	footage of a late aborted			SA

L26	foetus			
P6 L26	footage of a late aborted foetus			CR (abortion)
P6 L27	This	P6 L26	to show footage of a late aborted fetus	DPR this
P6 L27	order			∅
P6 L27	the television regulators			CR (reporting)
P6 L27	existing taste and decency guidelines	P6 L27	the television regulators	E1 (for television)
P7 L28	that	P6 L26	to show footage of a late aborted fetus	DPR that
P7 L28	the agenda			∅
P7 L28	a vigorous debate about abortion			SA
P7 L28	a vigorous debate about abortion			CR (abortion)
P7 L29	The invention of pressure parties			SA
P7 L29	The invention of pressure parties	P2 L7	Pressure parties	L1a
P7 L29	debate on other "single issues"	P7 L28	a vigorous debate about abortion	L2c
P7 L29	democratic pressure			CR (politics)
P7 L29	the broad coalitions which are the main parties			SA
P7 L29	the broad coalitions which are the main parties			CR (politics)
P7 L30	this flowering of competitive democracy	PT	Previous text	NMDNF2a this
P7 L30	1 May			ETE
P7 L30	the day falls			ETE
P7 L31	a party			CR (politics)
P7 L31	a cheap way of buying five minutes of airtime on three channels	P7 L31	forming a party	ETN "may be"
P7 L31	you			IR
P7 L31	it	P7 L31	Forming a party	P1
P7 L31	few years			ETE
P7 L31	general and European election campaigns			CR (politics)
P7	after the first-past-the-			CR

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L32	post system			(politics)
P7 L32	its winner-takes-all verdict			CR (politics)
P7 L32	the campaigners	P7 L29	pressure parties	L3
P7 L32	their parties	P7 L32	the campaigners	P2
P7 L32	their propaganda	P7 L32	the campaigners	P2
P8 L33	The intriguing question			∅
P8 L33	this new style of pressure-politics	P7 L29	The invention of pressure parties	NMDNF2a this
P8 L33	a fairer voting system			CR (politics)
P8 L34	we			ER
P8 L34	an anti-abortion party of half-a-dozen MPs	P6 L26	the Pro-Life Alliance	L3
P8 L34	an anti-abortion party of half-a-dozen MPs			SA
P8 L34	the balance of power in a new horseshoe-shaped assembly			SA
P8 L34	the balance of power in a new horseshoe-shaped assembly			CR (politics)
P8 L35	reality			∅
P8 L35	the single issue of abortion	P5 L20	state their position at least on abortion	MDNF2a the
P8 L35	a political party			CR (politics)
P8 L35	a reformed system			CR (politics)
P8 L36	the abortion issue	P8 L35	the single issue of abortion	MDNF2a the
P8 L36	part of the platform of an explicitly Christian party			SA
P8 L36	part of the platform of an explicitly Christian party			SA
P8 L36	part of the platform of an explicitly Christian party			CR (politics)
P8 L36	this	P8 L36	that the abortion issue could form part of the platform of an explicitly Christian party	DPR this
P8 L36	the intention of some of those on the fringes of the Movement for			SA

	Christian Democracy			
P8 L36	the intention of some of those on the fringes of the Movement for Christian Democracy			SA
P8 L36	the intention of some of those on the fringes of the Movement for Christian Democracy			CR (politics)
P8 L36	whose chairman			SA
P8 L36	Michael Portillo			CR (politics)
P8 L36	Enfield Southgate			CR (politics)
P8 L37	any attempt			∅
P8 L37	Christian beliefs			CR (Christian political parties)
P8 L37	this way	P8 L36	that the abortion issue could form part of the platform of an explicitly Christian party	MDNF2a this
P8 L37	a splintering even of committed Christian voters			SA
P8 L37	a splintering even of committed Christian voters			CR (Christian political parties)
P9 L38	some issues	P7 L29	"single issues"	L1d
P9 L38	others	P9 L38	some issues	Pro-from others
P9 L38	they	P9 L38	some issues	P1
P9 L38	a proportional system	P8 L33	a fairer voting system	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P9 L38	the odd seat or two			CR (politics)
P9 L39	Environmental concerns	P9 L38	some issues	L3
P9 L39	example			∅
P9 L39	a coherent philosophy	P9 L39	Environmental concerns	ETN "amount to"
P9 L40	the green movement			CR (environment)
P9 L40	it	P9 L40	the green movement	P1
P9 L40	parliament			CR (politics)
P9	it	P9	the green movement	P1

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L40		L40		
P9 L40	the European Parliament			CR (politics)
P9 L40	1989			ETE
P9 L40	the Green Party	P9 L40	the green movement	DNF1a the
P9 L40	15 per cent of the vote			SA
P9 L40	15 per cent of the vote			CR (politics)
P10 L41	nothing to fear			∅
P10 L41	pressure parties	P7 L29	pressure parties	L1a
P10 L42	only thing to fear	P10 L41	nothing to fear	L1d
P10 L42	their voices	P10 L41	pressure parties	P2

Going, Going Sotheby's must act fast before its reputation has wholly gone				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Cambodia			∅
P1 L1	China			∅
P1 L1	Iraq			∅
P1 L1	Italy			∅
P1 L1	the smuggling of antiquities			CR (works of art)
P1 L1	works of art			CR (works of art)
P1 L1	a flourishing illegal business	P1 L1	the smuggling of antiquities and works of art	ETN"is"
P1 L2	The lesson for local legislators			E1
P1 L2	a difficult one	P1 L2	The lesson for local legislators	S1
P1 L2	the more draconian the restrictions on legitimate exports		the smuggling of antiquities and works of art	SA
P1 L2	legitimate exports	P1 L1		E1 (of works of art)
P1 L2	the smuggling	P1 L1	the smuggling of antiquities and works of art	DNF1a the
P1 L3	China	P1 L1	China	L1a
P1 L3	a blanket export ban on all but very recent objects	P1 L2	the more draconian the restrictions that are set on legitimate exports	NMDNF3a indefinite article
P1 L3	all but very recent objects			SA
P1 L3	being pillaged on a massive scale			∅
P1 L3	some cases	P1 L3	is being pillaged on a massive scale	L3
P1 L3	with the collusion of corrupt officials			SA
P1 L4	Italy	P1 L1	Italy	L1a
P1 L4	whose cultural inheritance			SA
P1 L4	similar problems	P1 L3	China ... is being pillaged	NMDNF2c
P1 L4	its law	P1 L1	Italy	P2

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P1 L4	export licences	P1 L3	a blanket export ban	L1a
P1 L4	export licences			SAW
P1 L4	any work that predates 1939			E1 (of art)
P2 L5	Britain			CR (China, Italy, etc.)
P2 L5	the liberal Waverley rules	P1 L2	legitimate exports	E1 (for exports)
P2 L5	a delay on the export			SA
P2 L5	the export	P1 L2	legitimate exports	L1d
P2 L5	particularly important works	P1 L1	works of art	E1 (of art)
P2 L5	the nation	P2 L5	Britain	NMDNF2a the
P2 L5	a chance to match the price offered by a foreign bidder			SA
P2 L5	the price offered by a foreign bidder	P2 L5	particularly important works	E1 (for particularly important works)
P2 L6	That	P2 L5	Previous sentence	DPR that
P2 L6	a fair balance between the public interest			SA
P2 L6	the public interest	P2 L5	Britain	E1 (in Britain)
P2 L6	truly "national" treasures	P2 L5	particularly important works	L2a
P2 L6	the country	P2 L5	Britain	NMDNF2a the
P2 L6	respect for private property rights			SA
P2 L6	respect for private property rights	P2 L5	a foreign bidder	CR (public/private)
P2 L6	the belief that art is for the world to enjoy			SA
P2 L6	the belief that art is for the world to enjoy			CR (works of art)
P2 L6	the belief that art is for the world to enjoy			SA
P2 L6	frontiers			CR (China, Italy, Britain, etc)
P3 L7	This carefully calibrated policy	P2 L5	Whole sentence	NMDNF2a this
P3 L7	Britain	P2 L5	Britain	L1a
P3 L7	for the legal international market	P1 L1	works of art	E1
P3	the global pre-eminence			SA

L7	of such great auction houses as Sotheby's and Christie's			
P3 L7	the global pre-eminence of such great auction houses as Sotheby's and Christie's			NMDNF2a the
P3 L8	opportunity			∅
P3 L8	their businesses	P3 L7	Sotheby's and Christie's	P2
P3 L8	only their expertise	P3 L7	Sotheby's and Christie's	P2
P3 L8	it is their reputation for honesty and integrity	P3 L7	Sotheby's and Christie's	P2
P3 L8	the conduct of their business	P3 L7	Sotheby's and Christie's	P2
P3 L9	The evidence of wrongdoing at Sotheby's			SA
P3 L9	The evidence of wrongdoing at Sotheby's	P3 L7	Sotheby's and Christie's	L1a
P3 L9	we			ER
P3 L9	today			ETE
P3 L9	both the art world			CR (China, Italy, Britain, Sotheby's and Christie's)
P3 L9	the Department of Trade and Industry	P2 L5	Britain	Homophobic
P3 L10	The practices uncovered	P3 L9	The evidence of wrongdoing	NMDNF2a the
P3 L10	the ethically questionable to the plainly illegal	P3 L9	The evidence of wrongdoing	ETN "range from".
P3 L10	the ethically questionable			CR (illegal practices)
P3 L10	the plainly illegal			CR (illegal practices)
P3 L11	The clear and direct involvement of Sotheby's employees in art smuggling	P3 L9	The evidence of wrongdoing at Sotheby's	NMDNF2a the
P3 L11	the subject of today's article	P3 L11	of Sotheby's employees in art smuggling	ETAN
P4 L12	tape			∅
P4 L12	a hidden camera			∅
P4	Roeland Kollwijn a	P3	Sotheby's employees	L3

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L12	Sotheby's Old Masters expert	L11		
P4 L12	Milan			CR (Italy)
P4 L12	the illegal export of a painting by the 18th century northern Italian artist Giuseppe Nogari to London			CR (the smuggling of antiquities and works of art)
P4 L12	London			CR (Britain)
P4 L12	for sale by Sotheby's			∅
P4 L12	for sale by Sotheby's	P3 L11	of Sotheby's	L1a
P4 L13	At the London end	P4 L12	London	DNF1a the
P4 L13	At the London end			SAW
P4 L13	the painting	P4 L12	a painting by the 18th century northern Italian artist Giuseppe Nogari	DNF1a the
P4 L13	a member of Sotheby's staff	P4 L12	Sotheby's	SA
P4 L13	a member of Sotheby's staff			L1a
P4 L13	a member of Sotheby's staff			SAW
P4 L13	auction			CR (auction houses)
P4 L14	This classic journalistic sting	P4 L12	The whole sentence	NMDNF2a this
P4 L14	a mass of documents and circumstantial evidence			SA
P4 L14	a mass of documents and circumstantial evidence			∅
P4 L14	the Far East			∅
P4 L14	Italy	P1 L4	Italy	L1a
P4 L14	this	P4 L12	the illegal export of a painting by the 18th century northern Italian artist Giuseppe Nogari	DPR this
P4 L14	was not an isolated case	P4 L14	this	ETN "was not"
P4 L14	one or two bad apples	P4 L12	Roeland Kollewijn, a Sotheby's Old Masters expert in Milan	L3
P4 L14	an otherwise sound barrel	P4 L12	Sotheby's	NMDNF2a indefinite article

P4 L15	Mr Kollewijn	P4 L12	Roeland Kollewijn	L1a
P4 L15	the transaction	P4 L12	the illegal export of a painting by the 18th century northern Italian artist Giuseppe Nogari	NMDNF2a the
P4 L15	as routine	P4 L15	the transaction	ETN "treats ... as"
P4 L15	the complicity of his colleagues		Mr Kollewijn	SA
P4 L15	the complicity of his colleagues	P4 L15		P2
P4 L15	he	P4 L15	Mr Kollewijn	P1
P4 L15	an Italian judge			CR (Italy)
P4 L15	he	P4 L12	Roeland Kollewijn	P1
P4 L15	wiretaps on Sotheby's in Milan		Sotheby's	SA
P4 L15	Sotheby's in Milan	P4 L12		L1a
P4 L15	Sotheby's in Milan	P4 L12		Milan
P4 L15	they	P4 L15	his colleagues	P1
P4 L15	I	P4 L12	Roeland Kollewijn	P1
P4 L15	I	P4 L12	Roeland Kollewijn	P1
P4 L15	the whole lot at the Milan office	P4 L15	his colleagues	NMDNF2a the
P4 L16	Last month			ETE
P4 L16	the art squad of the Italian carabinieri			CR (works of art)
P4 L16	the art squad of the Italian carabinieri			CR (Italy)
P4 L16	a haul worth £25 million of smuggled antiquities		the smuggling of antiquities	SA
P4 L16	£25 million of smuggled antiquities			SA
P4 L16	£25 million of smuggled antiquities	P1 L1		L1d
P4 L16	smuggled antiquities illegally excavated from archaeological sites			SA
P4 L16	employees of important international auction houses			CR (Roeland Kollewijn & his colleagues)
P4 L16	acting as intermediaries	P4 L16	employees of important international auction	ETN "accused of acting as"

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

			houses	
P4 L17	grave doubts about Sotheby's proud claims		Sotheby's in Milan	SA
P4 L17	Sotheby's proud claims	P4 L15		L1a
P4 L17	strict rules			∅
P4 L18	the recovery of stolen or looted objects			SA
P4 L18	the recovery of stolen or looted objects			CR (smuggled antiquities)
P4 L18	governments and law enforcement agencies			CR (Italian carabinieri)
P4 L18	The onus			∅
P4 L18	the company	P4 L17	Sotheby's	NMDNF2a the
P4 L18	the eminent men and women on its board		Sotheby's	SA
P4 L18	the eminent men and women on its board	P4 L17		P2
P4 L18	these charges	PPs	Previous paragraphs	NMDNF2a these
P4 L18	it	P4 L17	Sotheby's	P1
P4 L18	them	P4 L18	these charges	P1
P4 L18	it	P4 L17	Sotheby's	P1
P4 L18	it	P4 L17	Sotheby's	P1
P4 L18	the law			CR (Italian carabinieri, etc)

Guessing Milosevic's next move If it's repression in Kosovo, the West must be prepared				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	HL	Milosevic's	L1a
P1 L1	the benefit of the doubt			∅
P1 L1	is elementary commonsense	P1 L1	the benefit of the doubt	ETN "is"
P1 L1	anyone			∅
P1 L1	him	HL	Milosevic's	P1
P1 L1	the strings			∅
P1 L1	the strings in Belgrade			CR (Yugoslave politics)
P1 L1	the past decade			ETE
P1 L2	Next week's approval by parliament		Belgrade	SA
P1 L2	by parliament	P1 L1		Homophoric
P1 L2	approval by parliament of a bill			SA
P1 L2	reinstating the opposition electoral victories	P1 L1	Belgrade	Homophoric
P1 L2	he	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P1
P1 L2	three months			ETE
P1 L2	a formality	P1 L2	approval by parliament of a bill	ETN "should be"
P1 L3	the protest	P1 L2	reinstating the opposition electoral victories	E1 (about electoral victories)
P1 L3	approval	P1 L2	bill	E1
P1 L4	Mr Milosevic	HL	Milosevic's	L1a
P1 L4	the opposition	P1 L2	the opposition	DNF1a the
P1 L4	new strategy			∅
P1 L4	he	P1 L4	Mr Milosevic	P1
P1 L5	an air of tactical disorganisation			∅
P1 L5	the past few days			ETE
P1	last Sunday			ETE

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L5				
P1 L5	he	P1 L4	Mr Milosevic	P1
P1 L5	a tougher line	P1 L4	Mr Milosevic	E1
P1 L5	by sending in the paramilitaries	P1 L5	a tougher line	ETN "by"
P1 L5	the paramilitaries			Homophoric
P1 L5	the demonstrators			CR (the protest)
P1 L5	the disputed issue	P1 L2	reinstating the opposition electoral victories	MDNF2a the
P1 L5	two days later			ETE
P1 L6	such shifts	P1 L5	sending in the paramilitaries against the demonstrators — only to concede the disputed issue	NMDNF2a such
P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	P1 L4	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P1 L6	himself	P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	P5
P1 L6	a past master	P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	ETN "shown himself to be"
P1 L6	a past master	P1 L4	Mr Milosevic	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P1 L6	Radovan Karadzic a close second			∅
P1 L6	stringing along the international community			∅
P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P1 L7	He	P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	P1
P1 L7	no compunction about treating his own people			SA
P1 L7	his own people	P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	P2
P1 L7	in the same way	P1 L6	stringing along the international	NMDNF2a the same way
P1 L8	he	HL	Milosevic's	P1
P1 L8	the verdict in these municipal elections	P1 L1	reinstating the opposition electoral victories	MDNF2a the
P1 L8	he	P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	P1
P1 L8	in order			AP

P1 L8	the ground			∅
P1 L8	the parliamentary and presidential elections			CR (Yugoslave politics)
P1 L8	the end of this year			ETE
P2 L9	One possibility			∅
P2 L9	Mr Milosevic	P1 L6	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P2 L9	the Kosovo card	HL	Kosovo	DNF1a the
P2 L9	the Kosovo card			SAW
P2 L9	he	P2 L9	Mr Milosevic	P1
P2 L9	the late 1980s	P1 L1	the past decade	NMDNF2a the
P2 L9	such effect			AP
P2 L9	Serb nationalism			CR
P2 L9	him	P2 L9	Mr Milosevic	P1
P2 L10	It had become conventional post-Dayton wisdom			∅
P2 L10	he	P2 L9	Mr Milosevic	P1
P2 L10	the Albanian majority there	HL	Kosovo	E1 (in Kosovo)
P2 L10	a degree of autonomy			∅
P2 L10	relations with the West		the West	SA
P2 L10	with the West	HL		DNF1a the
P2 L10	An agreement			∅
P2 L11	him	P2 L9	Mr Milosevic	P1
P2 L11	the Kosovo leader Ibrahim Rugova			CR (Kosovo)
P2 L11	Albanian youth			CR (Kosovo)
P2 L11	state schools	HL	Kosovo	Homophobic
P2 L11	this direction	P2 L10	he might prefer to allow the Albanian majority there a degree of autonomy	NMDNF2a this
P2 L12	political survival for Mr Milosevic			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L12	political survival for Mr Milosevic	P2 L9	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P2 L12	He	P2 L12	political survival for Mr Milosevic	P1
P2 L13	chauvinist sentiment	P2 L9	Serb nationalism	L2a
P2 L13	chauvinist sentiment with Kosovo	HL	Kosovo	L1a
P2 L13	chauvinist sentiment with Kosovo at its core	P2 L13	chauvinist sentiment	P2
P2 L13	in the ranks of the Zajedno coalition	P1 L3	the opposition	SA
P2 L13	in the ranks of the Zajedno coalition			NMDNF2a the
P2 L13	him	P2 L12	Mr Milosevic	P2
P2 L13	the streets	P1 L1	Belgrade	E1
P2 L14	Official propaganda in Belgrade			SA
P2 L14	Belgrade	P1 L1	Belgrade	L1a
P2 L15	the familiar theme of the alleged plight of the Serbian minority in			SA
P2 L15	the familiar theme of the alleged plight of the Serbian minority in			SA
P2 L15	the familiar theme of the alleged plight of the Serbian minority in Kosovo			CR (Yugoslave politics)
P2 L15	Serbian minority in Kosovo	HL	Kosovo	L1a
P2 L15	He	P2 L12	Mr Milosevic	P1
P2 L15	an assertive crackdown on alleged "perpetrators of terrorist acts in Kosovo"			SA
P2 L15	alleged "perpetrators of terrorist acts in Kosovo":			SA
P2 L15	alleged "perpetrators of terrorist acts in Kosovo":			SA
P2 L15	in Kosovo":	P2 L13	Kosovo	L1a
P2 L15	Monday			ETE
P2 L15	he	P2 L12	Mr Milosevic	P1
P2	the Interior ministry	P2	Belgrade	Homophobic

L15		L14		
P2 L15	its successful operation	P2 L15	the Interior ministry	P2
P2 L15	three Albanians			CR (Kosovo)
P2 L15	a "shoot-out"			CR (crackdown)
P2 L15	last week			ETE
P2 L16	Some of these incidents			SA
P2 L16	Some of these incidents	P2 L15	an assertive crackdown crackdown on alleged "perpetrators of terrorist acts in Kosovo	NMDNF2a these
P2 L16	radical Albanians			CR
P2 L16	refuse to endure the denial of rights	P2 L10	to allow the Albanian majority there a degree of autonomy	NMDNF2a the
P2 L16	others	P2 L16	these incidents	Pro-form others
P2 L16	may be Serb provocations	P2 L16	these incidents	ETN "may be"
P2 L17	The new disorder across the border in Albania			SA
P2 L17	The new disorder across the border in Albania			SA
P2 L17	The new disorder across the border in Albania			CR (Albanians)
P2 L17	this region	P2 L15	Kosovo	NMDNF2a this
P2 L18	The US	P2 L10	the West	L3
P2 L18	sending a strong message			∅
P2 L18	the Milosevic regime			CR (Yugoslave politics)
P2 L18	these actions	P2 L15	an assertive crackdown crackdown on alleged "perpetrators of terrorist acts in Kosovo	NMDNF2a these
P2 L18	his case	P2 L12	Mr Milosevic	P2
P2 L18	the Serbian "state of repression" in Kosovo			CR
P2 L18	the Serbian "state of repression" in Kosovo	P2 L15	an assertive crackdown crackdown on alleged "perpetrators of terrorist acts in Kosovo	NMDNF2a the

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L18	the Serbian "state of repression" in Kosovo	P2 L15	Kosovo	L1a
P2 L19	That message	P2 L18	sending a strong message	MDNF2a that
P2 L19	the EU	P2 L10	the West	L3
P2 L19	anyone			∅
P2 L19	former British foreign secretaries	P2 L19	the EU	CR (The West)
P2 L19	Belgrade	P2 L14	Belgrade	L1a

Have the debate				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	The Americans			∅
P1 L1	an unusual insight			∅
P1 L1	British politics			∅
P1 L1	- it was an American politician			CR (America)
P1 L1	we			CR (British politics)
P1 L1	an empire			∅
P1 L1	a role			∅
P1 L2	Our close relationship	P1 L1	The Americans	E1 (with the Americans)
P1 L2	political developments in the United States			SA
P1 L2	political developments in the United States			CR (America)
P2 L3	a preview			∅
P2 L3	future changes to our own political scene			SA
P2 L3	our own political scene			CR (British politics)
P2 L3	the Labour Party			CR (British politics)
P2 L3	yesterday			ETE
P2 L3	some Americans	P1 L1	The Americans	L3
P2 L3	their enthusiasm	P2 L3	some Americans	P2
P2 L3	Tony Blair's charms			CR (British politics)
P2 L3	Tony Blair's charms			SAG
P2 L3	Both Daphne Barak, the NBC's influential interviewer	P2 L3	some Americans	L3
P2 L3	and the CBS's primetime 60 Minutes programme	P2 L3	some Americans	L3
P2 L3	him	P2 L3	Tony Blair's	P1
P2 L3	Tony Blinton	P2 L3	Tony Blair's	L2a
P1	it	P1	have nicknamed him	P4

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L3		L3	Tony Blinton	
P1 L3	a compliment	P1 L3	have nicknamed him Tony Blinton	ETN "nicknamed him"
P2 L4	They	P2 L3	Daphne Barak & the CBS's primetime 60 Minutes programme	P1
P2 L4	Mr Blair	P2 L3	Tony Blair's	L1a
P2 L4	President Clinton's best soundbites			CR (America) SAG
P2 L4	President Clinton's best soundbites			
P2 L5	Miss Barak	P2 L3	Daphne Barak	L1a
P2 L5	he	P2 L4	Mr Blair	P1
P2 L5	a scared child	P2 L4	Mr Blair	ETN "acted like"
P1 L5	she	P2 L3	Daphne Barak	P1
P2 L5	him	P2 L4	Mr Blair	P1
P2 L6	they	P2 L3	Daphne Barak & the CBS's primetime 60 Minutes programme	P1
P2 L6	Mr Clinton	P2 L4	President Clinton's	L1a
P2 L6	substance and charisma on television			SA
P2 L6	television			CR (television)
P3 L7	The Americans	P1 L1	The Americans	DNF1a the
P3 L7	a point			∅
P3 L8	This is not just a case of our version is better	PS	Previous sentence	NMDNF2a this
P3 L8	our version	P2 L6	Mr Clinton	MDNF2a our
P3 L8	yours	P3 L8	our version	P1
P3 L9	Mr Blair	P2 L4	Mr Blair	L1a
P3 L9	Mr Clinton's chutzpah, grasp of policy detail and presentational originality...	P2 L6	Mr Clinton	L1a
P3 L9	Mr Clinton's chutzpah, grasp of policy detail and presentational originality...			SAG
P3 L10	Mr Blair's fuzzy political image	P3 L9	Mr Blair	L1a

P3 L10	Mr Blair's fuzzy political image			SAG
P3 L10	him	P3 L10	Mr Blair's	P1
P3 L10	a wide range of voters			SA
P3 L10	a wide range of voters			CR (British politics)
P3 L10	their commitment	P3 L10	a wide range of voters	P2
P3 L10	All of which	PS	Previous sentence	Pro-form all
P3 L10	Mr Major			CR (British politics)
P3 L10	his media strategists	P3 L10	Mr Major	P2
P3 L10	something to mull over			∅
P3 L12	Majorite flaws			CR (Mr Major)
P3 L12	a head-to-head presidential style television debate			CR (television)
P3 L12	Mr Blair	P3 L10	Mr Blair's	L1a
P3 L12	the Prime Minister	P3 L11	Mr Major	NMDNF2a the
P3 L12	just the platform he needs	P3 L12	a head-to-head presidential style television debate	L2a
P3 L12	he	P3 L11	Mr Major	P1
P3 L12	polling day			CR (British politics)
P4 L13	the Liberal Democrats			CR (British politics)
P4 L13	it would be unfair if Paddy Ashdown were not included	P3 L12	a head-to-head presidential style television debate	E1 (in a head-to-head ... debate)
P4 L13	they	P4 L13	the Liberal Democrats	P1
P4 L13	legal action			∅
P4 L13	the broadcasters	P3 L12	a head-to-head presidential style television debate	E1 (the debate)
P4 L13	bias			∅
P4 L13	The Tories			CR (British politics)
P4 L14	a three-cornered debate	P3 L12	a head-to-head presidential style television debate	L1d

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P4 L14	Mr Major	P3 L11	Mr Major	L1a
P4 L14	the Opposition leaders	P1 L3/ P4 L13	Paddy Ashdown & Tony Blair	NMDNF2a the
P4 L15	they	P4 L14	The Tories	P1
P4 L15	three two-way debates	P4 L14	a three-cornered debate	L1d
P4 L16	This	P4 L14	three two-way debates	DPR this
P4 L16	mean two semi-finals	P4 L14	three two-way debates	L2a
P4 L16	Mr Blair	P1 L3	Tony Blair's	L1a
P4 L16	Mr Ashdown	P4 L13	Paddy Ashdown	L1a
P4 L16	Mr Major	P4 L14	Mr Major	L1a
P4 L16	Mr Ashdown	P4 L13	Paddy Ashdown	L1a
P4 L16	a grand finale	P4 L16	two semi-finals	L2d
P4 L16	Mr Major	P4 L16	Mr Major	L1a
P4 L16	Mr Blair	P1 L3	Tony Blair's	L1a
P4 L16	Mr Ashdown	P4 L13	Paddy Ashdown	L1a
P4 L16	The question of the SNP and Plaid Cymru			CR (British politics)
P5 L17	them	P5 L17	the SNP and Plaid Cymru	P1
P5 L17	four-way debates			L1d
P5 L17	Scotland			CR (British politics)
P5 L17	Wales			CR (British politics)
P5 L17	the relevant secretaries of state and shadow secretaries			CR (British politics)
P5 L18	Michael Forsyth and William Hague	P5 L17	the relevant secretaries of state and shadow secretaries	ETAN
P5 L18	Michael Forsyth and William Hague			CR (politics)
P5 L18	their profiles	P5 L17	the relevant secretaries of state and shadow secretaries	P2
P5 L19	Mr Major	P4 L16	Mr Major	L1a

P5 L19	nothing			∅
P5 L19	everything			∅
P5 L20	the polls			CR (British politics)
P5 L20	he	P5 L19	Mr Major	P1
P5 L20	the plucky challenger	P5 L19	Mr Major	NMDNF2a the
P5 L20	the smug incumbent	P5 L19	Mr Major	NMDNF2a the
P5 L21	People			∅
P5 L21	his quirky phraseology and impression of awkward sincerity	P5 L19	Mr Major	P2
P5 L21	he	P5 L19	Mr Major	P1
P5 L21	his soapbox	P5 L19	Mr Major	P2
P5 L21	1992			ETE
P5 L22	His grasp of detail	P5 L19	Mr Major	P2
P5 L22	his lack of rhetoric	P5 L19	Mr Major	P2
P5 L23	In his speech	P5 L19	Mr Major	P2
P5 L23	Brussels			∅
P5 L23	he	P5 L19	Mr Major	P1
P5 L23	a lucid exposition of the facts and figures			SA
P5 L23	a lucid exposition of the facts and figures which show Britain ...			SA
P5 L23	Britain			CR (British politics)
P5 L23	her European partners	P5 L23	Britain	P2
P5 L23	most areas			∅
P5 L24	He	P5 L19	Mr Major	P1
P5 L24	this	P5 L23	he gave a lucid exposition of the facts and figures	DPR this
P5 L24	soundbites	P2L 4	President Clinton's best soundbites	L1d
P5 L25	The decent amount of time			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P5 L25	a full-dress debate	P3 L12	a head-to-head presidential style television debate	L1d
P5 L25	his gifts	P5 L19	Mr Major	P2
P6 L26	Mr Blair	P4 L16	Mr Blair	L1a
P6 L26	the chance	P3 L12	a head-to-head presidential style television debate	E1 (in a head-to-head ...)
P6 L26	he	P6 L26	Mr Blair	P1
P6 L26	just a ruthless party manager or a smiling Clinton clone	P6 L26	he	ETN "is not just"
P6 L26	a ruthless party manager	P6 L26	Mr Blair	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P6 L26	a smiling Clinton clone	P6 L26	Mr Blair	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P6 L27	Mr Ashdown	P4 L16	Mr Ashdown	L1a
P6 L27	people's living rooms			∅
P6 L27	people's living rooms			SAG
P6 L27	clear pink water			∅
P6 L27	himself	P6 L27	Mr Ashdown	P5
P6 L27	Mr Blair	P6 L26	Mr Blair	L1a
P6 L28	Whoever			∅
P6 L28	the viewers	P3 L12	a head-to-head presidential style television debate	E1 (of the debate)
P6 L28	a proper debate	P5 L25	a full-dress debate	L1d
P6 L28	trial by slogan			∅
P6 L29	Mr Major	P6 L29	Mr Major	L1a
P6 L29	Mr Blair	P6 L27	Mr Blair	L1a
P6 L29	an idea	P6 L28	a proper debate	MDNF2a indefinite article
P6 L29	from across the Atlantic	P1 L2	the United States	L2a

High minded in high places At Davos, world leaders can afford to take a lofty view				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	a few days			∅
P1 L1	each February			∅
P1 L1	the global village			∅
P1 L1	a real one	P1 L1	the global village	S1
P1 L2	Davos	HL	Davos	L1a
P1 L2	in the Swiss Alps			SA
P1 L2	a real village	P1 L2	Davos	ETN "is"
P1 L2	the same sense that Gleneagles			SA
P1 L2	Gleneagles			∅
P1 L2	a real hotel	P1 L2	Gleneagles	ETN "is"
P1 L2	Britannia			∅
P1 L2	a real yacht	P1 L2	Britannia	ETN "a real yacht"
P1 L3	nothing run-of-the-mill about the 1,000-strong guest list			SA
P1 L3	nothing run-of-the-mill about the 1,000-strong guest list	HL	world leaders	NMDNF2a the
P1 L3	Klaus Schwab			∅
P1 L3	each year	P1 L1	each February	L1a
P1 L3	his so-called World Economic Forum	P1 L3	Klaus Schwab	P2
P1 L4	Princes, premiers and bankers (not to mention journalists)	P1 L3	the 1,000-strong guest list	L2a
P1 L4	Davos	P1 L2	Davos	L1a
P1 L4	Mr Schwab	P1 L3	Klaus Schwab	L1a
P1 L4	his alpenhorn	P1 L3	Klaus Schwab	P2
P1 L5	This week			ETE
P1 L5	the acceptees	P1 L3	the 1,000-strong guest list	NMDNF2a the

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P1 L5	several dozen world leaders	HL	world leaders	L1a
P1 L5	from Nelson Mandela to Binyamin Netanyahu	HL	several dozen world leaders	ETAN
P1 L5	several dozen world leaders from Nelson Mandela to Binyamin Netanyahu	HL	world leaders	L3
P1 L6	The prime minister of Russia	HL	world leaders	L3
P1 L6	has the leader of the world's newest superpower, Bill Gates of Microsoft	HL	world leaders	L3
P1 L6	The stories that have come out of Davos this week	P1 L4	Davos	Cataphoric expression
P1 L6	The stories that have come out of Davos this week			SA
P1 L7	The stories that have come out of Davos	P1 L4	Davos	L1a
P1 L6	this week			ETE
P1 L7	Japanese and Korean economic reform	P1 L7	The stories that have come out of Davos this week	L3
P1 L7	Middle East peace moves	P1 L7	The stories that have come out of Davos this week	L3
P1 L7	loan guarantees for Iran	P1 L7	The stories that have come out of Davos this week	L3
P1 L7	and the future of Jewish deposits placed in Swiss banks under the Third Reich	P1 L7	The stories that have come out of Davos this week	L3
P1 L8	a summit meeting in every sense	HL	Davos	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P2 L9	The rise and rise of Davos			SA
P2 L9	The rise and rise of Davos	P1 L7	Davos	L1a
P2 L9	a phenomenon of our times	P1 L7	Davos	ETN "is".
P2 L10	Mr Schwab's Geneva-based Forum	P1 L3	his so-called World Economic Forum	L2a
P2 L10	1970			ETE
P2 L10	he	P1 L3	Klaus Schwab	P1
P2 L10	a conference	P2 L9	Davos	E1 (at Davos)

P2 L10	Europe's international business future			CR (business) SAG
P2 L10	Europe's international business future			
P2 L11	Davos	P2 L9	Davos	L1a
P2 L11	its present-day status as the most prestigious freebie on the planet	P2 L11	Davos	P2
P2 L11	its present-day status as the most prestigious freebie on the planet	P2 L11	Davos	ETN "as".
P2 L12	its importance	P2 L11	Davos	P2
P2 L12	doubts			Cataphoric expression
P2 L13	Samuel Huntingdon has charged that Davos embodies ... Western-centred view of the world	P2 L12	doubts	L3
P2 L13	Davos	P2 L11	Davos	L1a
P2 L13	the entire globe	P2 L13	the world	L5a
P2 L13	neo-liberal capitalist lines			∅
P2 L14	Professor Huntingdon's critique	P2 L13	the American political scientist Samuel Huntingdon	L1a
P2 L14	Professor Huntingdon's critique			SAG
P2 L14	some support			∅
P2 L14	the hubristic literature			∅
P2 L14	the Forum	P1 L3	his so-called World Economic Forum	DNF1a the
P2 L14	irony			∅
P2 L14	the WEF's claims	P1 L3	his so-called World Economic Forum	DNF1a the
P2 L14	the WEF's claims			SAG
P2 L14	the pioneer role in such events			SA
P2 L14	in such events			ETN "as"
P2 L14	the end of apartheid in South Africa	P2 L14	in such events	NMDNF2a
P2 L14	the reunification of Germany	P2 L14	in such events	NMDNF2a
P2	the Israel-Palestine	P2	in such events	NMDNF2a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L14	accords	L14		
P2 L14	the ending of Vietnam's international isolation	P2 L14	in such events	NMDNF2a
P3 L15	all this	P2 L14	Previous sentence	DPR this
P3 L15	the annual trek to Davos	P1 L1	each February, the global village decamps to a real one	NMDNF2a the
P3 L15	a felt need			∅
P3 L15	those	P3 L15	the annual trek to Davos	DPR those
P3 L15	it	P1 L3	his so-called World Economic Forum	P1
P3 L16	It is not hard to see why	P3 L15	the annual trek to Davos obviously meets a felt need	E1 (it fills a felt need)
P3 L16	Human beings			∅
P3 L16	Moses	P3 L16	Human beings	L2a
P3 L16	Mohammed	P3 L16	Human beings	L2a
P3 L16	wisdom			∅
P3 L17	the high places of the world	P1 L2	Swiss Alps	NMDNF2a the
P3 L17	we			ER
P3 L17	such things	P3 L16	wisdom in the high places of the world	NMDNF2a such
P3 L17	society's leaders	HL	world leaders	L1b
P3 L17	today			ETE
P3 L18	A century			ETE
P3 L18	the Swiss Alps	P1 L2	Swiss Alps	DNF1a the
P3 L18	a place apart from the conflict and pestilence of the real world, a place of health, reason and justice, a make-believe land of mentally rewarding play	P3 L18	the Swiss Alps	ETN "were seen as"
P3 L18	a place apart from the conflict and pestilence of the real world	P1 L2	Swiss Alps	DNF1a indefinite article
P3 L18	a place of health, reason and justice	P1 L2	Swiss Alps	DNF1a indefinite article
P3 L18	a make-believe land of mentally rewarding	P1 L2	Swiss Alps	DNF1a indefinite article

	play for those who could afford its often exorbitant prices			
P3 L18	for those who could afford	PT	Previous text (society's leaders, etc.) the Swiss Alps	L2a
P3 L18	its often exorbitant prices	P3 L18		P2
P3 L19	That	P3 L18	Previous sentence	DPR that
P3 L19	Davos itself	P3 L15	Davos	L1a
P3 L19	the perfect setting for the great reflective novel of pre-1914 Europe, Thomas Mann's The Magic Mountain	P3 L19	Davos itself	NMDNF2a the
P3 L19	the great reflective novel of pre-1914 Europe, Thomas Mann's The Magic Mountain			SA
P3 L19	The Victorian social critic Frederic Harrison			∅
P3 L19	the Swiss Alps	P3 L18	the Swiss Alps	DNF1a the
P3 L21	"the sanatorium and diversorium of the civilised world	P3 L19	the Swiss Alps	ETN "called"
P3 L21	"the sanatorium and diversorium of the civilised world	P3 L18	the Swiss Alps	NMDNF2a the
P3 L21	It is curiously reassuring			∅
P3 L22	Davos	P3 L19	Davos itself	L1a
P3 L22	that same role	P3 L21	"the sanatorium and diversorium of the civilised world".	NMDNF2a that
P3 L22	a century later	P3 L21	The Victorian social critic Frederic Harrison <u>once</u> called the Swiss Alps	L2d

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

Irreversible Opt-In Business should weigh the social chapter's true cost				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Britain's opt-out	HL	Opt-in	L1d
P1 L1	the social chapter	HL	the social chapter's true cost	DNF1a the
P1 L1	Labour's Shadow Foreign Secretary, Robin Cook			∅
P1 L1	yesterday			ETE
P1 L1	Tory dogma			CR (British politics)
P1 L1	national interests	P1 L1	Britain's opt-out	L2d
P1 L2	Mr Cook	P1 L1	Labour's Shadow Foreign Secretary, Robin Cook	L1a
P1 L2	Labour's pledge	P1 L1	Labour's Shadow Foreign Secretary, Robin Cook	L1a
P1 L2	Labour's pledge	P1 L1	Labour's Shadow Foreign Secretary, Robin Cook	SAG
P1 L2	Britain	P1 L1	Britain's opt-out	L1a
P1 L2	the Maastricht treaty's seven enabling clauses on social affairs	HL	the social chapter's true cost	NMDNF2a
P1 L2	the Maastricht treaty's seven enabling clauses on social affairs			SA
P1 L2	the previous evening			ETE
P1 L2	Brussels	P1 L2	the Maastricht treaty's seven enabling clauses on social affairs	CR (Europe)
P1 L2	the Prime Minister	P1 L2	Britain	Homophoric
P1 L2	the value of his social opt-out	P1 L3	the Prime Minister	SA
P1 L3	his social opt-out	P1 L3	the Prime Minister	P2
P1 L3	his social opt-out	P1 L1	Britain's opt-out	DNF1d his
P1 L3	the Continent's high unemployment rate			CR (Europe)
P1 L3	the Continent's high unemployment rate			SAG
P1 L3	over-regulation			∅
P1 L3	the social chapter	HL	the social chapter's true cost	DNF1a the

P1 L3	John Major	P1 L3	the Prime Minister	L2a
P1 L3	dogmatic repetition			∅
P1 L4	He	P1 L3	John Major	P1
P1 L4	his economic achievements	P1 L3	John Major	P2
P1 L4	threat			∅
P1 L5	he	P1 L3	John Major	P1
P1 L5	different kinds of business burdens			SA
P1 L5	different kinds of business burdens which inhibit the creation of new jobs			∅
P1 L5	the creation of new jobs			SA
P1 L5	the creation of new jobs	P1 L3	blamed the Continent's high unemployment rate	CR
P1 L5	some continental economies	P1 L3	blamed the Continent's high unemployment rate	L1a
P1 L5	some continental economies			SAW
P1 L6	EU obligations			CR (Europe)
P1 L6	a relatively small contribution to employers' non-wage costs			SA
P1 L6	employers' non-wage costs	P1 L5	different kinds of business burdens	L2a
P1 L6	more damage	P1 L6	EU obligations	E1 (to the creation of new jobs than through EU obligations)
P1 L6	intricate, accumulated welfare and labour rules			CR (EU regulations)
P1 L6	national level			CR (Europe)
P1 L7	The Dutch Government	P1 L5	some continental economies	CR
P1 L7	the social chapter	HL	the social chapter's true cost	DNF1a the
P1 L7	its campaign	P1 L7	The Dutch Government	P2
P1 L7	its national labour market	P1 L7	The Dutch Government	P2
P1	the 1980s			ETE

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L7				
P1 L7	The Netherlands			CR (Holland)
P1 L7	job creation figures	P1 L5	the creation of new jobs	L1a
P1 L7	Britain's	P1 L1	Britain's opt-out	L1a
P2 L8	Britain's social opt-out	P1 L1	Britain's opt-out	L1a
P2 L8	1991			ETE
P2 L8	a bluff			∅
P2 L9	the Maastricht treaty	P1 L2	the Maastricht treaty's seven enabling clauses on social affairs	DNF1a the
P2 L9	its social protocol	HL	the social chapter's true cost	P2
P2 L9	the flow of EU social legislation		EU obligations	SA
P2 L9	the flow of EU social legislation	P1 L6		L1a
P2 L10	The regulatory climate in Brussels		Brussels	SA
P2 L10	The regulatory climate in Brussels	P1 L3		L1a
P2 L10	continental capitals	P1 L5	some continental economies	L1a
P2 L10	continental capitals			SAW
P2 L10	realism			∅
P2 L11	Three directives have been passed under the social chapter:			CR (EU regulations) Cataphoric expression
P2 L11	mandatory works councils for firms above a certain size	P2 L11	Three directives have been passed under the social chapter:	L3
P2 L11	three months paid parental leave	P2 L11	Three directives have been passed under the social chapter:	L3
P2 L11	a shift in the burden of proof towards claimants in discrimination cases	P2 L11	Three directives have been passed under the social chapter:	L3
P2 L12	Two other measures are under discussion	P2 L11	Three directives have been passed	Cataphoric expression
P2 L12	Two other measures are under discussion	P2 L11	Three directives have been passed	NMDNF2c
P2 L12	extending the works council rules	P2 L12	Two other measures are under discussion	L2a
P2 L12	a law giving minimum rights on dismissal	P2 L12	Two other measures are under discussion	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P3	It is no defence of these			SA

L13	laws		Previous text	NMDNF2a these
P3 L13	these laws	PT		
P3 L13	they	P3 L13	these laws	P1
P3 L13	some Conservative ministers	P1 L1	Tory dogma	L5
P3 L13	some Conservative ministers			SAW
P3 L14	Mr Major	P1 L3	John Major	L1a
P3 L14	his audience	P1 L3	John Major	P2
P3 L14	Brussels	P2 L10	Brussels	L1a
P3 L14	"one signature on the social chapter		the social chapter	SA
P3 L14	the social chapter	P2 L11		DNF1a the
P3 L14	half a million signatures on the dole	P3 L14	one signature on the social chapter	L1d
P3 L14	half a million signatures on the dole			SA
P3 L14	— an assertion	P3 L14	"one signature on the social chapter would mean half a million signatures on the dole"	MDFN2a indefinite article
P3 L14	he	P3 L14	Mr Major	P1
P3 L14	no evidence or calculation			∅
P3 L15	The case against the social chapter		the social chapter	SA
P3 L15	The case against the social chapter	P3 L14		DNF1a the
P3 L15	no evidence			∅
P3 L15	calculation			∅
P3 L15	specific directives	P2 L11 / L12	Three directives & Two other measures	L1a
P3 L16	Britain	P2 L8	Britain's social opt-out	L1a
P3 L16	its opt-out	P3 L16	Britain	P2
P3 L16	the chapter	P3 L14	the social chapter	DNF1a the
P3 L16	an irreversible opportunity	HL	Irreversible Opt-In	RPE
P3 L16	anti-competitive and expensive laws	P2 L11 /	Three directives & Two other measures	L2a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

		L12		
P3 L16	any time			ETE
P3 L17	an EU directive	P2 L11	Three directives	L1d
P3 L17	no social legislation	P2 L9	EU social legislation	L1d
P4 L18	Mr Major himself	P3 L14	Mr Major	L1a
P4 L18	a mistake once made cannot be rectified	P3 L17	It is not impossible to reverse an EU directive, but no social legislation has yet been repealed	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P4 L18	his retrospective attempt	P3 L14	Mr Major	P2
P4 L18	Britain	P3 L16	Britain	L1a
P4 L18	the directive limiting the working week to 48 hours	P2 L11	Three directives	L1d
P4 L18	little chance of success	P4 L18	a mistake once made cannot be rectified	∅
P4 L19	The fact			∅
P4 L19	relatively little law	P2 L11 / L12	Three directives & Two other measures	CR (legislation)
P4 L19	the Brussels machine	P2 L10	Brussels	DNF1a the
P4 L19	the Brussels machine			SAW
P4 L19	the moment			ETE
P4 L19	the quantity	P4 L19	relatively little law	E1 (of law)
P4 L19	the future			ETE
P5 L20	Businessmen	P4 L18	Britain	CR (business)
P5 L20	Britain	P4 L18	Britain	L1a
P5 L20	the social chapter	P3 L15	the social chapter	DNF1a the
P5 L20	their companies	P5 L20	Businessmen	P2
P5 L20	consolation			∅
P5 L20	various statements from the Opposition			SA
P5 L20	the Opposition	P1 L1	Labour's Shadow Foreign Secretary, Robin Cook	L3

P5 L20	business	HL	Business	L1a
P5 L20	damaging EU law	P2 L11 / L12	Three directives & Two other measures	L2a
P5 L21	directives under the broad headings of equal opportunities, "working conditions" and "information"	P2 L11 / L12	Three directives & Two other measures	L1d
P5 L21	directives under the broad headings of equal opportunities, "working conditions" and "information"			SA
P5 L21	directives under the broad headings of equal opportunities, "working conditions" and "information"			SA
P5 L21	the social chapter	P5 L21	the social chapter	DNF1a the
P5 L21	majority vote	P5 L20	EU law	E1 (of the EU)
P5 L22	The freedom			∅
P5 L22	the social law appropriate to a national bargaining culture, business environment and legal system	P5 L20	EU law	L1d
P5 L22	a national bargaining culture,			CR (business)
P5 L22	business environment			CR (business)
P5 L22	the social law appropriate to a national bargaining culture, business environment and legal system			CR (legislation)
P5 L22	a freedom perfectly compatible with an open EU market	P5 L22	The freedom to choose the social law appropriate to a national bargaining culture, business environment and legal system	DNF1a indefinite article
P5 L22	an open EU market			CR (Europe)
P5 L22	the flexible arrangement which Britain			SA
P5 L22	Britain	P5 L20	Britain	L1a
P5 L22	at present			ETE

Kids alone: who minds? Employers should become more family-friendly				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Guardian Women			∅
P1 L1	your sinks	P1 L1	Guardian Women	P2
P1 L2	Two full-time working mothers			CR (employment)
P1 L2	a university researcher	P1 L2	Two full-time working mothers	L3
P1 L3	a BBC Panorama producer	P1 L2	Two full-time working mothers	L3
P1 L3	forces			∅
P1 L3	another indictment to the charge sheet facing working women		Two full-time working mothers	SA
P1 L3	another indictment to the charge sheet facing working women			SA
P1 L3	another indictment to the charge sheet facing working women	P1 L2		CR (women)
P1 L2	their children's educational prospects	P1 L2	working women	P2
P1 L3	the BBC	P1 L2	a BBC Panorama producer	L3
P1 L3	children whose mothers work full-time	P1 L2	their children's educational prospects	L1d
P1 L3	children whose mothers work full-time	P1 L2	Two full-time working mothers	L1d
P1 L3	GCSE exams			∅
P1 L3	those whose mothers only work part-time	P1 L3	children whose mothers work full-time	DPR those
P1 L3	those whose mothers only work part-time	P1 L3	children whose mothers work full-time	L1d
P1 L4	The "parenting deficit"			CR (parents)
P1 L4	Etzioni			∅
P1 L5	A leak to the Sunday Times		the BBC	SA
P1 L5	A leak to the Sunday Times			CR (media)
P1 L5	a BBC press release	P1 L3	the BBC	DNF1a indefinite article
P1 L5	a BBC press release			SAW
P1 L5	yesterday's Daily Mail	P1 L5	Sunday Times	CR (media)
P1	any of the details			E1

L5				(of the report)
P1 L5	the study	PT	Previous text	NMDNF2a the
P1 L5	the long-held belief that working mothers		working mothers	SA
P1 L5	working mothers	P1 L2		L1a
P1 L5	a financial and intellectual role model for their children		working mothers	SA
P1 L5	their children	P1 L5		P2
P1 L6	Margaret O'Brian, who carried out the research	P1 L1	a university researcher	L2a
P2 L6	the research	P1 L5	the study	NMDNF2a the
P2 L6	an ideologue	P1 L6	Margaret O'Brian	ETN "is not"
P2 L6	liberal family policy-makers			∅
P2 L7	The results	P2 L6	the research	E1 (the research)
P2 L7	were a surprise			ETN "were"
P2 L7	her	P2 L7	Margaret O'Brian	P1
P2 L8	she	P2 L7	Margaret O'Brian	P1
P2 L8	her cause	P2 L7	Margaret O'Brian	P2
P2 L8	the interests of women	PT	Previous text	CR (women)
P2 L8	publication of her report		the research	SA
P2 L8	publication of her report	P2 L6		NMDNF2a her
P2 L8	the press	P1 L5	the Sunday Times yesterday's Daily Mail	L3
P2 L9	The limited facts released	P2 L8	her report	E1 (from the research)
P2 L9	a study of 600 families in the Barking and Dagenham area of London for a two-year period up to GCSE	P2 L8	her report	ETAN
P2 L9	a study of 600 families in the Barking and Dagenham area of London for a two-year period up to GCSE	P2 L8	her report	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P2 L9	a study of 600 families in the Barking and Dagenham area of			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

	London for a two-year period up to GCSE			
P2 L9	a two-year period up to GCSE		GCSE exams	L1a
P2 L9	a two-year period up to GCSE	P1 L3		
P2 L9	far more questions			∅
P2 L9	they	P2 L9	The limited facts released	P1
P2 L9	a contradiction			∅ Cataphoric expression
P2 L10	Children who had a mother at home full-time	P1 L3	children whose mothers work full-time	L1d
P2 L10	Children who had a mother at home full-time	P1 L3	children whose mothers work full-time	L1d
P2 L10	GCSE passes	P2 L9	GCSE	L1a
P2 L10	GCSE passes			SAW
P2 L10	children of both full-time and part-time working mothers	P1 L3	those whose mothers only work part-time & children whose mothers work full-time	L1a
P2 L10	children of both full-time and part-time working mothers	P2 L5	working mothers	L1a
P3 L11	total panic			∅
P3 L11	some cool facts for policy makers to remember			∅ Cataphoric expression
P3 L11	some cool facts for policy makers to remember			SA
P3 L11	some cool facts for policy makers			∅
P3 L12	The proportion of women with dependent children who work full-time	P1 L3	children whose mothers work full-time	NMDNF2a the
P3 L12	dependent children	P1 L3	children whose mothers work full-time	L2a
P3 L13	They	P3 L11	The proportion of women with dependent children who work full-time	P1
P3 L13	a homogeneous group	P3 L13	They	ETN "are not"
P3	They	P3	The proportion of	P1

L14		L11	women with dependent children who work full-time	
P3 L14	highly-paid professional women who can afford well-trained careers to poor, unskilled mums who cannot afford to pay for any childcare	P3 L14	They	ETN "range from"
P3 L14	highly-paid professional women who can afford well-trained careers			CR (women)
P3 L14	to poor, unskilled mums who cannot afford to pay for any childcare			CR (women)
P3 L15	Jonathan Gershuny who is the director of the ESRC Research Centre on Microsocial Change at Essex University			∅
P3 L15	the amount of time			SA
P3 L15	time			∅
P3 L15	full-time employed mothers	P3 L11	The proportion of women with dependent children who work full-time	L2a
P3 L15	childcare	P3 L14	any childcare	L1a
P3 L15	1995			ETE
P3 L15	full-time homemakers	P2 L10	a mother at home full-time	L2a
P3 L15	1961			ETE
P3 L16	the golden era of motherhood	P3 L15	full-time homemakers in 1961	NMDNF2a the
P3 L17	to faster food preparation	P3 L16	the golden era of motherhood	E1 (than in the golden era)
P3 L17	easier washing and cleaning	P3 L16	the golden era of motherhood	E1 (than in the golden era)
P3 L17	full-time working mothers	P3 L11	women with dependent children who work full-time	L2a
P3 L17	"quality time"	P3 L15	the amount of time full-time employed mothers devoted to childcare	L2a
P3 L18	they	P3 L11	The proportion of women with dependent	P1

			children who work full-time	
P3 L18	two and a half hours			CR (time)
P3 L18	housework	P3 L17	faster food preparation — and easier washing and cleaning	L3
P3 L18	two hours			CR (time)
P3 L18	childcare	P3 L14	any childcare	L1a
P3 L19	More men			CR (parents)
P3 L19	women			CR (women)
P3 L19	twice as much	P3 L18	housework	E1 (housework)
P3 L20	popular opinion			∅
P3 L20	more blue collar than white collar workers			CR (men)
P3 L20	New Men			CR (men)
P3 L21	Only four out of 10 professional men	P3 L20	white collar workers	L2a
P3 L22	A 15-year-old	PT	Previous text	L3
P3 L22	last night's programme	P1 L1	BBC	E1 (on the BBC)
P3 L23	a survey of pupils by Parents at Work in 1995			SA
P3 L23	a survey of pupils by Parents at Work in 1995			CR (children)
P3 L23	a survey of pupils by Parents at Work			SA
P3 L23	1995			ETE
P3 L23	it is difficult to generalise	PT	Previous text	E1 (about the situation of kids with working mothers)
P3 L24	Secondary school pupils in the 1995 survey	P3 L23	a survey of pupils by Parents at Work in 1995	L1a
P3 L24	the 1995 survey	P3 L23	a survey of pupils by Parents at Work in 1995	DNF1a the
P3 L24	satisfaction at their independence			SA
P3 L24	their independence	P3 L24	Secondary school pupils in the 1995	P2

			survey	
P3 L24	the sense of freedom and space which being alone at home provided	P3 L24	Secondary school pupils in the 1995 survey	E1 (for them)
P3 L25	less supervision of television			∅
P3 L25	the increasing number of children with tv sets in their bedrooms		Previous text	SA
P3 L25	the increasing number of children with tv sets in their bedrooms	PT		L1d
P3 L25	tv sets	P3 L25	television	CR (media)
P3 L25	their bedrooms	P3 L25	the increasing number of children with tv sets in their bedrooms	P2
P3 L25	they're	P3 L25	the increasing number of children with tv sets in their bedrooms	P1
P4 L26	One reason			∅
P4 L26	even more women	P2 L5	working mothers	L1d
P4 L26	the Government's new pension policy	P4 L26	One reason	ETN "is"
P4 L26	the Government's new pension policy			Homophobic
P4 L26	the Government's new pension policy			SAG
P4 L26	your own			∅
P4 L27	Another	P4 L26	One reason	Pro-form another
P4 L27	the increase in divorce			ETN "is"
P4 L28	a work watershed	PT	Previous text	CR (employment)
P4 L28	50 hours	P4 L28	a work watershed	ETN "is"
P4 L28	which point	P4 L28	50 hours	L2a
P4 L28	families	PT	Previous text	CR (parents)
P4 L29	far too few family-friendly employers	HL	Employers should become more family-friendly	L1a
P4 L30	excessive hours	P4 L28	50 hours	L2a
P4 L30	fear of losing a job or promotion.			SA
P4 L30	fear of losing a job or promotion.			CR (employment)

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P4 L31	A party of the family			SA
P4 L31	A party of the family	P4 L28	families	DNF1a the
P4 L31	it			Cataphoric expression
P4 L31	employers	P4 L29	far too few family- friendly employers	L1b
P4 L31	a legislative under- pinning against excessive working hours	P4 L31	it	SA
P4 L31	excessive working hours	P4 L30	excessive hours	L1a
P4 L32	it			∅ Cataphoric expression
P4 L32	they	P4 L31	A party of the family	P1
P4 L32	the EU directive	P4 L30	excessive hours	E1 (on working hours)
P4 L32	the social chapter	P4 L32	the EU directive	CR (Europe)
P4 L32	such protection	P4 L31	provide a legislative under-pinning against excessive working hours	NMDNF2a such

Labour aims at the top				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Tony Blair	HL	Labour	L2a
P1 L1	Gordon Brown	HL	Labour	L2a
P1 L1	a Labour cabinet	HL	Labour	DNF1a indefinite article
P1 L1	a Labour cabinet			SAW
P1 L1	the increased level of pay			∅
P1 L1	Parliament	P1 L1	a Labour cabinet	CR (politics)
P1 L1	that	P1 L1	If Tony Blair and Gordon Brown consider that ... the increased level of pay that Parliament	DPR that
P1 L1	a matter	P1 L1	that	ETN "is"
P1 L1	them	P1 L1	Tony Blair and Gordon Brown	P1
P1 L2	some of Labour's shadow team		a Labour cabinet	SA
P1 L2	some of Labour's shadow team	P1 L1		L1a
P1 L2	some of Labour's shadow team			SAG
P1 L2	they	P1 L1	Tony Blair & Gordon Brown	P1
P1 L2	a point			∅
P1 L3	The pay rise	P1 L1	the increased level of pay that Parliament	NMDNF2a the
P1 L3	the same time			ETE
P1 L3	the Commons	P1 L1	Parliament	L3
P1 L3	the ministerial increases	P1 L1	the increased level of pay that Parliament	L3
P1 L3	the public's gullet			Homophoric
P1 L3	the public's gullet			SAG
P1 L4	judges, top civil servants and senior military officers	HL	the top	L3
P1 L4	Labour	P1 L2	Labour's shadow team	L1a
P1 L5	No one			∅

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P1 L5	these groups	P1 L4	judges, top civil servants and senior military officers	NMDNF2a these
P1 L5	the private sector			Homophoric
P2 L6	The bald fact			∅
P2 L6	Labour's proposed freeze on "top people's" pay	P1 L4	the pay awards due to judges, ... should also, as Labour proposes, be withheld	L2a
P2 L6	no economic or financial justification			∅
P2 L7	In relation			AP
P2 L7	the overall public pay bill	P2 L6	"top people's" pay	L3
P2 L7	the saving	P1 L4	the pay awards due to judges, ... should also, as Labour proposes, be withheld	E1 (from the freeze)
P2 L8	Mr Brown	P1 L1	Gordon Brown	L1a
P2 L8	the generals, judges and mandarins	P1 L4	judges, top civil servants and senior military officers	L3
P2 L8	the job	P2 L7	the overall public pay bill	CR (employment)
P2 L9	he	P1 L1	Gordon Brown	P1
P2 L9	they	HL	the top	P1
P2 L9	their pay rise	P1 L4	the pay awards	P2
P2 L9	leadership			∅
P2 L10	That	P2 L9	to show leadership	DPR that
P2 L10	the job of politicians	P2 L8	the job	CR (employment)
P2 L10	the job of politicians	P1 L1	Tony Blair and Gordon Brown	L3
P2 L10	public servants	P2 L8	the generals, judges and mandarins	L3
P3 L11	this proposal	P1 L4	the pay awards due to judges, ... should also, as Labour proposes, be withheld	MDNF2a this
P3 L11	a purely political gesture	P3 L11	this proposal	ETN "is"
P3 L11	a purely political gesture	P3 L11	this proposal	CR (politics)
P3	Mr Brown	P1	Gordon Brown	L1a

L12		L1		
P3 L12	both the unions			Homophobic
P3 L12	Left-wing Labour backbenchers	P2 L6	Labour's proposed freeze	L1a
P3 L12	Left-wing Labour backbenchers			SAW
P3 L13	he	P1 L1	Gordon Brown	P1
P3 L13	an incoming Labour government	P3 L12	Left-wing Labour backbenchers	DNF1a indefinite article
P3 L13	an incoming Labour government			SAW
P3 L13	any decision to phase next year's pay awards			SA
P3 L13	next year's pay awards	P1 L3	The pay rise	L2a
P3 L13	more than a million public sector workers	P2 L10	public servants	L2a
P3 L13	both groups	P3 L12	the unions and Left-wing Labour backbenchers	NMDNF2a both
P3 L14	Mr Brown	P1 L1	Gordon Brown	L1a
P3 L14	his critics	P3 L14	Mr Brown	P2
P3 L14	a display of hostility	P2 L6	Labour's proposed freeze "top people's" pay	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P3 L14	those	P2 L8	the generals, judges and mandarins	DPR those
P3 L14	they	P3 L12	the unions and Left-wing Labour backbenchers	P1
P3 L14	"fat cats"	P3 L14	those	ETN "consider"
P3 L14	nobody			∅
P3 L14	his pay rise	P3 L14	nobody	P2
P3 L14	the Cabinet	P1 L1	a Labour cabinet	L1d
P3 L14	this morning			ETE
P4 L16	next year's pay awards	P3 L13	next year's pay awards	L2a
P4 L16	many hard-working public servants	P2 L8	the generals, judges and mandarins	L3
P4 L17	any government	P3 L14	the Cabinet	CR (politics)
P4 L17	a duty			∅
P4	the public finances			Homophobic

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L17				
P4 L18	The pay review bodies			Homophoric
P4 L18	these matters	P1 L3	The pay rise	MDNF2a these
P4 L18	much of the public sector			SA
P4 L18	much of the public sector	P3 L13	more than a million public sector workers	NMDNF1b the
P4 L19	they	P4 L18	The pay review bodies	P1
P4 L19	awards	P4 L16	next year's pay awards	L1d
P4 L19	the Exchequer			Homophoric
P4 L19	these	P4 L19	awards	DPR these
P5 L20	That	P4 L19	Previous sentence	DPR that
P5 L20	a few particular groups	P2 L8	the generals, judges and mandarins	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P5 L20	for purely political reasons	P3 L11	a purely political gesture	CR (politics)
P5 L21	Senior officials and military officers — and certainly judges	P2 L8	the generals, judges and mandarins	L2a
P5 L21	they	P1 L4	judges, top civil servants and senior military officers	P1
P5 L21	they	P1 L4	judges, top civil servants and senior military officers	P1
P5 L21	the system			Homophoric
P5 L21	them	P1 L4	judges, top civil servants and senior military officers	P1
P5 L21	the rules			Homophoric
P5 L22	them	P1 L4	judges, top civil servants and senior military officers	P1
P5 L22	Mr Brown	P1 L1	Gordon Brown	L1a
P6 L23	this latest move	P1 L4	the pay awards due to judges, ... should also, as Labour proposes, be withheld	NMDNF2a this
P6 L23	one of a kind	P6 L23	this latest move	ETN "appears to be"
P6 L23	several other Labour proposals	P2 L6	Labour's proposed freeze on "top people's" pay	MDNF2c

P6 L24	Its refusal to fund a new royal yacht	P6 L23	several other Labour proposals	P2
P6 L24	its determination to scrap the assisted places scheme	P6 L23	several other Labour proposals	P2
P6 L24	a windfall tax	P6 L23	several other Labour proposals	P2
P6 L24	all			Pro-form all
P6 L24	one thing in common			∅ Cataphoric expression
P6 L25	They	P6 L24	all have one thing in common	P1
P6 L25	the Left	P3 L12	Left-wing Labour backbenchers	NMDNF2a the
P6 L25	the old notions of class war			SA
P6 L25	the old notions of class war			CR (politics)
P6 L25	enforced equality	P6 L25	the Left	CR (politics)
P6 L26	its plans	P6 L26	Labour	P2
P6 L26	government	P3 L13	an incoming Labour government	L1d
P6 L26	Labour	P6 L23	several other Labour proposals	L1a
P6 L26	gestures	P3 L11	a purely political gesture	L1b
P6 L26	pretty mean gestures	P1 L4	the pay awards due to judges, ... should also, as Labour proposes, be withheld	L2a
P6 L26	its own core supporters	P6 L26	Labour	P2
P6 L26	it	P6 L26	Labour	P1
P6 L26	office	P6 L26	government	L5a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

Labour's Inspector				
Increasing unanimity on school standards is to be welcomed				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	no other area of policy	HL	school standards	NMDNF2c
P1 L1	the two main parties	HL	Labour's Inspector	L3
P1 L1	Tony Blair	HL	Labour's Inspector	L3
P1 L1	Labour leader	HL	Labour's Inspector	ETN "became"
P1 L1	the issue of school standards		school standards	SA
P1 L1	the issue of school standards	HL		DNF1a the
P1 L1	the old days			∅
P1 L2	Labour	HL	Labour's Inspector	L1a
P1 L2	the teachers			CR (education)
P1 L2	the Tories	P1 L1	the two main parties	L3
P1 L2	the inspection service	HL	Labour's Inspector	L3
P1 L3	near-unanimity	HL	Increasing unanimity	L2a
P1 L3	some areas	HL	school standards	L2d
P1 L3	cross-fertilisation			∅
P1 L4	Yesterday			ETE
P1 L4	the Conservatives	P1 L2	the Tories	L5
P1 L4	two ideas			∅
P1 L4	Labour's	HL	Labour's Inspector	L1a
P1 L4	Chris Woodhead, Chief Inspector of Schools	HL	Labour's Inspector	L2a
P1 L4	his annual report	P1 L4	Chris Woodhead, Chief Inspector of Schools	P2
P1 L4	he	P1 L4	Chris Woodhead, Chief Inspector of Schools	P1
P1 L4	the knowledge			∅
P1 L4	his job	P1 L4	Chris Woodhead, Chief Inspector of Schools	P2
P1 L4	Labour	HL	Labour's Inspector	L1a
P2	Gillian Shephard,			CR

L5	Education Secretary			(education)
P2 L5	her plans	P2 L5	Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary	P2
P2 L5	the first round of five- year-old tests			SA
P2 L5	the first round of five- year-old tests			CR (education)
P2 L5	"baseline assessment"	P2 L5	the first round of five- year-old tests	ETN "known as"
P2 L5	they	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	P1
P2 L5	a base	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P2 L5	the subsequent performance of primary schools			SA
P2 L5	the subsequent performance of primary schools			CR (education)
P2 L6	Labour	HL	Labour's Inspector	L1a
P2 L6	these	P2 L5	five-year-old tests,	DPR these
P2 L6	schools	P2 L5	primary schools	L3
P2 L6	each other	P2 L5	primary schools	pro-form each other
P2 L6	due allowance			∅
P2 L6	the quality of their intake			SA
P2 L6	the quality of their intake	P2 L6	schools	P2
P2 L7	theory			∅
P2 L7	parents			CR (education)
P2 L7	schools	P2 L6	schools	L1a
P2 L7	pupils			CR (education)
P2 L7	the biggest improvement			∅
P3 L8	a typical example of trimming from Mrs Shephard			SA
P3 L8	Mrs Shephard	P2 L5	Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary,	L1a
P3 L8	this admirable aim	P2 L7	parents will be able to see in which schools Ω pupils make the biggest improvement	NMDNF2a this
P3	the Education Secretary	P2	Gillian Shephard,	DNF1a the

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L9		L5	Education Secretary	
P3 L9	a standardised national test	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	L2d
P3 L9	schools	P2 L7	schools	L1d
P3 L9	different ones	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	S1
P3 L9	parents	P2 L7	parents	L1d
P3 L9	like with like	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	L2d
P3 L10	the proposed tests	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	DNF1a the
P3 L10	counting to ten, recognising letters, writing one's name	P3 L10	the proposed tests	ETAN
P3 L10	counting to ten,	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	L3
P3 L10	recognising letters	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	L3
P3 L10	writing one's name	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	L3
P3 L10	Mrs Shephard	P2 L5	Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary	L1a
P3 L10	a uniform design	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	E1 (for the tests)
P3 L11	She	P2 L5	Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary	P1
P3 L11	a national scheme	P2 L5	five-year-old tests	E1 (of such tests)
P4 L13	Mrs Shephard's	P2 L5	Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary	L1a
P4 L13	on the day that Mr Woodhead			SA
P4 L13	Mr Woodhead	P1 L4	Chris Woodhead, Chief Inspector of Schools	L1a
P4 L13	his annual report	P1 L4	Chris Woodhead, Chief Inspector of Schools	P2
P4 L14	The relationship between the two			SA
P4 L14	The relationship between the two	P1 L4 & P2 L5	Labour's Inspector & Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary	NMDNF2a the
P4 L14	its prickly moments	P4 L14	The relationship	P2
P4 L14	Labour	P2 L6	Labour	L1a
P4 L14	the election	PT	Previous text	CR (politics)
P4 L14	David Blunkett	P4 L14	Labour	L2a

P4 L14	Mr Woodhead	P4 L13	Mr Woodhead	L1a
P4 L14	each other more as allies than rivals	P4 L13 & P4 L14	Mr Woodhead & David Blunkett	Pro-form each other
P4 L14	allies than rivals	P4 L14	each other more as allies than rivals	ETN "as"
P5 L15	the Chief Inspector	P4 L13	Mr Woodhead	NMDNF2a the
P5 L15	his political enemies	P5 L15	the Chief Inspector	P2
P5 L15	Don Foster, the misguided Liberal Democrat education spokesman	P5 L15	his political enemies	ETN "is"
P5 L15	Don Foster, the misguided Liberal Democrat education spokesman			CR (politics)
P5 L15	Messrs Blunkett and Blair	P4 L14	David Blunkett	L1a
P5 L15	and Blair	P1 L1	Tony Blair	L1a
P5 L15	themselves	P4 L14 & P1 L1	David Blunkett Tony Blair	P5
P5 L15	The very confirmation that Mr Woodhead should stay in his post			SA
P5 L15	The very confirmation that Mr Woodhead should stay in his post	P4 L14	Mr Woodhead	L1a
P5 L16	his post	P1 L4	keep his job if Labour won	NMDNF2a his
P5 L16	complaints			∅
P5 L16	the Left			CR (politics)
P5 L16	he	P5 L16	Mr Woodhead	P1
P5 L16	the Tories	P1 L2	the Tories	DNF1a the
P5 L16	itself	P5 L16	The very confirmation that Mr Woodhead should stay in his post, despite complaints from the Left that he is too close to the Tories	P5
P5 L16	a welcome gesture	P5 L16	The very confirmation that Mr Woodhead	ETN "is"

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

			should stay in his post, despite complaints from the Left that he is too close to the Tories	
P5 L17	Mr Woodhead	P5 L16	Mr Woodhead	L1a
P5 L17	the lightning conductor	P5 L17	Mr Woodhead	ETN "is"
P5 L17	Labour	P4 L14	Labour	L1a
P5 L17	it	P4 L14	Labour	P1
P5 L17	any success in reversing the culture of low standards			SA
P5 L17	the culture of low standards	P3 L9	schools	E1 (in schools)
P5 L17	low expectations	P3 L9	schools	E1 (in schools)
P5 L17	the Chief Inspector	P5 L17	Mr Woodhead	DNF1a the
P5 L18	Mr Blunkett	P4 L14	David Blunkett	L1a
P5 L18	his denunciation	P4 L14	David Blunkett	P2
P5 L18	poor teachers and schools	P1 L2 P2 L5	the teachers primary schools	L1d
P5 L18	poor teachers and schools	P3 L9	schools	L1d
P5 L18	Mr Woodhead	P5 L17	the Chief Inspector	L2a
P5 L18	a position			∅
P5 L18	furnish the supporting evidence	P5 L18	his denunciation	E1 (in Mr Blunkett's denunciation)
P5 L18	much of the inevitable flak from the teaching profession			SA
P5 L18	much of the inevitable flak from the teaching profession			SA
P5 L18	the teaching profession			CR (education)
P7 L19	The danger for all Education Secretaries			SA
P7 L19	all Education Secretaries	P2 L5	Gillian Shephard, Education Secretary	L1b
P7 L19	themselves	P7 L19	all Education Secretaries	P5
P7	the school system			CR

L19				(education)
P7 L19	its faults	P7 L19	the school system	P2
P7 L20	they	P7 L19	all Education Secretaries	P1
P7 L20	legitimate criticism			∅
P7 L20	the Chief Inspector	P5 L17	the Chief Inspector	DNF1a the
P7 L21	Mr Blunkett	P4 L14	David Blunkett	L1a
P7 L21	his aims as Education Secretary	P4 L14	David Blunkett	P2
P7 L21	Education Secretary	P7 L19	all Education Secretaries	L1d
P7 L21	he	P4 L14	David Blunkett	P1
P7 L21	a distance			∅
P7 L21	the system	P7 L19	the school system	DNF1a the
P7 L21	he	P4 L14	David Blunkett	P1
P7 L22	This	P7 L21	Previous sentence	DPR this
P7 L22	Labour local education authorities			CR (education)
P8 L23	The best way			∅
P8 L23	this distance	P7 L21	maintain for as long as possible a distance from the system	DNF1a this
P8 L23	the independence of Ofsted			SA
P8 L23	Ofsted			CR (education)
P8 L23	Mr Woodhead	P7 L20	the Chief Inspector	L2a
P8 L23	Ofsted reports	P8 L23	Ofsted	L1a
P8 L23	Ofsted reports			SAG
P8 L23	ammunition			∅
P8 L23	the battle			CR (warfare)
P8 L23	bad teachers and schools	P6 L18	poor teachers and schools	L1a
P8 L24	Mr Blunkett	P4 L14	David Blunkett	L1a
P8 L24	Mr Woodhead	P8 L23	Mr Woodhead	L1a
P8	ill-advised attacks from			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L24	his own side			
P8 L24	ill-advised attacks from his own side	P8 L24	Mr Blunkett	P2
P8 L25	he	P4 L14	David Blunkett	P1
P8 L25	any sense			∅
P8 L25	he	P4 L14	David Blunkett	P1
P8 L25	he	P4 L14	David Blunkett	P1
P8 L25	office	P7 L21	Education Secretary	E1 (Education Secretary)

Lords on target				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	The Government's defeats			CR (politics) SAG
P1 L1	The Government's defeats			
P1 L1	the Lords	HL	Lords on target	DNF1a the
P1 L1	the firearms Bill			CR (politics)
P1 L1	just deserts			∅
P1 L1	for its weakness and opportunism	P1 L1	The Government's defeats	P2
P1 L1	Dunblane			∅
P1 L2	we			ER
P1 L2	the very beginning of this sorry episode			SA
P1 L2	the very beginning of this sorry episode	P1 L1	Dunblane	NMDNF2a this
P1 L2	the legislation	P1 L1	the firearms Bill	NMDNF2a the
P1 L2	coercive measure	P1 L2	the legislation	ETN "is"
P1 L2	a tide of understandable but unreasoning emotion			CR (sorry episode)
P1 L3	By contrast			∅
P1 L3	the Lords	P1 L1	the Lords	DNF1a the
P1 L3	their mettle	P1 L1	the Lords	P2
P1 L4	They	P1 L3	the Lords	P1
P1 L4	they	P1 L3	the Lords	P1
P1 L4	hasty and injudicious measures	P1 L2	the legislation	L3
P1 L4	fear of public opinion			SA
P1 L4	fear of public opinion			Homophoric
P1 L5	standing up for an unfashionable minority	P1 L4	They did what they are supposed to do: to revise hasty and injudicious measures without fear of public opinion	L2a
P1	gunowners and	P1	an unfashionable	ETN "namely"

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L5	manufacturers	L5	minority	
P1 L5	gunowners and manufacturers			CR (firearms)
P1 L5	they	P1 L3	the Lords	P1
P1 L5	the survival of our liberties			SA
P1 L5	the survival of our liberties			Homophobic
P1 L5	pre-democratic components of the constitution	P1 L3	the Lords	L2a
P1 L5	those parts	P1 L5	pre-democratic components of the constitution	E1 (of the constitution)
P1 L5	the universal franchise			CR (politics)
P2 L6	they	P1 L3	the Lords	P1
P2 L6	the Commons			CR (politics)
P2 L6	the Government	P1 L1	The Government's defeats	DNF1a the
P2 L6	Opposition front benches			CR (politics)
P2 L6	the Lords' amendments	P1 L3	the Lords	DNF1a the
P2 L6	the Lords' amendments			SAG
P2 L6	useful reminders of the extent of the forthcoming deprivation of freedom			SA
P2 L6	useful reminders of the extent of the forthcoming deprivation of freedom			SA
P2 L6	the forthcoming deprivation of freedom	P1 L4	hasty and injudicious measures	NMDNF2a the
P2 L7	one peer	P1 L3	the Lords	L3
P2 L7	the Bill	P1 L1	the firearms Bill	DNF1a the
P2 L7	the sporting use of pistols			SA
P2 L7	the sporting use of pistols			CR (firearms)
P2 L7	a negligible increase in public safety			SA
P2 L7	a negligible increase in public safety			L1a
P2 L7	a negligible increase in public safety			SAW

P2 L8	The amendments	P1 L1	the firearms Bill	E1 (to the bill)
P2 L8	some of the legislation's		the firearms Bill	SA
P2 L8	the legislation's more perverse side-effects	P1 L1		NMDNF2a the
P2 L8	the legislation's more perverse side-effects			SAG
P2 L8	70-75 per cent of pistol clubs			SA
P2 L8	70-75 per cent of pistol clubs			CR (firearms)
P2 L8	out of business			∅
P2 L8	they	P2 L8	pistol clubs	P1
P2 L8	the prohibitively expensive provisions	P1 L1	the firearms Bill	E1 (of the bill)
P2 L8	the remaining legal weapons			CR (firearms)
P2 L8	the manufacturers and dealers	P2 L8	the remaining legal weapons	E1 (of firearms)
P2 L8	the value of their current stock		the manufacturers and dealers	SA
P2 L8	the value of their current stock	P2 L8		P2
P3 L9	both cases	P2 L8	pistol clubs & the manufacturers and dealers	NMDNF2a both
P3 L9	the Government's responses	P1 L1	The Government's defeats	DNF1a the
P3 L9	the Government's responses			SAG
P3 L10	It	P1 L1	The Government's defeats	P1
P3 L10	the option of "disassembly" of weapons		the remaining legal weapons	SA
P3 L10	the option of "disassembly" of weapons	P2 L8		L1a
P3 L11	Its grounds for so doing	P3 L9	the Government's responses	P2
P3 L11	Its grounds for so doing	P3 L10	"disassembly" of weapons	S2
P3 L11	determined and motivated" individuals			∅
P3 L11	guns			CR (firearms)
P3 L12	peers	P2 L7	one peer	L1b
P3	such persons	P3	"determined and	NMDNF2a such

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L12		L11	motivated" individuals	
P3 L12	the tortuous procedure	P3 L11	reassemble guns at will	NMDNF2a the
P3 L12	the tortuous procedure of acquiring possibly incompatible parts	P3 L11	reassemble guns at will	E1 (to reassemble guns)
P3 L12	they	P3 L11	"determined and motivated" individuals	P1
P3 L12	complete weapons			CR (firearms)
P3 L13	the question			∅
P3 L13	compensation	P2 L8	the manufacturers and dealers who would be compensated	L2a
P3 L13	it	P1 L1	The Government's defeats	P1
P3 L13	no proper answer			CR (question)
P3 L13	the point			∅
P3 L13	the loss of livelihood in a licensed business	P2 L6	the forthcoming deprivation of freedom	DNF3a the
P3 L13	interference with the peaceful enjoyment of possessions and property	P2 L6	the forthcoming deprivation of freedom	DNF3a the
P3 L13	the loss of the right to use land or to own shares	P2 L6	the forthcoming deprivation of freedom	DNF3a the
P4 L14	The answer	P3 L13	the question	E1 (to the question)
P4 L14	the Government	P1 L1	The Government's defeats	DNF1a the
P4 L14	the injury of instant legislation			SA
P4 L14	instant legislation	P1L 4	hasty and injudicious measures	L2a
P4 L14	the insult of parsimony			∅
P4 L15	such a climate	P4 L14	the Government has compounded the injury of instant legislation with the insult of parsimony	NMDNF2a such a
P4 L15	those	P2 L8	pistol clubs & the manufacturers and dealers	DPR those
P4 L15	a fair hearing			∅
P4 L15	an Opposition frontbencher			CR (politics)
P4	the cross-bench	P1	the Lords	E1

L15	coalition of dissidents	L3		(in the Lords)
P4 L15	the special pleading of interested parties		pistol clubs & the manufacturers and dealers	SA
P4 L15	the special pleading of interested parties	P2 L8		NMDNF2a the
P4 L16	another peer	P3 L12	peers	DNF1c
P4 L16	the High Court of Parliament	P1 L3	the Lords	NMDNF2a the
P4 L16	the forum			ETAN
P4 L16	the vexed or the wronged	P2 L8	pistol clubs & the manufacturers and dealers	NMDNF3a the
P4 L16	relief			∅
P4 L16	the great men of the kingdom	P1 L1	The Government's defeats	L2b

Mental illness needs a broader treatment				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	"Mental illness"	HL	Mental illness	L1a
P1 L2	that	P1 L1	"Mental illness" doesn't exist.	DPR that
P1 L2	some fashionable Sixties nostrum	P1 L1	"Mental illness" doesn't exist.	L3
P1 L3	we			ER
P1 L3	the phrase	P1 L1	"Mental illness" doesn't exist.	MDNF2a the
P1 L3	a variety of quite different medical conditions			SA
P1 L3	a variety of quite different medical conditions	P1 L1	"Mental illness" doesn't exist.	L2d
P1 L3	no single set of therapies			SA
P1 L3	no single set of therapies			CR (mental illness)
P2 L4	Mental illness	P1 L1	"Mental illness"	L1a
P2 L4	the attention of no one set of professionals			SA
P2 L4	the attention of no one set of professionals			CR (mental illness)
P2 L5	seven years			ETE
P2 L5	the schizophrenic Christopher Clunis			CR (mental illness)
P2 L5	four teaching hospitals			CR (mental illness)
P2 L5	three local psychiatric services			CR (Institutions)
P2 L5	one probation hostel			CR (Institutions)
P2 L5	two prisons			CR (Institutions)
P2 L5	five social services departments			CR (Institutions)
P2 L5	one sheltered housing scheme			CR (Institutions)
P2 L5	five bed-and-breakfast placements			CR (Institutions)
P2 L6	manic depression			CR (mental illness)
P2 L6	schizophrenia			CR (mental illness)
P2 L6	it	P2 L6	manic depression	P1

P2 L7	30 per cent of those aged 80-plus			∅
P2 L7	dementia			CR (mental illness)
P2 L7	one in five young people			∅
P2 L7	some kind of severe mental problem or disorder			SA
P2 L7	some kind of severe mental problem or disorder			CR (mental illness)
P2 L8	most mentally ill people			CR (mental illness)
P2 L8	most of their lives	P2 L8	most mentally ill people	P2
P2 L8	in our midst			∅
P2 L8	in "the community"		in our midst	DNF1a the
P2 L8	sight			∅
P3 L9	that	PT	Previous text	DPR that
P3 L9	the point			∅
P3 L9	a definitive national scheme or system for the treatment of mental illness			SA
P3 L9	a definitive national scheme or system for the treatment of mental illness			CR (mental illness)
P3 L10	Much more			∅
P3 L10	the flow of funds into general health and social services budgets			SA
P3 L10	the flow of funds into general health and social services budgets			CR (mental illness)
P3 L10	the mentally ill	P2 L8	most mentally ill people	DNF1a the
P3 L11	The care of the mentally ill			SA
P3 L11	The care of the mentally ill	P3 L10	the mentally ill	DNF1a the
P3 L11	a pathology of government in the UK			CR (mental illness)
P3 L11	a pathology of government in the UK			SA
P3	"departmentalism"	P3	a pathology of	ETAN

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L11		L11	government in the UK	
P3 L11	the refusal of professionals and specialised policy-makers		a pathology of government in the UK	SA
P3 L11	the refusal of professionals and specialised policy-makers	P3 L11		CR (government) ETAN
P4 L12	turf			∅
P4 L12	Some of that professional rivalry		the refusal of professionals and specialised policy-makers	SA
P4 L12	Some of that professional rivalry	P3 L11		NMDNF2a that
P4 L12	genuine differences of view			∅
P4 L13	some case histories			CR (mental illness)
P4 L13	no single "right answer"			∅
P4 L14	that	P4 L13	there is no single "right answer".	DPR that
P4 L14	the space for experimentation			SA
P4 L14	the space for experimentation			CR (mental illness)
P4 L14	we			ER
P4 L15	That	P4 L14	the space for experimentation needs to be as broad as possible	DPR that
P4 L15	a degree of administrative untidiness			SA
P4 L15	a degree of administrative untidiness			CR (Institutions)
P4 L16	cases such as Clunis and Zito		the schizophrenic Christopher Clunis	SA
P4 L16	cases such as Clunis and Zito	P2 L5		L1a
P4 L16	the human cost of failure	P4 L16	cases such as Clunis and Zito	L5d
P4 L16	space for innovation	P4 L14	the space for experimentation	L1d
P4 L16	needy people	P4 L16	cases such as Clunis and Zito	L5a
P4 L16	it	P4 L16	space for innovation	P1

P4 L16	the medical and social services agencies			CR (Institutions)
P4 L16	a seamless whole			∅
P5 L17	community care			CR (Institutions)
P5 L17	community care	P5 L17	community care	L1a
P5 L18	The high hopes of a decade and a half ago for closing the hospitals			SA
P5 L18	The high hopes of a decade and a half ago for closing the hospitals			CR (Institutions)
P5 L18	the mentally ill down the street	P3 L11	the mentally ill	DNF1a the
P5 L18	the mentally ill down the street			SA
P5 L19	Realism			∅
P5 L20	We			ER
P5 L20	too few beds			CR (Institutions)
P5 L20	dedicated psychiatric units and hospitals			CR (Institutions)
P5 L21	we			ER
P5 L21	bed numbers	P5 L20	too few beds	L2a
P5 L21	throughput			∅
P5 L21	patients			CR (mental illness)
P5 L21	residential care			CR (Institutions)
P5 L21	beds	P5 L20	too few beds	L1d
P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's Green Paper			CR (politics) SAG
P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's Green Paper			
P6 L22	the Whitehall equivalent of wetting a finger and sticking it in the air to see which way the wind is blowing	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's Green Paper	ETN "is"
P6 L22	the Whitehall equivalent of wetting a finger and sticking it in the air to see which way the wind is blowing			CR (politics)
P6	The Health Secretary's	P6	Stephen Dorrell's	NMDNF2a the

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L23	good intentions	L22		
P6 L23	The Health Secretary's good intentions			SAG
P6 L23	doubt			∅
P6 L23	a decent and serious man	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's	DNF1a indefinite article
P6 L23	an ambitious one	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's	S1
P6 L23	he	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's	P1
P6 L23	credit			∅
P6 L23	the care of the mentally ill	P3 L11	The care of the mentally ill	DNF1a the
P6 L23	his attention	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's	P2
P6 L23	few votes			CR (politics)
P6 L23	it	P6 L23	the care of the mentally ill	P1
P7 L24	He	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's	P1
P7 L24	a more considered response	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's Green Paper	E1
P7 L24	his shadow	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's	P2
P7 L24	him	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's	P1
P7 L24	yesterday			ETE
P7 L25	Chris Smith	P7 L24	his shadow	L2a
P7 L25	the trap of reflex reactions to government announcements			SA
P7 L25	the trap of reflex reactions to government announcements			SA
P7 L25	the trap of reflex reactions to government announcements			CR (politics)
P7 L25	a carping and critical nature			∅
P7 L26	Gordon Brown's announcement banning additional spending by Labour			CR (politics)
P7 L26	Mr Smith	P7 L25	Chris Smith	L1a
P7 L26	a more convincing tune			∅
P7	the archaic melody			∅

L26				
P7 L26	The problem with the Green Paper yesterday			SA
P8 L27	The problem with the Green Paper yesterday	P6 L22	Stephen Dorrell's Green Paper	DNF1a the
P8 L27	page one			ETE
P8 L27	It	P8 L27	The problem with the Green Paper page one	E1
P8 L28	a single secretary of state	P8 L27		P1
P8 L28	the core of the problem			CR (politics)
P8 L28	the core of the problem	P6 L23	the care of the mentally ill	SA
P8 L28	responsibility	P6 L23	the care of the mentally ill	E1
P8 L28	the domains of government			SA
P8 L28	the domains of government			CR (Institutions)
P8 L29	It	P8 L27	the Green Paper	P1
P8 L29	the Environment, Employment and Social Security Secretaries	P8 L28	the domains of government	CR (Institutions)
P8 L29	the Health Secretary	P6 L23	The Health Secretary's good intentions	DNF1a the
P8 L30	it	P8 L27	the Green Paper	P1
P8 L30	lack of co-ordination at the centre			SA
P8 L30	lack of co-ordination at the centre	P8 L28	the domains of government	E1 (of government)
P8 L30	part of the reason why "community care"			SA
P8 L30	"community care"	P5 L17	community care	L1a
P8 L30	the expectations of struggling families, worried neighbours and angry health professionals			SA
P8 L30	the expectations of struggling families, worried neighbours and angry health professionals	P6 L23	the mentally ill	L5d CR (Institutions)
P8 L31	Government			CR (politics)
P8	money			CR



Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L31				(money)
P8 L31	local authorities			CR (politics)
P8 L31	a support grant	P8 L31	money	ETN "through"
P8 L31	the Environment Department			CR (politics)
P8 L31	too little contact with the Department of Health			SA
P8 L31	too little contact with the Department of Health			CR (politics)
P8 L32	Some new arrangement			∅
P8 L32	a dedicated ministerial task force			CR (politics)
P8 L32	a policy agency with a mission			CR (politics)
P8 L32	a policy agency with a mission			SA
P8 L32	departmental boundaries			CR (politics)
P9 L33	Those			DPR (exophoric)
P9 L33	themselves	P9 L33	Those	P5
P9 L33	the state			CR (politics)
P9 L33	mentally ill	P6 L23	the mentally ill	L1d
P9 L33	a single and enduring reference in the system			SA
P9 L33	a single and enduring reference in the system			CR (politics)
P9 L33	a case worker			CR (mental illness)
P9 L33	the case	P9 L33	a case worker	L1d
P9 L34	The mentally ill	P9 L33	mentally ill	DNF1a the
P9 L34	they	P9 L34	The mentally ill	P1
P9 L34	a Care Programme			CR (Institutions)
P9 L34	the NHS			CR (Institutions)
P9 L34	the mentally ill	P9 L34	The mentally ill	DNF1a the
P9 L34	Managed Care			CR (Institutions)
P9 L34	local authority social services			CR (Institutions)

P9 L34	things			∅
P9 L34	a path			∅
P9 L34	medical treatment			CR (mental illness)
P9 L34	a Benefits Agency office			CR (Institutions)
P9 L34	a housing association			CR (Institutions)
P10 L35	The Green Paper	P8 L27	the Green Paper	DNF1a the
P10 L35	its bets	P10 L35	The Green Paper	P2
P10 L35	options for remaking the local commissioning agency for mental illness			SA
P10 L35	options for remaking the local commissioning agency for mental illness			CR (Institutions)
P10 L35	One of them	P10 L35	options for remaking the local commissioning agency for mental illness	L2a
P10 L36	— the creation of new ad hoc authorities	P10 L35	One of them	ETAN
P10 L36	— the creation of new ad hoc authorities			CR (institutions)
P10 L36	a brainchild of Number 10	P10 L36	— the creation of new ad hoc authorities	ETN “is said to be”
P10 L36	a brainchild of Number 10			CR (politics)
P10 L37	its author	P10 L36	— the creation of new ad hoc authorities	P2
P10 L37	it	P10 L36	— the creation of new ad hoc authorities	P1
P10 L37	a still-born solution	P10 L36	— the creation of new ad hoc authorities	ETN “is”
P10 L38	Such an agency	P10 L36	— the creation of new ad hoc authorities	NMDNF2a such
P10 L38	a creature of central government	P10 L38	Such an agency	ETN “would be”
P10 L38	a creature of central government			CR (institutions)
P10 L38	provision for the mentally ill			SA
P10 L38	provision for the mentally ill	P9 L34	The mentally ill	DNF1a the
P10 L38	a local service			CR (Institutions)
P10	it	P10	provision for the	P1

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L38		L38	mentally ill	
P10 L38	variations in jobs, housing, demography			SA
P10 L38	variations in jobs, housing, demography			CR (Employment)
P10 L38	public attitudes towards mentally ill neighbours			SA
P10 L38	public attitudes towards mentally ill neighbours			CR (mentally ill)
P11 L39	This	PT	Previous text	DPR this
P11 L39	a ferociously complicated subject	P11 L39	This	ETN "is"
P11 L39	sharper government thinking			CR (politics)
P11 L39	clearer lines of communication			SA
P11 L39	clearer lines of communication	P2 L5	five social services departments	E1 (between the departments)
P11 L40	It	P11 L39	This is a ferociously complicated subject	P1
P11 L40	a popular subject	P11 L39	This is a ferociously complicated subject	ETN "is not"
P11 L40	you			IR
P11 L40	few, if any, speeches about it			SA
P11 L40	it	P11 L39	This is a ferociously complicated subject	P1
P11 L40	the election campaign			CR (politics)
P11 L41	it	P11 L39	This is a ferociously complicated subject	P1
P11 L41	tens of thousands of our fellow citizens and their families			SA
P11 L41	tens of thousands of our fellow citizens and their families	P10 L38	public attitudes towards mentally ill neighbours	L5a
P11 L41	their families	P11 L41	tens of thousands of our fellow citizens	P2
P11 L42	"Mental illness"	P10 L35	the local commissioning agency for mental illness	L1a
P11 L42	a single category	P11 L42	"Mental illness"	ETN "as"
P11 L42	the pain	P11 L42	"Mental illness"	E1 (of mental illness)
P11 L42	fear	P11 L42	"Mental illness"	E1 (of mental illness)
P11 L42	confusion	P11 L42	"Mental illness"	E1 (of mental illness)

Tables

P11 L42	these sufferers	P11 L41	tens of thousands of our fellow citizens and their families	NMDNF2a these
P11 L42	a rotten deal from the rest of us			SA
P11 L42	a rotten deal from the rest of us	P11 L41	tens of thousands of our fellow citizens and their families	NMDNF2c the rest

Milosevic and Friends				
The world must speak to Belgrade with one voice				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	water-cannon, tear-gas and baton charges			∅
P1 L1	hundreds of peaceable Serbian protesters			CR (Serbia)
P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	L1a
P1 L1	his feared paramilitary police	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P2
P1 L1	the last organ of authority	P1 L1	his feared paramilitary police	NMDNF2a the
P1 L1	he	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P1
P1 L1	he	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P1
P1 L1	a breakdown in public order			SA
P1 L1	a breakdown in public order			Homophoric
P1 L2	His purpose	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P2
P1 L2	himself	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P5
P1 L2	a pretext			∅
P1 L2	declaring a state of emergency			∅
P1 L2	him	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P1
P1 L2	any court order			∅
P1 L2	the opposition local election victories			CR (opposition)
P1 L2	Belgrade	HL	Belgrade	L1a
P1 L2	other Serbian centres	P1 L2	Belgrade	NMDNF2c other
P1 L2	he	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	P1
P2 L3	This abuse of police power	P1 L1	With water-cannon, tear-gas and baton charges	NMDNF2a this
P2 L3	student and opposition leaders	P1 L2	the opposition local election victories	L3
P2 L3	the start, 78 days ago, of their remarkable vigil for democracy			SA
P2 L3	the start, 78 days ago, of their remarkable vigil for democracy			SA

P2 L3	the start, 78 days ago, of their remarkable vigil for democracy	P1 L2	the opposition local election victories	P2
P2 L3	the first time	P1 L2	the opposition local election victories	E1 (since the start of their vigil)
P2 L3	events	P1 L1	With water-cannon, tear-gas and baton charges that have injured hundreds of peaceable Serbian protesters	L2a
P2 L3	their control	P1 L2	the opposition local election victories	P2
P2 L4	A few of the thousands of demonstrators			CR (opposition)
P2 L4	patience			∅
P2 L4	stones and bottles			∅
P2 L5	That	P2 L4	Previous sentence	DPR that
P2 L5	Mr Milosevic's game	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	L1a
P2 L5	Mr Milosevic's game			SAG
P2 L5	Overnight			ETE
P2 L5	the situation in Serbia			SA
P2 L6	the situation in Serbia	HL	Belgrade	L3
P3 L7	Prague	HL	The world	L3
P3 L7	London	HL	The world	L3
P3 L7	European governments			CR (Europe)
P3 L7	have reacted with indignation and anxiety	P2 L3	This abuse of police power	E1 (to This abuse of police power)
P3 L8	Malcolm Rifkind			CR (London)
P3 L8	violence	P2 L3	This abuse of police power	L2a
P3 L8	nothing			∅
P3 L8	the crisis in Serbia	P2 L6	the situation in Serbia has become dangerous	NMDNF2a the
P3 L9	the only basis			∅
P3 L9	political dialogue			CR (politics)

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P3 L9	Mr Milosevic	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic	L1a
P3 L9	to cede the electoral ground	P1 L2	reinstating the opposition local election victories	L2a
P3 L9	principle			∅
P3 L9	a word in his vocabulary	P3 L9	principle	ETN "is not"
P3 L9	his vocabulary	P3 L9	Mr Milosevic	P2
P3 L9	the pragmatic ground	P3 L9	the electoral ground	L1d
P3 L9	force	P1 L1	his feared paramilitary police	L2a
P3 L9	inconvenient voting results	P1 L2	the opposition local election victories	L2a
P3 L9	trouble			∅
P3 L10	At present			ETE
P3 L10	he	P3 L9	Mr Milosevic	P1
P3 L10	the long term			CR (at present)
P3 L10	he	P3 L9	Mr Milosevic	P1
P3 L10	the symptoms of disgust	P2 L3	vigil for democracy	NMDNF2a the
P3 L10	his rule	P3 L9	Mr Milosevic	P2
P3 L10	a few days or weeks			ETE
P4 L11	500 heavily armed paramilitaries	P1 L1	his feared paramilitary police	L2a
P4 L11	50,000 unarmed marchers	P1 L1	hundreds of peaceable Serbian protesters	L3
P4 L12	Mr Milosevic	P3 L9	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P4 L12	a weak hand			∅
P4 L13	The army			Homophobic
P4 L13	his own ministers	P4 L12	Mr Milosevic	P2
P4 L13	him	P4 L12	Mr Milosevic	P1
P4 L13	his daring	P4 L12	Mr Milosevic	P2
P4 L13	them	P4 L13	his own ministers	P1
P4 L13	he	P4 L12	Mr Milosevic	P1

P4 L13	the Orthodox Church	P3 L8	Serbia	Homophobic
P4 L13	the protesters	P1 L1	hundreds of peaceable Serbian protesters	DNF1a the
P4 L13	the police	P1 L1	his feared paramilitary police	DNF1a the
P4 L13	as guardians of order	P4 L13	the police	ETN "to behave as"
P4 L13	of a regime			E1 (Milosevic's)
P4 L13	ignorance			∅
P4 L14	the West	P3 L7	From Prague to London, European governments	NMDNF2a the
P4 L14	its support for democracy	P4 L14	the West	P2
P4 L14	its support for democracy			SA
P4 L14	France	P3 L7	From Prague to London, European governments	L3
P4 L14	recognition			∅
P4 L14	the Zajedno opposition coalition	P2 L3	student and opposition leaders	NMDNF2a the
P4 L14	its leaders	P2 L3	student and opposition leaders	P2
P4 L14	Paris	P4 L14	France	L3
P4 L14	deed			∅
P4 L14	word			∅
P4 L14	Mr Milosevic	P4 L12	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P4 L14	international isolation			CR (politics)
P4 L14	Serbia	P3 L8	Serbia	L1a
P6 L15	The greater the co-ordination of Western policies			CR (the West)
P6 L15	Serbia	P4 L14	Serbia	L1a
P6 L15	government-to-government level			CR (politics)
P6 L15	a serious effort			∅
P6 L16	Britain's case	P3 L7	From Prague to London, European governments	L3
P6	Britain's case			SAG

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L16				
P6 L16	the impact of official firmness			SA
P6 L16	the impact of official firmness	P6 L16	Britain's case	E1 (by Britain)
P6 L16	the business involvement with Mr Milosevic			SA
P6 L16	Mr Milosevic	P4 L12	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P6 L16	Douglas Hurd, the former Foreign Secretary	P6 L16	Britain's case	E1 (of Great Britain)
P6 L16	Dame Pauline Neville-Jones, who was the Foreign Office representative	P6 L16	Britain's case	E1 (of Great Britain)
P6 L16	Dayton talks			∅
P7 L17	his success	P6 L16	Douglas Hurd, the former Foreign Secretary	P2
P7 L17	NatWest Markets, his part-time employer			SA
P7 L17	his part-time employer	P6 L16	Douglas Hurd, the former Foreign Secretary	P2
P7 L17	a contract worth £10 million			CR (business)
P7 L17	a contract worth £10 million			SA
P7 L17	the privatisation of Serbia's telecommunications			SA
P7 L17	the privatisation of Serbia's telecommunications	P4 L14	Serbia	L1a
P7 L17	the privatisation of Serbia's telecommunications			SAG
P7 L17	Mr Hurd	P6 L16	Douglas Hurd, the former Foreign Secretary	L1a
P7 L17	he	P6 L16	Douglas Hurd, the former Foreign Secretary	P1
P7 L17	anything about the political side			SA
P7 L17	anything about the political side			CR (politics)
P7 L17	NatWest	P7 L17	NatWest Markets	L1a
P7	money			CR

L17				(business)
P7 L17	market liberalisation	P7 L17	the privatisation of Serbia's telecommunications	L2a
P7 L17	Serbia	P7 L17	the privatisation of Serbia's telecommunications	L1a
P7 L18	Neither statement	P7 L17	Previous sentence	MDNF2a neither
P7 L19	political influence			CR (politics)
P7 L19	Mr Hurd	P7 L19	Mr Hurd	L1a
P7 L19	he	P7 L19	Mr Hurd	P1
P7 L19	Belgrade	P1 L2	Belgrade	L1a
P7 L19	a link with government			SA
P7 L19	government	P6 L16	Britain's case	E1 (in Britain)
P7 L20	he	P6 L16	Douglas Hurd, the former Foreign Secretary	P1
P7 L20	Mr Milosevic	P6 L16	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P7 L20	a man	P7 L20	Mr Milosevic	ETN "is"
P7 L20	free markets	P7 L17	market liberalisation	L1d
P7 L20	the calculation			∅
P7 L20	Serbia's only profitable state enterprise	P7 L17	Serbia's telecommunications	L2a
P7 L20	he	P7 L20	Mr Milosevic	P1
P7 L20	the cashflow			CR (business)
P7 L20	his riot police	HL	Milosevic And Friends	P2

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

Milosevic at Bay				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision	HL	Milosevic at Bay	L1a
P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision			SAG
P1 L1	all opposition gains			∅
P1 L1	all opposition gains in the municipal elections			SA
P1 L1	a tremendous victory	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision to recognise all opposition gains	ETN "is"
P1 L1	those	P1 L1	all opposition gains	DPR those
P1 L1	riot police			∅
P1 L1	bitter cold			∅
P1 L1	his arbitrary rule	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision	P2
P1 L2	The Serbian president's capitulation	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision	NMDNF2a the
P1 L2	The Serbian president's capitulation			SAG
P1 L2	the Zajedno coalition			CR (opposition)
P1 L2	control of the capital, Belgrade			SA
P1 L2	the capital, Belgrade			CR (Serbia)
P1 L2	a watershed in his political fortunes			SA
P1 L2	his political fortunes	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision	P2
P1 L3	the opposition	P1 L1	all opposition gains	NMDNF2a the
P1 L3	the drive for reform			SA
P1 L3	the drive for reform			CR (politics)
P1 L3	it	P1 L3	the opposition	P1
P1 L3	the past 11 weeks			ETE
P1 L3	it	P1 L3	the opposition	P1
P1 L3	Mr Milosevic's power	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision	L1a
P1 L3	his term	P1 L3	Mr Milosevic's power	P2
P1	a close			∅

L3				
P1 L4	the end of the year			ETE
P1 L4	the bolt-hole			Cataphoric expression
P1 L4	the presidency of the Yugoslav rump	P1 L4	the bolt-hole	NMDNF2a the
P1 L4	Yugoslav rump (Serbia and Montenegro)			ETAN
P1 L4	Yugoslav rump (Serbia and Montenegro)	P1 L2	Belgrade	CR (Serbia)
P1 L5	the ruthless architect of Greater Serbia	P1 L3	Mr Milosevic's power	NMDNF2a the
P1 L5	his revanchist dreams	P1 L3	Mr Milosevic's power	P2
P2 L6	That moment	PS	By the end of the year	NMDNF2a that
P2 L7	The immediate challenge for the opposition leaders			SA
P2 L7	the opposition leaders	P1 L3	the opposition	DNF1a the
P2 L7	the opposition leaders			SAW
P2 L7	pressure on the government			SA
P2 L7	the government	P1 L3	Mr Milosevic's power	E1 (of Serbia)
P2 L7	their followers	P2 L7	the opposition leaders	P2
P2 L7	the electoral concession	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision to recognise all opposition gains	MDNF2a the
P2 L7	no gracious gesture of conciliation	P2 L7	the electoral concession	ETN "is"
P2 L7	no gracious gesture of conciliation			SA
P2 L7	no gracious gesture of conciliation			∅
P2 L7	the signal	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision to recognise all opposition gains	NMDNF2a the
P2 L7	their attack	P2 L7	the opposition leaders	P2
P2 L7	the whole rotten fabric of the Milosevic dictatorship			SA
P2 L7	the Milosevic dictatorship	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision	DNF1a the
P2 L7	the Milosevic dictatorship			SAW
P2 L8	The demands made by			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L8	students	P1 L3	the opposition	L3
P2 L8	for the resignation of the Interior Minister, Zoran Sokotovic			SA
P2 L8	for the resignation of the Interior Minister, Zoran Sokotovic	P2 L7	the government	L3
P2 L8	the punishment of riot police			SA
P2 L8	the punishment of riot police	P1 L1	riot police	L1a
P2 L8	demonstrators			CR (opposition)
P2 L8	Sunday and Monday			ETE
P2 L8	a good start	P2 L8	The demands	ETN "were"
P2 L8	the police	P1 L1	riot police	DNF1a the
P2 L8	the army			Homophobic
P2 L8	the president's ultimate line of defence	P1 L2	The Serbian president's	DNF1a the
P2 L8	the president's ultimate line of defence			SAW
P3 L9	Obvious targets for the Opposition			SA
P3 L9	Obvious targets for the opposition	P1 L3	the opposition	DNF1a the
P3 L9	the stranglehold which Mr Milosevic exercises over the media; the dire state of the economy; abuses of human rights; the free rein given to paramilitary groups; and widespread criminality			ETN "are"
P3 L9	the stranglehold which Mr Milosevic exercises over the media;			SA
P3 L9	the stranglehold which Mr Milosevic exercises over the media;	P2 L7	the Milosevic dictatorship	L1a
P3 L9	the stranglehold which Mr Milosevic exercises over the media;			SA
P3 L9	the dire state of the economy	P3 L9		SA
P3 L9	the dire state of the economy			Homophobic
P3	abuses of human rights	P3		SA

L9		L9		
P3 L9	abuses of human rights			∅
P3 L9	the free rein given to paramilitary groups	P3 L9		SA
P3 L9	the free rein given to paramilitary groups			∅
P3 L9	widespread criminality	P3 L9		∅
P3 L9	a kleptocracy	P2 L7	the Milosevic dictatorship	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P4 L10	The main Western states			CR (Europe)
P4 L10	Mr Milosevic	P1 L1	Slobodan Milosevic's decision	L1a
P4 L10	a source of stability	P4 L10	Mr Milosevic	ETN "as"
P4 L10	the region	P1L 4	the Yugoslav rump	NMDNF2a the
P4 L10	their new-found distaste	P4 L10	The main Western states	P2
P4 L10	his methods	P4 L10	Mr Milosevic	P2
P4 L10	a clear warning of the consequences of further misbehaviour		Previous text (abuses of human rights; the free rein given to paramilitary groups)	SA
P4 L10	the consequences of further misbehaviour			SA
P4 L10	the consequences of further misbehaviour	PT		C1
P4 L11	He	P4 L10	Mr Milosevic	P1
P4 L11	any attempt			∅
P4 L11	the opposition	P3 L9	the opposition	DNF1a the
P4 L11	the fires of Serbian nationalism			SA
P4 L11	the fires of Serbian nationalism			CR (Serbia)
P4 L11	the fires of Serbian nationalism over Kosovo			SA
P4 L11	the Bosnian town of Brcko			∅
P4 L11	the re-tightening of economic sanctions		Serbia and Montenegro	SA
P4 L11	the re-tightening of economic sanctions	P1 L4		E1 (on Serbia)
P4	the case of Bosnia			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L11				
P4 L11	the case of Bosnia	P4 L11	the Bosnian town of Brcko	CR (Bosnia)
P4 L11	the armed might of the Nato-led Stabilisation Force			SA
P4 L11	the armed might of the Nato-led Stabilisation Force			CR (The West)
P5 L12	The opposition	P4 L11	the opposition	DNF1a the
P5 L12	the outside powers	P4 L10	The main Western states	NMDNF2a the
P5 L12	a squeeze on Mr Milosevic			SA
P5 L12	a squeeze on Mr Milosevic	P4 L10	Mr Milosevic	L1a
P5 L13	His future	P4 L10	Mr Milosevic	P2
P5 L13	the prospect of continued high office			SA
P5 L13	the prospect of continued high office	P1 L2	The Serbian president's	E1 (as Serbian president)
P5 L13	investigation as a war criminal by the international tribunal in The Hague			SA
P5 L13	investigation as a war criminal by the international tribunal in The Hague			SA
P5 L13	investigation as a war criminal by the international tribunal in The Hague	P4 L10	The main Western states	CR (The West)

Nawaz Sharif's landslide The urgent need is to strengthen democracy				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Pakistan's democracy			CR (Pakistan)
P1 L1	the sweeping success of Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League		Nawaz Sharif's landslide	SA
P1 L1	the sweeping success of Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League	HL		L1a
P1 L1	the sweeping success of Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League			SAG
P1 L2	The unexpected size of his victory		Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League	SA
P1 L2	The unexpected size of his victory	P1 L1		P2
P1 L2	The unexpected size of his victory over Benazir Bhutto			SA
P1 L2	him	P1 L1	Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League	P1
P1 L2	the strength			∅
P1 L2	the president and generals	P1 L1	Pakistan's democracy	E1 (of Pakistan)
P1 L2	whose version of "guided democracy"		Pakistan's democracy	SA
P1 L2	whose version of "guided democracy"	P1 L1		L1d
P1 L2	the past eight years			ETE
P1 L2	he	P1 L1	Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League	P1
P1 L3	the huge number of non-voters			CR
P1 L3	most Pakistanis			CR
P1 L3	a more sceptical view	P1 L2	The unexpected size of his victory	E1 (of his victory)
P2 L4	Mr Sharif's supporters	P1 L1	Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League	L1a
P2 L4	Mr Sharif's supporters			SAG

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L4	yesterday			ETE
P2 L4	the result	HL	Nawaz Sharif's landslide	NMDNF2a the
P2 L4	the green light to democracy			CR (politics)
P2 L5	They	P2 L4	Mr Sharif's supporters	P1
P2 L5	he	P1 L1	Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League	P1
P2 L5	a modern alternative to the semi-feudal Pakistan People's Party of Ms Bhutto		Benazir Bhutto	SA
P2 L5	the semi-feudal Pakistan People's Party of Ms Bhutto			SA
P2 L5	the semi-feudal Pakistan People's Party of Ms Bhutto	P1 L2		L1a
P2 L5	the prospect			∅
P2 L5	full parliamentary rule	P2 L5	a modern alternative	L2a
P2 L6	this	P2 L5	and the prospect of evolving towards full parliamentary rule	DPR this
P2 L6	Mr Sharif	P2 L4	Mr Sharif's supporters	L1a
P2 L6	the chance			∅
P2 L6	it	P2 L5	and the prospect of evolving towards full parliamentary rule	P1
P2 L7	Last week			ETE
P2 L7	the Supreme Court			Homophobic
P2 L7	the power			∅
P2 L7	elected governments			CR (politics)
P2 L7	virtue of the notorious Eighth Amendment		Pakistan's democracy	SA
P2 L7	virtue of the notorious Eighth Amendment	P1 L1		Homophobic
P2 L7	the era of direct military rule		guided democracy	SA
P2 L7	the era of direct military rule	P1 L2		CR (politics)
P2	President Farooq	P1	Pakistan's democracy	Homophobic

L7	Leghari	L1		
P2 L7	Ms Bhutto	P1 L2	Benazir Bhutto	L1a
P2 L7	last November			ETE
P2 L7	Mr Sharif	P2 L6	Mr Sharif	L1a
P2 L7	1993			ETE
P2 L8	The Court	P2 L7	the Supreme Court	DNF1a the
P2 L8	this amendment	P2 L7	the notorious Eighth Amendment	DNF1a this
P2 L8	a two-thirds majority in Parliament			SA
P2 L8	Parliament			Homophoric
P2 L9	Mr Sharif	P2 L7	Mr Sharif	L1a
P2 L9	the strength	P1 L2	the strength	DNF1a the
P2 L9	the smaller parties	P2 L8	Parliament	E1 (in the Parliament)
P2 L9	him	P2 L9	Mr Sharif	P1
P2 L9	doing so	P2 L8	can only be removed by a two-thirds majority	S2
P2 L10	He	P2 L9	Mr Sharif	P1
P2 L10	abolition of the new Council for Defence and National Security			SA
P2 L10	abolition of the new Council for Defence and National Security	P1 L1	Pakistan's democracy	Homophoric
P2 L10	Mr Leghari	P2 L7	President Farooq Leghari	L1a
P2 L10	January			ETE
P2 L11	This supposedly "advisory" body	P2 L10	of the new Council for Defence and National Security	NMDNF2a this
P2 L11	the military			CR (armed forces)
P2 L11	its first formal say in government affairs	P1 L2	the president and generals	P2
P2 L11	its first formal say in government affairs			SA
P2 L12	Opponents of Mr Sharif			SA
P2 L12	Opponents of Mr Sharif	P2 L9	Mr Sharif	L1a
P2	he	P2	Mr Sharif	P1

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L12		L12		
P2 L12	a secret deal with Mr Leghari		Mr Leghari	SA
P2 L12	a secret deal with Mr Leghari	P2 L10		L1a
P2 L12	he	P2 L12	Mr Sharif	P1
P2 L12	power			∅
P2 L12	he	P2 L12	Mr Sharif	P1
P2 L12	the Council	P2 L10	of the new Council for Defence and National Security	DNF1a the
P2 L13	parliament	P2 L8	Parliament	L1a
P2 L13	the Council	P2 L10	of the new Council for Defence and National Security	DNF1a the
P2 L13	he	P2 L12	Mr Sharif	P1
P2 L13	the rumour	P2 L12	he struck a secret deal	MDNF2a the
P2 L13	taking action			∅
P2 L14	a politician who began his career as a protégé of the dictator General Zia ul-Haq	P2 L12	Mr Sharif	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P2 L14	it	P2 L13	taking action	P4
P2 L14	quite a test of his resolve		Mr Sharif	SA
P2 L14	his resolve	P2 L12		P2
P3 L15	Another way	P2 L13	he could scotch the rumour fast by taking action	NMDNF2c another
P3 L15	Mr Sharif	P2 L12	Mr Sharif	L1a
P3 L15	he	P3 L15	Mr Sharif	P1
P3 L15	a modern capitalist alternative	P2 L5	a modern alternative	ETN "is"
P3 L15	a modern capitalist alternative	P2 L5	a modern alternative	DNF1a indefinite article
P3 L15	the populist feudalism of the PPP		the semi-feudal Pakistan People's Party of Ms Bhutto	SA
P3 L15	the populist feudalism of the PPP	P2 L5		DNF1a the
P3 L15	the abortive attempt of Ms Bhutto's father			SA

P3 L15	Ms Bhutto's father	P1 L2	Benazir Bhutto	L1a
P3 L15	Ms Bhutto's father			SAG
P3 L15	a genuine land reform			∅
P3 L15	the power base of the sardars and zamindars			∅
P3 L16	Mr Sharif	P3 L15	Mr Sharif	L1a
P3 L16	the question	P3 L15	to carry out a genuine land reform and break the power base of the sardars and zamindars	MDNF2a the
P3 L16	more rural credit			CR (countryside)
P3 L16	cash			∅
P3 L16	blocs of vote			CR (politics)
P3 L16	loyal landlords			CR (countryside)
P3 L16	his own party	P3 L15	Mr Sharif	P2
P3 L17	less doubt about his intention of implementing the "tough" reforms		Mr Sharif	SA
P3 L17	less doubt about his intention of implementing the "tough" reforms	P3 L16		P2
P3 L17	less doubt about his intention of implementing the "tough" reforms			SA
P3 L17	pressure			∅
P3 L17	the International Monetary Fund			∅
P3 L17	Mr Leghari	P2 L12	Mr Leghari	L1a
P3 L17	nothing			∅
P3 L17	the daily lot of most Pakistanis		most Pakistanis	SA
P3 L17	the daily lot of most Pakistanis	P1 L3		L1a
P4 L18	Imran Khan			∅
P4 L18	his illusory Movement for Justice			P2
P4	an overdue break			∅

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L18				
P4 L18	Western media attention			∅
P4 L18	his cricket	P4 L18	Imran Khan	P2
P4 L18	his wife	P4 L18	Imran Khan	P2
P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P1 L2	Benazir Bhutto	L1a
P4 L19	Her tarnished record and dubious connections	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P2
P4 L19	Her tarnished record and dubious connections	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P2
P4 L19	her	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P1
P4 L19	the author	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	NMDNF2a the
P4 L19	her misfortunes	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P2
P4 L20	she	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P1
P4 L20	a woman	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	ETN "daring to be"
P4 L20	criticism			∅
P4 L20	malice			∅
P4 L21	the result	P2 L4	the result	DNF1a the
P4 L21	her reaction to defeat	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P2
P4 L21	her reaction to defeat			SA
P4 L21	yesterday			ETE
P4 L21	her enemies	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P2
P4 L22	She	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P1
P4 L22	Mr Sharif	P3 L16	Mr Sharif	L1a
P4 L22	good luck			∅
P4 L22	her cooperation	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	P2
P4 L22	creating stability in the country			SA
P4 L22	the country	P1 L1	Pakistan's democracy	L3
P4 L23	some extent			∅

P4 L23	this	P4 L22	Previous sentence	DPR this
P4 L23	an acknowledgement of the PPP's new weakness	P4 L23	this	ETN "is"
P4 L23	an acknowledgement of the PPP's new weakness		the semi-feudal Pakistan People's Party of Ms Bhutto	SA
P4 L23	the PPP's new weakness	P2 L5		DNF1a the
P4 L23	the PPP's new weakness			SAG
P4 L23	national status			CR (Pakistan)
P4 L23	a provincial party			CR (politics)
P4 L24	Ms Bhutto	P4 L19	Ms Bhutto	L1a
P4 L24	Mr Sharif	P4 L22	Mr Sharif	L1a
P4 L24	democracy	P1 L1	Pakistan's democracy	E1 (in Pakistan)
P4 L24	he	P4 L24	Mr Sharif	P1
P4 L24	her help	P4 L24	Ms Bhutto	P2

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

Pakistan fails to vote				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	the mid-1980s			∅
P1 L1	democracy			CR (politics)
P1 L1	striking advances across Asia		Pakistan	SA
P1 L1	Asia	HL		L3
P1 L1	the Philippines	P1 L1	Asia	L3
P1 L1	South Korea	P1 L1	Asia	L3
P1 L1	Pakistan	HL	Pakistan	L1a
P1 L2	This trend	P1 L1	democracy has made striking advances	NMDNF2a this
P1 L2	Latin America			∅
P1 L2	Africa			∅
P1 L2	political pluralism	P1 L1	democracy	L2a
P1 L2	dictatorship			CR (politics)
P1 L2	the military			CR (politics)
P1 L2	government			CR (politics)
P1 L2	barracks			CR (the military)
P1 L3	The transition	P1 L2	political pluralism for dictatorship	NMDNF2a the
P1 L3	illiberal habits acquired under the old systems		dictatorship	SA
P1 L3	illiberal habits acquired under the old systems	P1 L2		NMDNF2a the
P1 L4	the popular enthusiasm			∅
P1 L4	the fall of President Marcos			SA
P1 L4	the fall of President Marcos			CR (politics)
P1 L4	the end of General Zia's rule			SA
P1 L4	the end of General Zia's rule			CR (politics)
P1 L4	Asians			CR (Asia)
P1 L4	the way they were governed	P1 L1	democracy	NMDNF2a the

P1 L5	The end of the Cold War			∅
P1 L5	The end of the Cold War			∅
P1 L5	anti-Communist autocrats	P1 L4	the fall of President Marcos or the end of General Zia's rule	L2a
P1 L5	additional momentum			∅
P1 L5	the democratic cause			CR (politics)
P1 L6	Dictatorial regimes			Cataphoric expression
P1 L6	Dictatorial regimes			CR (politics)
P1 L6	those in China, North Korea and Burma	P1 L6	Dictatorial regimes	L3
P1 L6	those in China, North Korea and Burma	P1 L6	Dictatorial regimes	L3
P1 L6	those in China, North Korea and Burma	P1 L6	Dictatorial regimes	L3
P2 L7	in the light of this political evolution		Previous text	SA
P2 L7	in the light of this political evolution	PT		NMDNF2a this
P2 L7	the result of yesterday's election in Pakistan		Pakistan fails to vote	SA
P2 L7	the result of yesterday's election in Pakistan			SA
P2 L7	the result of yesterday's election in Pakistan	HL		L1a
P2 L8	it	P2 L7	the result of yesterday's election in Pakistan	P1
P2 L8	the return to power of Nawaz Sharif			SA
P2 L8	the return to power of Nawaz Sharif			SA
P2 L8	the return to power of Nawaz Sharif			CR (politics)
P2 L8	a man	P2 L8	Nawaz Sharif	ETAN
P2 L8	Benazir Bhutto			CR (politics)
P2 L8	a polity marked over the past decade			CR (politics)
P2 L8	a polity marked over the past decade			SA
P2 L8	fraud	P1 L3	illiberal habits acquired under the old systems	L3
P2 L8	corruption	P1 L3	illiberal habits acquired under the old systems	L3
P2	violence	P1	illiberal habits acquired	L3

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L8		L3	under the old systems	
P2 L9	the remarkably low turn-out	P2 L7	yesterday's election in Pakistan	E1 (in the elections)
P2 L9	the Pakistani electorate			CR (politics)
P2 L9	interest in democracy		democracy	SA
P2 L9	interest in democracy	P1 L1		L1a
P2 L9	the hopes			∅
P2 L9	General Zia's death in 1988	P1 L4	the end of General Zia's rule	L2a
P2 L9	bitter indifference	P1 L1	democracy	E1 (with regards to elections, democracy)
P2 L10	Successive governments			Homophoric
P2 L10	successive presidents			Homophoric
P2 L10	grounds of improper behaviour		illiberal habits acquired under the old systems	SA
P2 L10	grounds of improper behaviour	P1 L3		L2a
P2 L10	the same leaders	P2 L8	Nawaz Sharif & Benazir Bhutto	NMDNF2 the same
P2 L10	prime minister			Homophoric
P2 L10	the situation	P2 L7	Pakistan	E1 (in Pakistan)
P2 L11	such circumstances	P2 L10	Previous sentence	NMDNF2 such
P2 L11	Pakistanis	P2L 9	the Pakistani electorate	L3
P2 L12	The feeling of helplessness	P2 L11	such circumstances	E1 (brought on by such circumstances)
P2 L12	military rule			CR (the military)
P3 L13	The result is a political vacuum	P2 L12	The feeling of helplessness	E1 (of the feeling of helplessness)
P3 L13	The result is a political vacuum	P2 L12	The feeling of helplessness	Equivalence through naming "is"
P3 L14	The legitimacy of the new prime minister		prime minister	SA
P3 L14	The legitimacy of the new prime minister	P2 L10		DNF1a the
P3 L14	the low electoral turn- out	P2 L9	the remarkably low turn-out	DNF1a the
P3 L15	The Army	P2 L7	Pakistan	Homophoric
P3	the scenes			∅

L15				
P3 L15	the country	P2 L7	Pakistan	NMDNF2a the
P3 L16	The lack of clear authority	P3 L13	The result is a political vacuum	NMDNF2a the
P3 L16	conditions			∅
P3 L16	religious and ethnic extremism	P2 L7	Pakistan	E1 (in Pakistan)
P3 L17	Voters	P2 L7	Pakistan	E1 (in Pakistan)
P3 L17	their views	P3 L17	Voters	P2
P3 L17	parliament			Homophobic
P3 L17	illegal means of seeking satisfaction	P2 L16	religious and ethnic extremism	L2a
P3 L18	Such absence of leadership	P3 L13	The result is a political vacuum	NMDNF2a such
P3 L18	Pakistan's chances of attracting investment	P2 L7	Pakistan	L1a
P3 L18	Pakistan's chances of attracting investment			SAG
P3 L18	Pakistan's chances of attracting investment			SA
P3 L18	a floundering economy			CR (economy)
P4 L19	The answer to these problems			SA
P4 L19	The answer to these problems	PT	Previous text	NMDNF2a these
P4 L19	the politicians themselves	P2 L8	Nawaz Sharif & Benazir Bhutto	L2d
P4 L20	they	P4 L19	the politicians themselves	P1
P4 L20	their corrupt ways	P4 L19	the politicians themselves	P1
P4 L20	they	P4 L19	the politicians themselves	P2
P4 L20	the confidence of the electorate			SA
P4 L20	the confidence of the electorate	P2 L9	the Pakistani electorate	DNF1a the
P4 L21	the two main parties			CR (politics)
P4 L21	the National Assembly	P2 L7	Pakistan	Homophobic
P4 L21	they	P4 L21	the two main parties	P2
P4 L21	the constitutional vestiges of military rule			SA
P4 L21	the constitutional vestiges of military rule	P2 L12	military rule	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P4 L21	General Zia	P2 L9	General Zia's death in 1988	L1a
P4 L21	the position of the prime minister	P2 L10	prime minister	SA
P4 L21	the position of the prime minister			DNF1a the
P4 L22	that	P4 L21	remove the constitutional vestiges of military rule ...buttress the position of the prime minister	DPR that
P4 L22	Pakistan	P2 L7	Pakistan	L1a
P4 L22	a minefield of sectarian violence		religious and ethnic extremism	SA
P4 L22	a minefield of sectarian violence	P2 L16		L2a
P4 L22	confrontation with India		Asia	SA
P4 L22	confrontation with India	P1 L1		L3
P4 L22	economic indiscipline			CR (economy)
P5 L23	the 50th anniversary of partition	HL P4 L22	Pakistan India	E1 (of India and Pakistan)
P5 L23	the civilian rulers of Pakistan		Pakistan	SA
P5 L23	the civilian rulers of Pakistan	P4 L22		L1a
P5 L23	the creation of their country		the civilian rulers of Pakistan	SA
P5 L23	the creation of their country	P5 L23		P2
P5 L23	a mistake of historic proportions	P5 L23	the creation of their country	ETN "has not been"

Pakistan's Opportunity The economy must be put before political vengeance				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Mian Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League (PML)	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	CR (Politics)
P1 L1	Mian Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League (PML)			SAG
P1 L1	an unexpectedly decisive victory in the Pakistan elections			SA
P1 L1	an unexpectedly decisive victory in the Pakistan elections	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	DNF1a the
P1 L1	an unexpectedly decisive victory in the Pakistan elections			SAW
P1 L1	it	P1 L1	an unexpectedly decisive victory	P1
P1 L1	Mr Sharif	P1 L1	Mian Nawaz Sharif's Pakistan Muslim League (PML)	L1a
P1 L1	Pakistan's Islamist parties	P1 L1	an unexpectedly decisive victory in the Pakistan elections	L1a
P1 L1	Pakistan's Islamist parties			SAG
P1 L2	the final count	P1 L1	the Pakistan elections	E1 (in the elections)
P1 L2	his party	P1 L1	Mr Sharif	P2
P1 L2	the two-thirds majority	P1 L1	an unexpectedly decisive victory	NMDNF2a the
P1 L2	the constitution			Homophoric
P1 L2	he	P1 L1	Mr Sharif	P1
P1 L2	a position			∅
P1 L2	the authority of Parliament			Homophoric
P1 L2	in relation			AP
P1 L2	the President			Homophoric
P1 L2	the military			Homophoric
P1 L3	Both prospects			Cataphoric expression
P1 L3	Both prospects	P1 L2	the two-thirds majority required to alter the	NMDNF2a both

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

			constitution to reassert the authority of Parliament	
P1 L3	firm one-party government	P1 L3	Both prospects	L3
P1 L3	precarious coalitions	P1 L3	Both prospects	L3
P1 L3	a power shift in favour of elected politicians		Both prospects	SA
P1 L3	a power shift in favour of elected politicians			SA
P1 L3	a power shift in favour of elected politicians	P1 L3		L3
P1 L3	most educated Pakistani democrats			CR (politics)
P2 L4	Mr Sharif	P1 L1	Mr Sharif	L1a
P2 L4	power	P1 L3	a power shift	L1d
P2 L4	he	P2 L4	Mr Sharif	P1
P2 L4	Prime Minister	P2 L4	he	ETN "as"
P2 L4	Prime Minister	P2 L4	Mr Sharif	L2a
P2 L4	1990			ETE
P2 L4	1993			ETE
P2 L4	he	P2 L4	Mr Sharif	P1
P2 L4	his economically, socially and politically bankrupt country	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	NMDNF2a his
P2 L5	this is an eagle's eye view of Pakistani politics	P2 L4	Previous sentence	DPR this
P2 L5	an eagle's eye view of Pakistani politics	P2 L4	Previous sentence	ETN "is"
P2 L5	an eagle's eye view of Pakistani politics		the Pakistan elections	SA
P2 L5	an eagle's eye view of Pakistani politics	P1 L1		L1a
P2 L5	an eagle's eye view of Pakistani politics			SAW
P2 L5	the majority of voters	P1 L1	the Pakistan elections	E1 (in the elections)
P2 L5	the polling booths			CR (elections)
P2 L5	they	P2 L5	the majority of voters	P1
P2 L5	the same perspective	P2 L4	Previous sentence	E1 (as the elected

				politicians)
P2 L6	Constitutional reform			CR (politics)
P2 L6	their minds	P2 L5	the majority of voters	P2
P2 L6	deepening poverty,	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	E1 (in Pakistan)
P2 L6	violent streets	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	E1 (in Pakistan)
P2 L6	the corruption and misgovernment hanging over the governing class			SA
P2 L6	the corruption and misgovernment hanging over the governing class	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	E1 (in Pakistan)
P3 L7	They	P2 L5	the majority of voters	P1
P3 L7	a politician whose dismissal on grounds of corruption dates back four years	P2 L4	Mr Sharif	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P3 L7	whose dismissal on grounds of corruption			SA
P3 L7	dates back four years			ETE
P3 L7	another, Benazir Bhutto	P3 L7	a politician	Pro-form another
P3 L7	whose dismissal on the same grounds			SA
P3 L7	whose dismissal on the same grounds			NMDFN2a the same
P3 L7	last November			ETE
P3 L7	the memory	P2 L5	the majority of voters	E1 (of the majority of voters)
P3 L8	Imran Khan's appeal			CR (politician)
P3 L8	Imran Khan's appeal			SAG
P3 L8	a fresh face	P3 L8	Imran Khan's appeal	ETN "as
P3 L8	he	P3 L7	Imran Khan's appeal	P1
P3 L8	the money to bus voters			SA
P3 L8	the money to bus voters	P2 L5	the majority of voters	L1b
P3 L8	the polling booths	P2 L5	the polling booths	DNF1a the
P4	voters	P3	the money to bus voters	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L9		L8		
P3 L8	an Islamist government	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	E1 (in Pakistan)
P3 L8	the introduction of sharia	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	E1 (in Pakistan)
P4 L9	the electorate			CR (elections)
P4 L9	little faith			∅
P4 L9	these elections	P1 L1	the Pakistan elections	NMDNF2a these
P4 L9	Pakistan	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	L1a
P4 L9	Voter apathy	P2 L5	the majority of voters	L1d
P4 L9	Voter apathy			SAW
P4 L9	the main enemy of all the parties	P4 L9	Voter apathy	ETN "was"
P4 L9	the main enemy of all the parties			SA
P4 L9	the main enemy of all the parties			CR (politics)
P4 L9	these elections	P1 L1	the Pakistan elections	DNF1a these
P4 L9	apathy	P4 L10	Voter apathy	L1d
P4 L9	any of them	P4 L10	all the parties	P1
P4 L10	the abysmal turnout	P2 L5	the majority of voters showed, by staying away from the polling booths	NMDNF2a the
P4 L10	Mr Sharif's mandate	P2 L4	Mr Sharif	L1a
P4 L11	Miss Bhutto	P3 L7	another, Benazir Bhutto,	L1a
P4 L11	whose party			SA
P4 L11	all but a quarter of its parliamentary seats			SA
P4 L11	all but a quarter of its parliamentary seats	P3 L7	another, Benazir Bhutto,	P2
P4 L11	she	P3 L7	Benazir Bhutto	P1
P4 L11	the conduct of the elections			SA
P4 L11	the conduct of the elections	P1 L1	the Pakistan elections	DNF1a the
P4 L11	she	P4 L11	Miss Bhutto	P1
P4 L11	this	P4 L11	whose party lost all but a quarter of its	DPR this

			parliamentary seats	
P4 L11	a stinging defeat	P4 L11	whose party lost all but a quarter of its parliamentary seats	ETN "is"
P4 L12	International observers	P1 L1	the Pakistan elections	E1 (at the elections)
P4 L12	irregularities	P1 L1	the Pakistan elections	E1 (at the elections)
P4 L12	the result	P1 L1	the Pakistan elections	E1 (at the elections)
P4 L13	Miss Bhutto	P4 L11	Miss Bhutto	L1a
P4 L13	her campaign	P4 L11	Miss Bhutto	P2
P4 L13	Parliament	P1 L2	the authority of Parliament	L1a
P4 L13	the streets	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	E1 (of Pakistan)
P5 L14	Mr Sharif	P4 L10	Mr Sharif's mandate	L1a
P5 L14	any corruption charges brought against Miss Bhutto			SA
P5 L14	any corruption charges brought against Miss Bhutto	P4 L11	Miss Bhutto	L1a
P5 L14	her husband and associates	P3 L7	Benazir Bhutto	P2
P5 L14	exemplary respect for the rule of law			SA
P5 L14	exemplary respect for the rule of law	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	Homophoric
P5 L15	That	P5 L14	to ensure that any corruption charges brought against Miss Bhutto, her husband and associates are processed with exemplary respect for the rule of law	DPR that
P5 L15	part of the new start the the voters have been promised			SA
P5 L15	part of the new start			∅
P5 L15	the voters	P2 L5	the majority of voters	DNF1a the
P5 L15	the possibility			∅
P5 L15	writs			∅
P5 L15	Mr Sharif	P5 L14	Mr Sharif	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P5 L15	the new accountability laws			Homophobic
P5 L15	President Leghari			Homophobic
P5 L15	his part	P5 L15	Mr Sharif	P2
P5 L16	the last thing			∅
P5 L16	Pakistan	HL	Pakistan's Opportunity	L1a
P5 L16	time wasted in political score-settling			SA
P5 L16	time wasted in political score-settling	HL	political vengeance	L2a
P6 L17	The country	P5 L16	Pakistan	NMDNF2a the
P6 L17	its international debt	P5 L16	Pakistan	P2
P6 L18	Half its factories	P5 L16	Pakistan	P2
P6 L18	The urban unemployed, particularly the young	P5 L16	Pakistan	E1 (in Pakistan)
P6 L18	easy recruits for the violent feuding between Sunni and Shia	P6 L18	The urban unemployed, particularly the young	ETN "are"
P6 L18	easy recruits for the violent feuding between Sunni and Shia			SA
P6 L18	easy recruits for the violent feuding between Sunni and Shia			SA
P6 L18	easy recruits for the violent feuding between Sunni and Shia			∅
P6 L19	the technocrats who have been running the country since November			SA
P6 L19	the technocrats who have been running the country since November	P5 L16	Pakistan	NMDNF2a the
P6 L19	since November			ETE
P6 L19	many of the tough economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked			Cataphoric expression
P6 L19	many of the tough economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked			SA
P6	many of the tough			SA

L19	economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked			
P6 L19	of the tough economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked	P5 L14	Miss Bhutto	L1a
P6 L19	of the tough economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked			SAG
P6 L19	shrinking state spending and payrolls and introducing reforms to banking and the hopelessly skewed tax system			ETAN
P6 L19	shrinking state spending and payrolls	P6 L19	many of the tough economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked	CR (economy)
P6 L19	introducing reforms to banking	P6 L19	many of the tough economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked	CR (economy)
P6 L19	the hopelessly skewed tax system	P6 L19	many of the tough economic decisions that Miss Bhutto's Government shirked	Homophobic
P6 L20	Mr Sharif	P5 L15	Mr Sharif	L1a
P6 L20	a reputation			∅
P6 L20	erratic populism			∅
P6 L20	he	P6 L20	Mr Sharif	P1
P6 L20	a successful businessman	P6 L20	he	ETN "is"
P6 L20	a successful businessman	P6 L20	Mr Sharif	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P6 L21	He	P6 L20	Mr Sharif	P1
P6 L21	his business instincts	P6 L20	Mr Sharif	P2
P6 L21	the implementation of these reforms			SA
P6 L21	the implementation of these reforms	P6 L19	reforms to banking and the hopelessly skewed tax system	NMDNF2a these
P6 L21	his absolute priority	P6 L20	Mr Sharif	P2
P6 L22	Constitutional reform	P2 L6	Constitutional reform	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

Poison we must live with				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	The German playwright Bertolt Brecht			∅
P1 L1	Hitlerism			∅
P1 L1	the bitch that bore her		Hitlerism	SA
P1 L1	the bitch that bore her	P1 L1		P2
P1 L1	in heat			∅
P1 L1	no group			∅
P1 L1	this	P1 L1	Previous sentence	DPR this
P1 L2	those "revisionist historians" who deny, that the Holocaust of six million Jews ever happened	P1 L1	Previous sentence	NMDNF2a those
P1 L3	In consequence			AP
P1 L3	Austria			CR (Europe)
P1 L3	France			CR (Europe)
P1 L3	Germany			CR (Europe)
P1 L3	several other countries	P1 L3	Austria, France, Germany	NMDNF2c several
P1 L3	an offence			∅
P1 L3	the crime of the century	P1 L2	the Holocaust of six million Jews	NMDNF2a the
P1 L4	Britain's relatively feeble far Right			CR (Europe) SAG
P1 L4	Britain's relatively feeble far Right			
P1 L4	the same poisonous claim	P1 L2	deny, that the Holocaust of six million Jews ever happened	MDNF2a the same
P1 L5	the Private Members' Bill			CR (legislation)
P1 L5	its way	P1 L5	the Private Members' Bill	P2
P1 L5	the House of Commons			CR (parliament)
P1 L5	a similar law			CR (legislation)
P1	this country	P1	Britain's relatively	NMDNF2a this

L5		L4	feeble far Right	
P1 L6	Such legislation	P1 L3	an offence to assert that the crime of the century did not occur	NMDNF2a such
P1 L6	the endorsement ... of the Labour leadership			SA
P1 L6	the endorsement ... of the Labour leadership			CR (politics)
P2 L7	the anguish which "revisionist" propaganda		those "revisionist historians" who deny, that the Holocaust of six million Jews ever happened	SA
P2 L7	"revisionist" propaganda	P1 L2		L1a
P2 L7	"revisionist" propaganda			SAW
P2 L7	Holocaust survivors	P1 L2	the Holocaust	L1a
P2 L7	Holocaust survivors			SAW
P2 L7	their descendants	P2 L7	Holocaust survivors	P2
P2 L8	Those responsible	P1 L2	those "revisionist historians" who deny, that the Holocaust of six million Jews ever happened	NMDNF2a those
P2 L8	seekers after truth	P2 L8	Those responsible	ETN "are rarely"
P2 L9	their purpose	P2 L8	Those responsible	P2
P2 L9	ideological: the rehabilitation of the Nazi regime	P2 L9	their purpose	ETN "is"
P2 L9	ideological: the rehabilitation of the Nazi regime	P2 L9	their purpose	SA
P2 L9	ideological: the rehabilitation of the Nazi regime			CR (politics)
P2 L10	no evidence			∅
P2 L10	another law			CR (legislation)
P2 L10	the best, or indeed appropriate, way	P2 L10	another law	ETN "is"
P2 L10	such behaviour	P1 L2	those "revisionist historians" who deny, that the Holocaust of six million Jews ever happened	NMDNF2a such

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L11	the political aspect	P1 L5	the Private Members' Bill	E1 (of the Bill)
P2 L12	British neo-Nazis	P1 L4	Britain's relatively feeble far Right	L2a
P2 L12	a divided, pathetic crew	P2 L12	British neo-Nazis	ETN "are"
P2 L12	their continental confederates	P2 L10	British neo-Nazis	P2
P2 L13	Many	P2 L10	British neo-Nazis	Pro-form many
P2 L13	opportunities			∅
P2 L13	martyrdom			∅
P2 L13	free publicity			∅
P2 L13	high-profile trials			CR (Legislation)
P2 L13	prison sentences			CR (Legislation)
P3 L14	the legal side	P1 L5	the Private Members' Bill	E1 (of the Bill)
P3 L14	still more important questions	PP	Previous paragrph	C1
P3 L15	what kinds of "revisionist" activity		those "revisionist historians" who deny, that the Holocaust of six million Jews ever happened	SA
P3 L15	what kinds of "revisionist" activity	P1 L2		L1a
P3 L15	what kinds of "revisionist" activity			SAW
P3 L15	this new offence	P1 L5	a similar law	NMDNF2a this
P3 L16	Many neo-Nazis			CR (Nazis)
P3 L16	the Holocaust	P1 L2	the Holocaust of six million Jews	DNF1a the
P3 L16	"Holocaust reductionists":	P1 L2	those "revisionist historians" who deny, that the Holocaust of six million Jews ever happened	L1a
P3 L16	"Holocaust reductionists":			SAW
P3 L16	they	P3 L16	"Holocaust reductionists":	P1
P3 L16	far fewer people	P1 L2	the Holocaust of six million Jews	E1 (in the Holocaust)
P3 L16	the case	P1 L2	the Holocaust of six million Jews	E1 (in the Holocaust)
P3	they	P3	"Holocaust	P1

L17		L16	reductionists":	
P3 L17	the new law	P3 L15	this new offence	NMDNF2a the
P3 L17	the proposed Bill	P1 L5	the Private Members' Bill	NMDNF2a the
P3 L18	its own terms	P1 L5	the Private Members' Bill	P2
P3 L18	the cleverer neo-Nazis	P3 L16	Many neo-Nazis	L3
P3 L18	things			∅
P3 L18	the very limits			∅
P3 L19	"Holocaust reductionists"	P3 L16	"Holocaust reductionists":	L1a
P3 L19	such legislation	P3 L17	the proposed Bill	NMDNF2a such
P3 L19	neo-Nazi pamphleteers	P3 L18	the cleverer neo-Nazis	L1a
P3 L19	neo-Nazi pamphleteers			SAW
P3 L19	bona fide historians			∅
P3 L19	factual grounds			∅
P3 L19	fewer than six million people	P1 L2	the Holocaust of six million Jews	E1 (in the Holocaust)
P4 L20	it	P3 L17	the proposed Bill	P1
P4 L20	other persecuted groups	P2 L7	Holocaust survivors and their descendants	NMDFN2c other
P4 L20	similar legal protection	P3 L17	the proposed Bill	NMDFN2c similar
P4 L21	Eastern European refugees	P4 L20	other persecuted groups	L2a
P4 L21	communist sympathisers in the West	P3 L16	"Holocaust reductionists":	∅
P4 L21	Stalin's crimes			CR (communist)
P4 L21	prison			CR (legislation)
P4 L22	a real danger			∅
P4 L22	such well intentioned legislation	P3 L17	the proposed Bill	NMDNF2a such
P4 L22	profound illiberalism			∅
P4 L23	they	P1 L5	the Private Members' Bill	P1
P4 L23	the second reading	P1 L5	the Private Members' Bill	E1 "of the bill"
P4	MPs			CR

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L23				(Parliament)
P4 L23	mind			∅
P4 L23	to criminalise opinion	P1 L3	made it an offence to assert that the crime of the century did not occur	L2a
P4 L23	path	P4 L23	to criminalise opinion	ETN "is"
P4 L23	tremendous perils			∅

Receiving you muffled and unclear, Mr				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	Sir Humphrey Apply			∅
P1 L1	Mr Justice Cocklecarrot			∅
P1 L1	Air Chief Marshal Sir Peter Harding			∅
P1 L1	the purposes of pay			SA
P1 L1	the purposes of pay			∅
P1 L1	Top People	P1 L1	Sir Humphrey Apply, Mr Justice Cocklecarrot and Air Chief Marshal Sir Peter Harding	L2a
P1 L2	Their jobs	P1 L1	Top People	P2
P1 L2	they	P1 L1	Top People	P1
P1 L2	the public imagination			∅
P1 L3	all the lurid tales			∅
P1 L3	the death of deference			SA
P1 L3	the death of deference			∅
P1 L3	the end of authority			CR (end)
P1 L3	the end of authority	P1 L3	the death of deference	∅
P1 L3	high public officials	P1 L1	Top People	L2a
P1 L4	the public			Homophoric
P1 L4	them	P1 L3	high public officials	P1
P1 L4	a 5 per cent pay rise			CR (pay)
P1 L4	£4,500 a year for someone on £90,000	P1 L4	a 5 per cent pay rise	ETN "worth"
P1 L4	£4,500 a year for someone on £90,000			CR (money)
P1 L4	£4,500 a year for someone on £90,000			∅
P1 L4	£4,500 a year for someone on £90,000			CR (money)
P1 L4	the height of injustice	P1 L4	depriving them of a 5 per cent pay rise	ETN "is"
P1 L5	Gordon Brown			∅

P1 L5	all his lugubrious air	P1 L5	Gordon Brown	P2
P1 L5	his feet	P1 L5	Gordon Brown	P2
P1 L5	Top People's pay	P1 L1	Top People	L1a
P1 L5	Top People's pay	P1 L1	the purposes of pay	L1a
P1 L6	It	P1 L5	making an example of Top People's pay	P1
P1 L6	they			IR
P1 L6	a signal			∅
P1 L7	More than one	P1 L6	a signal	E1 (signal)
P1 L8	It	P1 L5	making an example of Top People's pay	P1
P1 L8	lower-paid public servants	P1 L3	high public officials	CR (public servants)
P1 L8	nurses included	P1 L8	lower-paid public servants	ETAN
P1 L8	nurses included			CR (public servants)
P1 L8	1997 pay rise			CR
P1 L9	It	P1 L5	making an example of Top People's pay	P1
P1 L9	one			IR
P1 L9	such an anachronistic word			Cataphoric expression
P1 L9	these days			ETE
P1 L9	a cheery ... fraternal gesture	P1 L5	such an an anachronistic word	Metalinguistic
P1 L9	a cheery ... fraternal gesture	P1 L5	making an example of Top People's pay	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P1 L9	a leftwards direction			CR (politics)
P1 L9	party colleagues	P1 L5	Gordon Brown	E1 (of his)
P1 L9	his commitment	P1 L5	Gordon Brown	P2
P1 L9	income tax rates			CR (pay)
P1 L9	the higher-paid	P1 L1	Top People	NMDNF2a the
P2 L10	Good electoral politics			CR (politics)
P2 L10	the Conservatives			CR (politics)

P2 L10	John Major's reply	P2 L10	the Conservatives	L2a
P2 L10	John Major's reply			SAG
P2 L10	yesterday			ETE
P2 L10	Labour			CR (politics)
P2 L10	positions			∅
P2 L10	their public relations value	P2 L10	positions	P2
P2 L11	the first time			∅
P2 L11	Labour's accomplished playing of the electoral game	P2 L10	Labour	L1a
P2 L11	Labour's accomplished playing of the electoral game	P2 L10	Labour	SAG
P2 L11	Labour's accomplished playing of the electoral game			SA
P2 L11	questions about the party's capacity			SA
P2 L11	questions about the party's capacity	P1 L9	towards party colleagues	DNF1a the
P2 L11	questions about the party's capacity	P2 L11	Labour's accomplished playing	SAG
P2 L11	sides			∅
P2 L11	it	P2 L11	Labour's accomplished playing	P1
P2 L11	itself	P2 L11	Labour's accomplished playing	P5
P2 L11	power			∅
P2 L12	This	PT	Previous text	DPR this
P2 L12	to coin a phrase			∅
P2 L12	a game of two halves	P2 L12	This	ETN "is"
P2 L12	a game of two halves			∅
P2 L12	a game of two halves			SA
P2 L13	the second period	P2 L12	a game of two halves	L3
P2 L13	the party's leaders	P2 L11	the party's capacity	DNF1a the
P2	the party's leaders			SAG

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L13				
P2 L13	the effective running of those public services		lower-paid public servants	SA
P2 L13	the effective running of those public services	P1 L8		DNF2d those
P2 L13	the effective running of those public services			SAW
P2 L13	those courts			CR (justice system)
P2 L13	that army			CR (armed services)
P2 L13	that navy			CR (armed services)
P2 L14	they	P2 L13	the party's leaders	P1
P2 L14	you			IR
P2 L14	the pay of undersecretaries	P1 L5	Top People's pay	NMDNF2a the
P2 L14	the balance between what judges get		high public officials	SA
P2 L14	the balance between what judges get	P1 L3		L3
P2 L14	what judges get on the bench			SA
P2 L14	lawyers			CR (justice system)
P2 L14	the Bar			CR (justice system)
P2 L15	Nothing			∅
P2 L15	at first			AP
P2 L15	the quality and efficiency of those services		those public services	SA
P2 L15	the quality and efficiency of those services	P2 L13		DNF1a those
P2 L15	no Tory government	P2 L10	the Conservatives	L5
P2 L15	no Tory government			SAW
P3 L16	Gordon Brown	P1 L5	Gordon Brown	L1a
P3 L16	his pronouncements on pay	P3 L16	Gordon Brown	P2
P3 L16	his pronouncements on pay			SA
P3 L16	some masterly touches			Cataphoric expression
P3 L17	A light allusion here to the Dunkirk Spirit	P3 L16	some masterly touches	L3

P3 L17	Harold Wilson in sundry hours of need	P3 L17	A light allusion here to the Dunkirk Spirit	ETAN
P3 L17	a glancing evocation there of the politics of envy	P3 L16	some masterly touches	L3
P3 L18	Tony Blair	P2 L11	Labour's accomplished playing	L3
P3 L18	his shadow Chancellor	P3 L16	Gordon Brown	NMDNF2a his
P3 L18	fairness			∅
P3 L18	sacrifice	P3 L17	the Dunkirk Spirit	L2a
P3 L18	all the world			AP
P3 L18	he	P3 L16	Gordon Brown	P1
P3 L18	conference			∅
P3 L18	the Winter Gardens			∅
P3 L18	Blackpool			∅
P3 L18	the 1970s			ETE
P3 L19	he	P3 L18	Tony Blair	P1
P3 L19	the shades of Old Labourism			SA
P3 L19	the shades of Old Labourism			CR (Labour)
P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P3 L18	Tony Blair	L1a
P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat			SAG
P4 L20	him	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P1
P4 L20	some of his own recent political signalling			SA
P4 L20	some of his own recent political signalling	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P2
P4 L21	Colonel Blimp and other readers of The Daily Telegraph			CR (the armed forces)
P4 L21	Colonel Blimp and other readers of The Daily Telegraph	P4 L21	Colonel Blimp and other readers of The Daily Telegraph	NMDNF2c other
P4 L21	Colonel Blimp and other readers of The Daily Telegraph			SA
P4 L21	a breathless encomium to Britain's armed forces			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P4 L21	a breathless encomium to Britain's armed forces	P1 L1	Air Chief Marshal Sir Peter Harding	CR (armed forces)
P4 L21	he	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P1
P4 L21	the other day			ETE
P4 L21	a tactical foray into enemy territory	P4 L21	a breathless encomium to Britain's armed forces	ETN "might look like"
P4 L21	a tactical foray into enemy territory			SA
P4 L21	a tactical foray into enemy territory			∅
P4 L22	it	P4 L21	a breathless encomium to Britain's armed forces	P1
P4 L22	a party leader	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P4 L22	the near future			ETE
P4 L22	some hard decisions			∅
P4 L22	our armed forces	P4 L21	Britain's armed forces	DNF1a our
P4 L22	large sums of money for spending on more urgent purposes			SA
P4 L22	large sums of money for spending on more urgent purposes			SA
P4 L22	large sums of money for spending on more urgent purposes	P4 L22	our armed forces	C1
P5 L23	Another telling omission	PS	Previous sentence	MDNF2c another
P5 L23	the thoughts of Labour's leader			SA
P5 L23	the thoughts of Labour's leader	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	L2a
P5 L23	this week			ETE
P5 L23	his discussion of the future for London's transport	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P2
P5 L23	his discussion of the future for London's transport			SA
P5 L23	his discussion of the future for London's transport			SA
P5 L24	A word beginning with "p"			∅

P5 L24	the tip of his tongue	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P2
P5 L24	the tip of his tongue	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P2
P5 L25	It	P5 L24	A word beginning with "p"	P1
P5 L25	private sector partnership	P5 L24	A word beginning with "p"	ETN "emerged as"
P5 L25	private sector partnership			CR (economy)
P5 L26	He	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P1
P5 L26	private finance			CR (private sector)
P5 L26	the word	P5 L24	A word beginning with "p"	DNF1a the
P5 L26	he	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	P1
P5 L27	The word	P5 L26	the word	DNF1a the
P5 L27	privatisation	P5 L27	The word	ETN "is"
P6 L28	Privatisation	P5 L27	privatisation	L1a
P6 L29	It's	P6 L28	Privatisation	P1
P6 L30	new Labour	P2 L11	Labour's accomplished playing	L1a
P6 L30	any problem			∅
P6 L30	it	P6 L28	Privatisation	P1
P6 L31	No one			∅
P6 L31	privatisation	P6 L28	Privatisation	L1a
P6 L31	the need for short-run revenue subsidy for London Underground			SA
P6 L31	the need for short-run revenue subsidy for London Underground			SA
P6 L31	the need for short-run revenue subsidy for London Underground	P5 L23	his discussion of the future for London's transport	L3
P6 L32	Sir George Young			∅
P6 L32	a huge backlog of essential maintenance			SA
P6 L32	a huge backlog of essential maintenance	P6 L31	London Underground	E1 (of the London Underground)
P6	the notional proceeds of			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L32	a sale			
P6 L32	the notional proceeds of a sale	P6 L31	London Underground	E1 (of the London Underground)
P6 L33	the ways forward			∅
P6 L33	a network on which the life of the capital		his discussion of the future for London's transport	SA
P6 L33	a network on which the life of the capital			SA
P6 L33	a network on which the life of the capital	P5 L23		NMDNF2a the
P6 L33	the substitution of private management and ownership for public within a framework of regulation and subsidy			SA
P6 L33	the substitution of private management and ownership for public within a framework of regulation and subsidy	P6 L31	London Underground	E1 (of the London Underground)
P6 L33	the substitution of private management and ownership for public within a framework of regulation and subsidy	P6 L31	London Underground	E1 (management and ownership of the London Underground)
P6 L33	the substitution of private management and ownership for public within a framework of regulation and subsidy			SA
P6 L33	the substitution of private management and ownership for public within a framework of regulation and subsidy			SA
P6 L34	Mr Blair	P4 L20	Mr Blair's momentary sweat	L1a
P6 L34	it	P6 L31	privatisation	P1
P7 L35	It	PS	P6L34	P4
P7 L35	a pity			ETN "was"
P7 L35	the future of London Underground		London Underground	SA
P7	the future of London	P6		L1a

L35	Underground	L31		
P7 L35	Labour's pledge to effective government	P6 L30	new Labour	L1a
P7 L35	Labour's pledge to effective government			SAG
P7 L35	Labour's pledge to effective government			SA
P7 L35	the London conurbation	P6 L33	the capital	NMDNF2a the
P7 L35	Labour's recognition	P7 L35	Labour's pledge	L1a
P7 L35	Labour's recognition			SAG
P7 L35	the Conservatives	P2 L10	the Conservatives	DNF1a the
P7 L35	the government of London			SA
P7 L35	the government of London	P7 L35	the London conurbation	DNF1a the
P7 L35	some measure of direct democracy			SA
P7 L35	some measure of direct democracy			CR (local government)
P7 L35	in the shape of a directly elected "mayor"			SA
P7 L35	the shape of a directly elected "mayor"			CR (local government)
P7 L36	Labour	P7 L35	Labour's recognition	L1a
P7 L36	it	P7 L36	Labour	P1
P7 L36	a strategic authority			CR (local government)
P7 L36	a mini-GLC			CR (local government)
P7 L36	we			ER
P7 L36	a bunch of the same tired nominees from boroughs			SA
P7 L36	a bunch of the same tired nominees from boroughs			SA
P7 L36	a bunch of the same tired nominees from boroughs			CR (local government)
P7 L37	London	P7 L35	the government of London	
P7 L37	a strategic executive	P7 L36	a strategic authority	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P7 L37	an authority	P7 L35	the government of London	CR (local government)
P7	we	P7	we	P1

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L38		L36		
P7 L38	this executive	P7 L37	a strategic executive	DNF1a this
P7 L38	any money			CR (money)
P8 L39	London's sake	P7 L37	London	L1a
P8 L39	London's sake			SAG
P8 L39	it	P7 L38	this executive	P1
P8 L39	the built-up area	P7 L37	London	E1 (of London)
P8 L40	Much			∅
P8 L40	the shape privatisation			SA
P8 L40	the shape privatisation	P6 L31	privatisation	L1a
P8 L41	a great advantage for a private sector Underground under contract to an elected London government			SA
P8 L41	a great advantage for a private sector Underground under contract to an elected London government	P7 L35	the future of London Underground	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P8 L41	under contract to an elected London government			SA
P8 L41	under contract to an elected London government	P7 L38	this executive	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P8 L41	its freedom	P8 L41	a private sector Underground	P2
P8 L41	the capital markets			CR (money)
P8 L42	It	P8 L41	a private sector Underground	P1
P8 L42	a massive task of investment			SA
P8 L42	a massive task of investment			CR (money)
P8 L43	Its incentive	P8 L41	a private sector Underground	P2
P8 L43	a set of London government guarantees on revenue			SA
P8 L43	a set of London government guarantees on revenue			CR (local government)

P8 L43	a set of London government guarantees on revenue			SA
P8 L43	new pan-London planning powers for road, rail and other forms of transport	P7 L37	London	L1a
P8 L43	new pan-London planning powers for road, rail and other forms of transport	P7 L37	London	SAW
P8 L43	new pan-London planning powers for road, rail and other forms of transport			SA
P8 L43	a direct contribution by London business			SA
P8 L43	a direct contribution by London business	P7 L37	London	L1a
P8 L43	a direct contribution by London business			SAW
P8 L43	a direct contribution by London business and domestic residents	P7 L37	London	E1 (of London)
P8 L43	for their infrastructure	P8 L43	London business and domestic residents	P2
P8 L43	a city tax	P8 L43	a direct contribution by London business and domestic residents	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P9 L44	The gratifying thing about the election campaign			SA
P9 L44	The gratifying thing about the election campaign			CR (elections)
P9 L44	we	P7 L36	we	P1
P9 L44	something new			∅
P9 L44	every day			ETE
P9 L45	The troubling thing	P9 L44	The gratifying thing	L1d
P9 L45	we	P9 L44	we	P1
P9 L45	all the important signals	P1 L6	signal	L1b

Stand By The Rock Britain must not compromise on Gibraltar's sovereignty				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	the House of Commons			Homophoric
P1 L1	last week			EIE
P1 L1	John Major			∅
P1 L1	a British commitment			CR (Britain)
P1 L1	a British commitment			SAW
P1 L1	Gibraltar	HL	The Rock	L5a
P1 L1	any doubt			∅
P1 L2	The Government			Homophoric
P1 L2	he	P1 L1	John Major	P1
P1 L2	the Rock	HL	The Rock	DNF1a the
P1 L2	sovereignty	HL	The Rock	E1 (of the Rock)
P1 L2	Spain			CR (Europe)
P1 L2	the wishes of the Gibraltarian people			SA
P1 L2	the wishes of the Gibraltarian people	P1 L1	Gibraltar	L1a
P1 L2	the wishes of the Gibraltarian people			SAW
P2 L3	Gibraltar	P1 L2	the Rock	L1a
P2 L3	Mr Major's declaration	P1 L1	John Major	L1a
P2 L3	Mr Major's declaration			SAG
P2 L3	it	P1 L2	the Rock	P1
P2 L3	a robust statement to the same effect			SA
P2 L3	a robust statement to the same effect	P2 L3	Mr Major's declaration	E1 (as Mr Major's declaration)
P2 L3	Malcolm Rifkind, the Foreign Secretary			Homophoric
P2 L3	the day before	P2 L3	Mr Major's declaration	E1 (Mr Major's declaration)

P2 L4	Both assertions	P2 L3 P2 L3	Mr Major's declaration & a robust statement to the same effect	MDNF2a both
P2 L4	in response to a leaked proposal by Abel Matutes, Spain's Foreign Minister			SA
P2 L4	in response to a leaked proposal by Abel Matutes, Spain's Foreign Minister			SA
P2 L4	Abel Matutes, Spain's Foreign Minister	P1 L2	Spain	L1a
P2 L4	a lengthy period of Anglo-Spanish "co- sovereignty			SA
P2 L4	a lengthy period of Anglo-Spanish "co- sovereignty			L2a
P2 L4	Anglo-Spanish "co- sovereignty			SAW
P2 L4	Gibraltar	P2 L3	Gibraltar	L1a
P2 L4	the colony	P2 L4	Gibraltar	NMDNF2a the
P2 L4	Spain	P1 L2	Spain	L1a
P3 L5	an interview			SA
P3 L5	The Times			∅
P3 L5	Peter Caruana, Gibraltar's moderate Chief Minister			SA
P3 L5	Peter Caruana, Gibraltar's moderate Chief Minister	P2 L4	Gibraltar	L1a
P3 L5	Peter Caruana, Gibraltar's moderate Chief Minister			SAG
P3 L5	the Matutes proposals	P2 L4	a leaked proposal by Abel Matutes	MDNF2a the
P3 L6	He	P3 L5	Peter Caruana, Gibraltar's moderate Chief Minister	P1
P3 L7	Both Mr Major and Mr Rifkind	P1 L1 P2 L3	John Major Malcolm Rifkind	L1a
P3 L7	it	P3 L5	the Matutes proposals	P1
P3	compromise	HL	compromise (v)	RPE

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L7				
P3 L7	them	P3 L7	Both Mr Major and Mr Rifkind	P1
P3 L7	widespread condemnation			∅
P4 L8	Britain	HL	Britain	L1a
P4 L8	a commitmentof a very precise kind	P1 L1	a British commitment	MDNF2a indefinite article
P4 L8	Gibraltar	P2 L4	Gibraltar	L1a
P4 L9	That commitment	P1 L1	a British commitment	MDNF2a that
P4 L9	the colony's Constitution of 1969	P4 L8	Gibraltar	NMDNF2a the
P4 L9	the colony's Constitution of 1969			SAG
P4 L9	Spain	P2 L4	Spain	L1a
P4 L9	an illegal document	P4 L9	the colony's Constitution of 1969	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P4 L9	it	P1 L1	a British commitment	P1
P4 L9	the practice of all British Governments			SA
P4 L9	the practice of all British Governments	P1 L1	a British commitment	L1a
P4 L10	That weave	P4 L9	has also been woven	NMDNF2a that
P4 L10	attempts be made to do so	P4 L9	That weave cannot easily be unravelled	S2
P4 L11	Gibraltar	P4 L8	Gibraltar	L1a
P4 L11	a political issue	P4 L11	Gibraltar	ETN "is"
P4 L11	a political issue	P4 L11	Gibraltar	CR (politics)
P4 L11	a cross-party consensus			Homophoric
P4 L12	Mr Major	P3 L7	Both Mr Major	L1a
P4 L12	the Government's position	P1 L2	The Government	DNF1a the
P4 L12	the Government's position			SAG
P4 L12	in public			∅
P4 L12	last week			ETE
P4 L12	Labour spokesmen on foreign affairs			SA
P4 L12	Labour spokesmen on foreign affairs	P2 L3	the Foreign Secretary	L1d

P4 L12	Labour spokesmen on foreign affairs			SAW
P4 L12	Mr Caruana	P3 L5	Peter Caruana	L1a
P4 L12	a Blair government			CR (Labour)
P4 L12	the wishes of Gibraltar's people	P1 L2	the wishes of the Gibraltarian people	DNF1a the
P5 L13	Spain	P4 L9	Spain	L1a
P5 L13	the Gibraltarian people	P1 L2	the wishes of the Gibraltarian people	DNF1a the
P5 L13	valid shareholders in their own future	P5 L13	the Gibraltarian people	ETN "recognized ... as"
P5 L13	valid shareholders in their own future			SA
P5 L13	their own future	P5 L13	the Gibraltarian people	P2
P5 L14	that country	P5 L13	Spain	NMDNF2a that
P5 L14	the dictatorship of General Franco			CR (Spain)
P5 L14	such a posture	P5 L13	Spain ... has never recognised the Gibraltarian people	MDNF2a such
P5 L14	notions			∅
P5 L14	"self-determination"	P5 L14	notions	ETN "such as"
P5 L14	"self-determination"			CR (politics)
P5 L14	part of the General's vocabulary	P5 L14	"self-determination"	ETN "were"
P5 L14	part of the General's vocabulary			SA
P5 L14	part of the General's vocabulary	P5 L14	General Franco	DNF1a the
P5 L14	part of the General's vocabulary			SAG
P5 L15	the abject failure of a democratic post-Franco Spain			SA
P5 L15	the abject failure of a democratic post-Franco Spain	P5 L13	Spain	L1a
P5 L15	the fact			∅
P5 L15	Britain	P4 L8	Britain	L1a
P5 L15	no proposals for Gibraltar	P2 L4	a leaked proposal by Abel Matutes	L2a
P5 L15	they	P5 L15	no proposals for Gibraltar	P1

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P5 L15	the freely expressed wishes of its people	P1 L2	the wishes of the Gibraltarian people	DNF1a the
P6 L16	that reason	P5 L15	Britain can find no proposals for Gibraltar acceptable unless they take account of the freely expressed wishes of its people	MDNF2a that
P6 L16	co-sovereignty	P2 L4	co-sovereignty	L1a
P6 L16	Gibraltar's people	P1 L2	the Gibraltarian people	L2a
P6 L17	Spanish			CR (Spain)
P6 L17	hotly bargained fractions	P6 L17	Spanish	∅
P6 L18	Gibraltarians	P6 L16	Gibraltar's people	L2a
P6 L18	an iota of enthusiasm for Spain		Spain	SA
P6 L18	an iota of enthusiasm for Spain			SA
P6 L18	an iota of enthusiasm for Spain	P5 L13		L1a
P6 L18	its Foreign Minister	P2 L4	Abel Matutes, Spain's Foreign Minister	DNF1a its
P6 L18	them	P6 L18	Gibraltarians	P1
P6 L18	in the matter of their own future		Gibraltarians	SA
P6 L18	in the matter of their own future	P6 L18		P2
P6 L19	Gibraltarians	P6 L18	Gibraltarians	L1a
P6 L19	Spain	P5 L13	Spain	L1a
P6 L19	their daily experience	P1 L2	the Gibraltarian people	P2
P6 L19	at the border	P6 L19	Spain	E1 (with Spain)
P6 L20	they	P1 L2	the Gibraltarian people	P1
P6 L20	such petty harassment			∅
P6 L20	the refusal by Spain even to recognise Gibraltar's international telephone code	P6 L20	such petty harassment	ETN "as"
P6 L20	the refusal by Spain		Spain	SA
P6 L20	the refusal by Spain	P6 L19		L1a
P6	Gibraltar's international	P5	no proposals for	L1a

L20	telephone code	L15	Gibraltar	
P6 L20	Gibraltar's international telephone code			SAG
P7 L21	Spain's behaviour	P6 L19 P6 L20	Previous sentences	L2a
P7 L21	Mr Caruana	P4 L12	Mr Caruana	L1a
P7 L21	himself	P7 L21	Mr Caruana	P1
P7 L21	in favour of dialogue with Madrid			SA
P7 L21	dialogue with Madrid			SA
P7 L21	dialogue with Madrid	P6 L20	Spain	L2a
P7 L22	Spain's concerns	P6 L20	Spain	L1a
P7 L22	Spain's concerns			SAG
P7 L22	illicit activities on the Rock			SA
P7 L22	illicit activities on the Rock	P1 L2	the Rock	DNF1a the
P7 L22	stamping out the smuggling trade			SA
P7 L22	stamping out the smuggling trade	P7 L22	illicit activities on the Rock	NMDNF2a the
P7 L22	Joe Bossano, his predecessor			SA
P7 L22	Joe Bossano, his predecessor	P7 L21	Mr Caruana	P2
P7 L23	Spain	P7 L22	Spain's concerns	L1a
P7 L23	its policy	P7 L22	Spain's concerns	NMDNF2a its
P7 L24	Madrid	P7 L21	Madrid	L1a
P7 L24	projects such as "co- sovereignty"	P6 L16	co-sovereignty	NMDNF2a such
P7 L24	the past			ETE
P7 L25	Spain	P7 L23	Spain	L1a
P7 L25	Gibraltar's wishes	P1 L2	the wishes of the Gibraltarian people	L2a
P7 L25	Britain	P5 L15	Britain	L1a
P7 L26	it	P1 L2	Spain	P1
P7 L26	it	P1 L2	Spain	P1

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P7 L26	the Rock	P7 L22	the Rock	DNF1a the
P7 L26	the next millennium			CR (time)

The Cook Currency Labour remains more likely to lead Britain into EMU				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	the election			Ø
P1 L1	Labour politicians	HL	Labour	L1a
P1 L1	Labour politicians			SAW
P1 L1	their European pronouncements	P1 L1	Labour politicians	P2
P1 L1	the same hard scrutiny			E1 (as the hard scrutiny that the conservatives)
P1 L1	the Conservatives			CR (politics)
P1 L2	The smallest hint	P1 L1	Labour politicians	E1 (by Labour)
P1 L2	a trimming to the wind but a change of course	P1 L2	The smallest hint	ETN "not as"
P1 L3	So it was	P1 L2	a change of course	P1
P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks	HL	The Cook Currency	L1a
P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks			SAG
P1 L3	Sunday			ETE
P1 L3	signs of a shift in the party's position		Labour politicians	SA
P1 L3	signs of a shift in the party's position			SA
P1 L3	signs of a shift in the party's position	P1 L1		DNF1a the
P1 L3	signs of a shift in the party's position			SAG
P1 L3	a single currency	HL	EMU	L5
P2 L4	One newspaper			Ø
P2 L4	them	P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks	P1
P2 L4	antiEMU	P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks	ETN "portrayed ... as"
P2 L4	antiEMU	HL	EMU	L1a
P2 L4	most	P2 L4	One newspaper	Pro-form reference
P2 L4	the Shadow Foreign Secretary	P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks	DNF1a the
P2 L4	the chances of a Labour government			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L4	Labour government	P1 L1	Labour politicians	L1a
P2 L4	Labour government			SAW
P2 L4	joining in a second wave	P1 L3	a single currency	E1 (the single currency)
P2 L5	it	P2 L4	a second wave	P1
P2 L5	it	P2 L4	a second wave	P1
P2 L5	Mr Cook	P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks	L1a
P2 L6	a very sober and serious calculation		a single currency	SA
P2 L6	to stay out	P1 L3		E1 (the single currency"
P2 L6	2002			ETE
P2 L7	This statement	P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks	MDNF2a this
P2 L7	his more sceptical comments	P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks	P2
P2 L7	his more sceptical comments about winning allies against the Franco-German domination of the EU			SA
P2 L7	his more sceptical comments about winning allies against the Franco-German domination of the EU			SA
P2 L7	his more sceptical comments about winning allies against the Franco-German domination of the EU			CR (Europe)
P3 L8	Few			∅
P3 L8	a new Labour government	P2 L4	a Labour government	DNF1a indefinite article
P3 L8	Britain	HL	Britain	L1a
P3 L8	a single currency	P1 L3	a single currency	DNF1a indefinite article
P3 L8	1999			ETE
P3 L9	Labour leaders	P3 L8	a new Labour government	L1a
P3 L9	Labour leaders			SAW
P3 L9	this desirable	P3 L8	take Britain into a single currency in 1999	DPR this

P3 L9	many	P3 L9	Labour leaders	Pro-form reference
P3 L9	the legislation and argument	P3 L8	to take Britain into a single currency in 1999	E1 (to join the single currency)
P3 L9	the referendum	P3 L8	take Britain into a single currency in 1999	E1 (to join the single currency)
P3 L9	a new administration	P3 L8	a new Labour government	NMDFN2a indefinite article
P3 L10	little political gain	P3 L8	take Britain into a single currency in 1999	E1 (from joining the single currency)
P3 L10	Gordon Brown	P3 L9	Labour leaders	L3
P3 L10	much to be lost	P3 L8	take Britain into a single currency in 1999	E1 (from joining the single currency)
P4 L11	voters			CR (election)
P4 L11	a switch to Labour			SA
P4 L11	a switch to Labour	P3 L9	Labour leaders	L1a
P4 L11	reassurance that their decision	P4 L11	a switch to Labour	E1 (from Labour)
P4 L11	reassurance that their decision	P4 L11	voters	P2
P4 L11	the Opposition	P4 L11	a switch to Labour	DNF1a the
P4 L11	a five-year chance	P1 L1	the election	∅
P4 L11	irreversible actions	P3 L8	take Britain into a single currency in 1999	L2a
P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament	P3 L8	take Britain into a single currency in 1999	L2a
P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament			SA
P4 L12	Labour	P4 L11	a switch to Labour	L1a
P4 L12	the Conservatives would	P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament	E1 (sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament)
P4 L13	Neither party	HL P4 L12	Labour the Conservatives	NMDNF2a neither
P4 L13	EMU	HL	EMU	L1a
P4 L14	Both	HL P4	Labour the Conservatives	Pro-form both

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

		L12		
P4 L14	make the judgment	P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament	E1 (to sign up to the single currency) SA
P4 L14	make the judgment on pragmatic grounds			
P4 L15	Those grounds	P4 L14	pragmatic grounds	NMDNF2a those
P4 L15	unpredictable ways			∅
P4 L15	1999	P3 L8	1999	L1a
P4 L15	2002	P2 L6	2002	L1a
P5 L16	Both parties	HL P4 L12	Labour the Conservatives	NMDNF2a both
P5 L16	recent years			ETE
P5 L16	of the single currency project	P4 L12	the single currency	DNF1a the
P5 L17	Mr Cook	P2 L5	Mr Cook	L1a
P5 L17	the Maastricht criteria	P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament	E1 (for joining the single currency)
P5 L17	other indicators	P5 L17	the Maastricht criteria	Cataphoric expression
P5 L17	other indicators	P5 L17	the Maastricht criteria	NMDNF2c other
P5 L17	levels of unemployment	P5 L17	other indicators	L2a
P5 L17	industrial output	P5 L17	other indicators	L2a
P5 L17	investment	P5 L17	other indicators	L2a
P5 L17	productivity	P5 L17	other indicators	L2a
P5 L17	export performance.	P5 L17	other indicators	L2a
P5 L18	This	P5 L17	Mr Cook has added to the Maastricht criteria other indicators	DPR this
P5 L18	1999	P4 L15	1999	L1a
P5 L18	the necessary convergence	P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament	E1 (to join the single currency)
P5 L19	The Conservatives	L12	the Conservatives	DNF1a the
P5 L19	the fudging of other countries' statistics	P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament	E1 (with regards to the criteria necessary to

				join the single currency)
P5 L19	a good reason for not joining in the first wave			SA
P5 L19	a good reason for not joining in the first wave	P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament	E1 (the single currency)
P6 L20	the present Cabinet			CR (politics)
P6 L20	host to divergent views on Europe			SA
P6 L20	host to divergent views on Europe			SA
P6 L20	host to divergent views on Europe			CR (Europe)
P6 L20	the Shadow Cabinet	P3 L9	Labour leaders	NMDNF2a the
P6 L21	Mr Cook	P5 L17	Mr Cook	L1a
P6 L21	Mr Cook, John Prescott and Jack Straw	P6 L20	the Shadow Cabinet	L2a
P6 L21	all	P6 L20	the Shadow Cabinet	ETN "are"
P6 L21	Gordon Brown, the Shadow Chancellor	P3 L10	Gordon Brown	L1a
P6 L21	Kenneth Clarke	P6 L20	the present Cabinet	L3
P6 L22	Mr Cook's comments	P1 L3	Robin Cook's remarks	L2a
P6 L22	Mr Cook's comments			SAG
P6 L22	an attempt at a rapprochement with Mr Brown			SA
P6 L22	an attempt at a rapprochement with Mr Brown			SA
P6 L22	Mr Brown	P6 L21	Gordon Brown, the Shadow Chancellor	L1a
P6 L22	he	P6 L22	Mr Brown	P1
P6 L23	frosty relations			CR (relations)
P6 L23	Tony Blair	P3 L9	Labour leaders	L3
P6 L23	John Major	P6 L20	the present Cabinet	L3
P6 L23	the sort of bickering over Europe			SA
P6 L23	the sort of bickering over Europe	P6 L20	host to divergent views on Europe	L1a
P6 L23	his lieutenants	P6 L23	Tony Blair	P2

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P6 L23	the Prime Minister	P6 L23	John Major	NMDNF2a the
P7 L24	a Labour government	P3 L8	a new Labour government	DNF1a indefinite article
P7 L24	2002	P2 L6	2002	L1a
P7 L24	the electorate	P4 L11	voters	NMDNF2a the
P7 L24	a doublelock			∅
P7 L24	its actions	P7 L24	the electorate	P2
P7 L25	referendum	P3 L9	the referendum	L1a
P7 L26	a general election			CR (elections)
P7 L27	that election	P7 L26	a general election	NMDNF2a that
P7 L27	a new government	P3 L8	a new Labour government	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P7 L27	the country	P3 L8	Britain	NMDNF2a the
P7 L27	EMU	P4 L13	EMU	L1a
P8 L28	voters	P4 L11	voters	L1a
P8 L28	the chances were of EMU membership			SA
P8 L28	the chances were of EMU membership	P4 L12	sign up to to the single currency during the next Parliament	L1a
P8 L28	the chances were of EMU membership			SAW
P8 L28	each party	P8 L29 P4 L12		Labour & the Tories
P8 L29	they	P8 L28	voters	P1
P8 L29	the same equivocations from Labour			SA
P8 L29	the same equivocations from Labour	P7 L24	a Labour government	L1a
P8 L29	the Tories	P4 L12	the Conservatives	L5
P8 L30	They	P4 L11	voters	P1
P8 L30	the likely complexion of the parliamentary parties			SA
P8 L30	the likely complexion of the parliamentary parties	P8 L29 P4	Labour & the Tories	DNF1a the

		L12		
P8 L31	the party leaderships	P6 L20	the Shadow Cabinet & the present Cabinet	DNF1a the
P8 L31	their views	P6 L20	the Shadow Cabinet & the present Cabinet	P2
P8 L31	the Conservative parliamentary party	P5 L19	The Conservatives	DNF1a the
P5 L19	The Conservatives parliamentary party			SAW
P8 L31	EMU	P7 L27	EMU	L1a
P8 L31	Labour	P7 L24	a Labour government	L1a
P8 L32	Mr Blair	P6 L23	Tony Blair	L1a
P8 L32	a tougher leader	P8 L32	Mr Blair	ETN "is"
P8 L32	a tougher leader	P6 L23	Tony Blair	L1a
P8 L31	Mr Major	P6 L23	John Major	L1a
P8 L31	Labour's European policy	P8 L31	Labour	L1a
P8 L31	Labour's European policy			SAG
P8 L31	the red-weeping lion			∅
P8 L31	the new Conservative advertisement	P1 L1	the Conservatives	L1a
P8 L31	in the new Conservative advertisement			SAW
P8 L33	Labour	P8 L31	Labour's European policy	L1a
P8 L33	Britain	P3 L8	Britain	L1a
P8 L33	EMU	P8 L31	EMU	L1a

The double sword of justice				
The moral of the new OJ trial is as much economic as legal				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	HL	the new OJ trial	DNF1a the
P1 L1	the first	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (OJ trial)
P1 L1	every possible way			∅
P1 L1	the case	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	NMDNF2a the
P1 L1	the public domain			∅
P1 L1	it	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	P1
P1 L1	a civil action	P1 L1	it	ETN "is"
P1 L1	a lesser burden of proof	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (than the first)
P1 L1	a different mix of evidence	P1 L1	the first	E1 (than the first)
P1 L1	the judge	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the new OJ trial"
P1 L1	a different view on crucial issues of admissibility	P1 L1	the first	E1 (than the first)
P1 L1	crucial issues of admissibility	P1 L1	the first	E1 (than the first)
P1 L1	crucial issues of admissibility	P1 L1	the first	E1 (than the first)
P1 L1	the jury	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the new OJ trial)
P1 L2	it	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	P1
P1 L2	TV	P1 L1	the first	E1 (like the first)
P2 L3	this time	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	NMDNF2a this
P2 L3	justice			CR (justice)
P2 L3	we			ER
P2 L3	the temptation to become instant experts			SA
P2 L3	the temptation to become instant experts	P2 L3	justice	E1 (in justice)
P2 L4	All that can be said	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (about the new trial)
P2 L4	confidence			∅
P2	the evidence presented			SA

L4	this time			
P2 L4	the evidence presented this time	P2 L3	this time	DNF1a this
P2 L4	another forum	P1 L1	the first	E1 (from the first OJ trial)
P2 L4	so many different features from the first			SA
P2 L4	so many different features from the first	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (OJ trial)
P2 L4	a lower standard of probability	P1 L1	the first	E1 (from the first OJ trial)
P2 L4	the direction of the verdict			SA
P2 L4	the direction of the verdict	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the OJ trial)
P2 L4	unanimous rather than majority vote			CR (justice)
P2 L5	The plaintiffs for Mr Simpson's wife Nicole and her friend Ronald Goodman			SA
P2 L5	The plaintiffs for Mr Simpson's wife Nicole and her friend Ronald Goodman	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	L1a
P2 L5	The plaintiffs for Mr Simpson's wife Nicole and her friend Ronald Goodman			SAG
P2 L5	The plaintiffs for Mr Simpson's wife Nicole and her friend Ronald Goodman	P2 L5	Mr Simpson's wife Nicole and	P2
P2 L5	the considerable advantage			∅
P2 L5	the main lines of the defence	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the OJ trial)
P2 L6	This time	P2 L4	this time	DNF1a this
P2 L6	they	P2 L5	The plaintiffs	P1
P2 L6	the defendant	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	NMDNF2a the
P2 L6	the gloves			∅
P2 L7	They	P2 L5	The plaintiffs	P1
P2 L7	pretrial depositions			CR (justice)
P2 L7	a practice not allowed in criminal proceedings			SA
P2 L7	a practice not allowed in criminal proceedings	P1 L1	the first	E1 (such as the first OJ

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

				trial)
P2 L7	witnesses	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the new OJ trial)
P2 L8	These	P2 L7	pretrial depositions	DPR these
P2 L8	a mosaic of incriminating(though mostly circumstantial) detail which the defence	P2 L8	These	ETN "built up"
P2 L8	a mosaic of incriminating(though mostly circumstantial) detail			SA
P2 L8	a mosaic of incriminating(though mostly circumstantial) detail	P2 L7	pretrial depositions	∅
P2 L8	the defence	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the new OJ trial)
P2 L9	The plaintiffs	P2 L5	The plaintiffs	DNF1a the
P2 L9	the trial judge's refusal	P1 L1	the judge	DNF1a the
P2 L9	the trial judge's refusal			SAG
P2 L9	the evidence of racist utterances by Detective Mark Fuhrman	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the first OJ trial)
P2 L9	the evidence of racist utterances by Detective Mark Fuhrman	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the first OJ trial)
P2 L9	the evidence of racist utterances by Detective Mark Fuhrman			SA
P2 L9	the criminal trial jury	P1 L1	the first	E1 (in the first OJ trial)
P2 L10	Most of all	PT	Previous text	AP
P2 L10	they	P2 L5	The plaintiffs	P1
P2 L10	Mr Simpson himself	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	L1a
P2 L10	the stand			CR (justice)
P2 L10	inconsistencies in his account			SA
P2 L10	inconsistencies in his account	P2 L10	Mr Simpson himself	P2
P2 L11	the gloves	P2 L6	the gloves	DNF1a the
P2 L11	the shoes (which Mr Simpson denied possessing)			SA

P2 L11	Mr Simpson	P2 L10	Mr Simpson himself	L1a
P2 L11	photos	P2 L11	the shoes	E1 (of the shoes)
P2 L12	This	P2 L11	the shoes — which Mr Simpson denied possessing	DPR this
P2 L12	conclusive evidence	P2 L12	This	ETN “was not”
P2 L12	conclusive evidence	P2 L11	the shoes — which Mr Simpson denied possessing	L2a
P2 L12	it	P2 L11	the shoes — which Mr Simpson denied possessing	P1
P2 L12	his credibility	P2 L10	Mr Simpson himself	P2
P3 L13	The suggestion that the verdict in the first trial			SA
P3 L13	The suggestion that the verdict in the first trial			SA
P3 L13	The suggestion that the verdict in the first trial	P1 L1	the first	DNF1a the
P3 L13	the colour of the jurors			SA
P3 L13	the colour of the jurors	P1 L1	the first	E1 (in the first OJ trial)
P3 L14	They	P3 L13	the jurors	P1
P3 L14	a prosecution case	P1 L1	the first	E1 (in the first OJ trial)
P3 L14	an accused	P2 L10	Mr Simpson himself	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P3 L14	the best (or worst) barnstorming tradition of the American courtroom			SA
P3 L14	the American courtroom			CR (justice)
P3 L15	the reaction to the outcome of that trial			SA
P3 L15	the reaction to the outcome of that trial			SA
P3 L15	the reaction to the outcome of that trial	P1 L1	the first	NMDNF2a that
P3 L15	a strong racial connotation			CR (color)
P3 L16	cheering in black streets			SA
P3 L16	cheering in black streets			CR (color)
P3 L16	dismay in white saloon bars			SA

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P3 L16	dismay in white saloon bars			CR (color)
P3 L16	The more muted response	P3 L15	with cheering in black streets and dismay in white saloon bars	C1
P3 L16	yesterday			ETE
P3 L16	both sides of the racial divide			SA
P3 L16	both sides of the racial divide			CR
P3 L16	the passage of time	P1 L1	the first	E1 (since the first trial)
P3 L16	the absence of TV coverage	P1 L2	it was not on TV	NMDNF2a the
P4 L17	Cases where civil damages are sought against a defendant who has been acquitted in criminal proceedings are still rare	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	L2a
P4 L17	a defendant	P2 L10	Mr Simpson himself	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P4 L17	criminal proceedings	P2 L7	criminal proceedings	L1a
P4 L18	a subjective risk of double jeopardy			SA
P4 L18	a subjective risk of double jeopardy			CR (justice)
P4 L18	the actions	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (in the two trials are)
P4 L18	legal terms			CR (justice)
P4 L19	the real constraint	P4 L17	Cases where civil damages are sought against a defendant who has been acquitted in criminal proceedings are still rare	E1 (against a case where civil damages are sought)
P4 L19	an economic one	P4 L19	the real constraint	ETN "is"
P4 L20	Few aggrieved families	P2 L9	The plaintiffs	E1 (like the plaintiffs in the new OJ trial)
P4 L20	not many defendants	P2 L6	the defendant	E1 (like the defendant in the new OJ trial)
P4 L20	the funds			CR (money)
P4 L20	a successful suit	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	E1 (like the one in the new OJ trial)
P4	it	P4	Previous sentence	P4

L21		L20		
P4 L22	This case	P1 L1	The second OJ Simpson trial	NMDNF2a this
P4 L22	an excess of money			SA
P4 L22	an excess of money			CR (money)
P4 L22	media hype			CR (media)
P4 L22	a combination	P4 L22	an excess of money as well as of media hype	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P4 L22	good theatre	P4 L22	media hype	CR (media)
P4 L22	good justice	P4 L22	good theatre	RPE

The role of a university A degree is not just about economic returns				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	A major youth unemployment programme			∅
P1 L1	the buffers			∅
P1 L2	our education editor			CR (education)
P1 L2	yesterday			ETE
P1 L2	ministers			∅
P1 L2	the proportion of young people			SA
P1 L2	the proportion of young people			CR (youth)
P1 L2	higher education			CR (education)
P1 L2	the demand for graduates			SA
P1 L2	the demand for graduates			CR (education)
P1 L3	their written evidence	P1 L2	ministers	P2
P1 L3	the Dearing Committee which is reviewing higher education			CR (politics)
P1 L3	higher education	P1 L2	higher education	L1a
P1 L3	ministers	P1 L2	ministers	L1a
P1 L3	the increasing number of young people who obtain two A-levels			SA
P1 L3	young people who obtain two A-levels	P1 L2	the proportion of young people qualifying ... will shortly exceed	L2a
P1 L3	the equivalent vocational qualifications	P1 L3	two A-levels	ETN "or"
P1 L3	the equivalent vocational qualifications	P1 L3	two A-levels	CR (qualifications)
P1 L3	this	P1 L3	the increasing number of young people who obtain two A-levels	DPR this
P1 L3	automatic entry into university			SA
P1 L3	automatic entry into university	HL	The role of a university	L1a

P1 L4	They	P1 L2	ministers	P1
P1 L4	they	P1 L2	the proportion of young people qualifying ... will shortly exceed	P1
P1 L4	low level posts			∅
P1 L5	their narrow candle-end counting approach	P1 L2	ministers	P2
P1 L5	ministers	P1 L2	ministers	L1a
P1 L5	the rate of return on such investment in education		Previous Text	SA
P1 L5	the rate of return on such investment in education			SA
P1 L5	the rate of return on such investment in education	P1 L3		NMDNF2a such
P1 L6	no press conference or private briefing about this decision		should no longer be able to regard this as an automatic entry into university	SA
P1 L6	no press conference or private briefing about this decision			SA
P1 L6	no press conference or private briefing about this decision	P1 L3		MDNF2a this
P1 L7	The paper	P1 L3	their written evidence	NMDNF2a the
P1 L7	this bleak conclusion	P1 L5	the rate of return on such investment	MDNF2a this
P1 L7	the House of Commons library			CR (politics)
P1 L7	the House of Commons library			SA
P1 L8	Ministers	P1 L5	ministers	L1a
P1 L8	this	P1 L3	an automatic entry into university	DPR this
P1 L9	The Treasury			CR (politics)
P1 L9	automatic entry	P1 L3	automatic entry	L1a
P1 L9	it	P1 L9	The Treasury	P1
P1 L9	a three-year rolling cap			∅
P1 L9	the rise in student numbers in 1993			SA
P1	the rise in student			CR

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L9	numbers in 1993			(education)
P1 L9	1993			ETE
P1 L10	a watershed			∅
P2 L11	The expansion of higher education		higher education	SA
P2 L11	The expansion of higher education	P2 L11		L1a
P2 L11	the last decade			ETE
P2 L11	the highest social changes of the last 50 years	P2 L11	The expansion of higher education	NMDNF2a the
P2 L11	the last 50 years			ETE
P2 L12	A 25-year programme designed to double the proportion of 18-year-olds going into higher education	P2 L11	The expansion of higher education	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P2 L13	seven years			CR (time)
P2 L13	The proportion now going on	P2 L12	the proportion of 18-year-olds	DNF1a the
P2 L13	30 per cent			CR (number)
P2 L14	this huge expansion	P2 L11	The expansion of higher education	DNF1a this
P2 L14	any sense of direction or thought about the shape of our higher education system		higher education	SA
P2 L14	any sense of direction or thought about the shape of our higher education system			SA
P2 L14	any sense of direction or thought about the shape of our higher education system			SA
P2 L14	any sense of direction or thought about the shape of our higher education system	P2 L11		DNF1a our
P2 L14	adequate funding	P2 L11	higher education	E1 (for higher education)
P2 L15	School leavers			CR (education)
P2 L15	little chance of getting a job			SA
P2 L15	little chance of getting a job			CR (employment)

P2 L15	the higher education system	P2 L11	higher education	DNF1a the
P2 L16	The squeeze	P1 L9	a three-year rolling cap	NMDNF2a the
P2 L16	both the quality of university education		the higher education system	SA
P2 L16	both the quality of university education	P2 L15		L2a
P2 L16	the capacity of students		School leavers	SA
P2 L16	the capacity of students	P2 L15		L1a
P2 L16	savagely reduced maintenance grants			CR (money)
P2 L17	the proportion of students		students	SA
P2 L17	the proportion of students	P2 L16		L1a
P2 L17	three in 10	P2 L13	30 per cent	L2a
P2 L17	Alan Smithers			∅
P2 L17	the chance of obtaining higher education		our higher education system	SA
P2 L17	higher education	P2 L14		L1a
P2 L17	a lifetime			∅
P2 L17	six in 10			CR (number)
P2 L18	the famous 30 per cent	P2 L13	30 per cent	DNF1a the
P2 L18	the growing number of full-time mature students		the proportion of students	SA
P2 L18	the growing number of full-time mature students	P2 L17		L3
P2 L18	(14 per cent currently)	P2 L18	the growing number of full-time mature students	ETAN
P2 L18	a further 21 per cent	P2 L18	the growing number of full-time mature students	C1
P2 L18	are part-time mature students	P2 L18	a further 21 per cent	ETN "are"
P2 L18	are part-time mature students	P2 L18	full-time mature students	L1d
P2 L19	Both the last two groups	P2 L18	full-time mature students part-time mature students	NMDNF2a both
P2	their own maintenance	P2	full-time mature	P2

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L19	and tuition	L18	students part-time mature students	
P2 L20	One task			∅
P2 L20	Dearing	P1 L3	the Dearing Committee	L1b
P2 L20	this system	PPs	Previous paragraph	NMDNF2a this
P3 L21	The financially- strapped university principals			CR (education)
P3 L21	tuition fees	P2 L19	pay for... tuition	L1a
P3 L21	tuition fees			SAW
P3 L21	a decade			ETE
P3 L22	Both major parties			CR (politics)
P3 L22	the blame such charges			SA
P3 L22	the blame such charges	P3 L21	tuition fees	NMDNF2a such
P3 L22	the case of Labour			SA
P3 L22	the case of Labour	P2 L22	Both major parties	L3
P3 L22	sufficient funds	P2 L16	university education	E1 (to maintain standards in university education)
P3 L22	standards	P2 L16	university education	E1 (in university education)
P3 L23	Dearing	P1 L3	the Dearing Committee	L2a
P3 L23	the election			CR (politics)
P2 L24	Most western states			∅
P3 L24	a contributory tuition element	P3 L21	tuition fees	L1a
P3 L24	a contributory tuition element			SAW
P4 L25	it doesn't need to be either or	PP	Previous paragraph	L2a
P4 L26	other options	PPs	Previous paragraphs	NMDNF2c other
P4 L27	The £7 billion Treasury higher education grant	P2 L17	higher education	DNF1a the
P4 L27	The £7 billion Treasury higher education grant			SAW
P4	more imaginative ways	PT	Previous text	Cataphoric expression

L27				
P4 L27	more imaginative ways	PT	Previous text	C1
P4 L27	individual scholarships ... for particular purposes	P4 L27	The £7 billion Treasury higher education grant	L3
P4 L27	crude institutional block grants	P4 L27	The £7 billion Treasury higher education grant	L3
P4 L27	individual scholarships ... for particular purposes	P4 L27	more imaginative ways	Cataphoric expression
P4 L27	individual scholarships ... for particular purposes			CR (education)
P4 L27	to encourage pupils from poor homes on to degree courses	P4 L27	individual scholarships ... for particular purposes	L2a
P4 L27	steer more bright pupils into under-subscribed courses like science and engineering	P4 L27	individual scholarships ... for particular purposes	L2a
P4 L27	correct the imbalance between white and ethnic households			L2a
P4 L28	Other students	PT	Previous text	DNF2c other
P4 L28	university	P2 L16	university education	L1d
P4 L28	the cost of their courses			SA
P4 L28	the cost of their courses	P3 L28	Other students	P2
P4 L28	a graduate tax			CR (education)
P4 L28	a lifetime	P2 L17	a lifetime	L1d
P4 L29	The advantage of such an approach			SA
P4 L29	The advantage of such an approach	P3 L28	repay the cost of their courses through a graduate tax	MDNF2a such
P4 L29	it	P3 L29	such an approach	P1
P4 L29	ministers	P1 L8	Ministers	L1a
P4 L29	specific goals			∅
P4 L29	the same time	P4 L29	specific goals	E1 (as they achieve specific goals)
P4 L29	universities	P4 L28	university	L1b
P4	Higher education	P2	higher education	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L30		L17		
P4 L30	wider purposes	P4 L27	particular purposes	L1d
P4 L30	mere economic returns			CR (money)
P4 L30	the cost	P4 L30	Higher education	E1 (of higher education)
P4 L30	the value	P4 L30	Higher education	E1 (of higher education)

Uniforms, yes: but the issue is standards				
	Tie		Antecedent	Type
P1 L1	That David Blunkett			∅
P1 L1	the television			∅
P1 L1	yesterday morning			ETE
P1 L1	it			
P1 L1	he	P1 L1	That David Blunkett	P1
P1 L2	Children			∅
P1 L2	the Union flag			∅
P1 L2	their way in to school	P1 L2	Children	P2
P1 L2	their way in to school			SA
P1 L3	Homework			CR (school)
P1 L4	The Lord's Prayer			∅
P1 L4	God Save the Queen			∅
P1 L4	the new Clause IV			∅
P1 L4	the national curriculum			CR (school)
P1 L5	school uniform	P1 L2	their way in to school	L1a
P1 L5	school uniform			SAW
P1 L5	luminous blazers	P1 L5	school uniform	L3
P1 L5	conscientious citizens			∅
P1 L5	curfew-breakers			∅
P1 L5	their homework	P1 L5	curfew-breakers	P2
P2 L6	our liberal leanings			ER
P2 L6	school uniform	P1 L5	school uniform	L1a
P2 L7	Few of us			ER
P2 L7	we	P2 L7	Few of us	P1
P2 L7	school	P1 L2	their way in to school	L1a
P2 L8	Mr Blunkett	P1 L1	That David Blunkett	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P2 L8	we			ER
P2 L8	regret			∅
P2 L9	Training shoes with flashing lights in the heels			CR (clothing)
P2 L9	Training shoes with flashing lights in the heels			SA
P2 L9	Training shoes with flashing lights in the heels			SA
P2 L9	an argument			∅
P3 L10	the "flashing trainers" argument	P2 L9	an argument	DNF1a the
P3 L10	the pendulum			∅
P3 L10	the liberalism of the Seventies			∅
P4 L11	The wishiest of washy liberals			CR (politics)
P4 L11	favour of school uniform			SA
P4 L11	favour of school uniform	P2 L6	school uniform	L1a
P4 L11	they	P4 L11	The wishiest of washy liberals	P1
P4 L11	fashion one-up-personship			CR (clothing)
P4 L11	they	P4 L11	The wishiest of washy liberals	P1
P4 L11	all competitive sports			∅
P4 L12	children from poor families	P1 L2	Children	∅
P4 L12	children from poor families			SA
P4 L12	them	P4 L12	children from poor families	P1
P4 L12	designer labels			CR (clothing)
P4 L12	expensive Reeboks			CR (clothing)
P4 L13	they	P1 L2	Children	P1
P4 L13	Umbro			CR (clothing)
P4 L13	Nike			CR (clothing)
P4 L13	they	P1 L2	Children	P1
P4	Infants	P4	they	ETN "cease to be"

L13		L13		
P4 L13	Infants			CR (education)
P4 L13	Juniors	P4 L13	they	ETN "become"
P4 L13	Juniors			CR (education)
P4 L13	uniform	P4 L11	school uniform	L1a
P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	P2 L8	Mr Blunkett	L1a
P5 L14	the shift in mood	P3 L10	the liberalism of the Seventies	E1 (from the liberalism of the Seventies)
P5 L15	He	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	P1
P5 L15	leader of Sheffield council	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	ETN "was"
P5 L15	leader of Sheffield council			L2a
P5 L15	1981			ETE
P5 L15	its schools	P5 L15	leader of Sheffield council	P2
P5 L15	the wearing of uniforms			SA
P5 L15	the wearing of uniforms	P4 L11	favour of school uniform	L2a
P5 L16	his sons	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	P2
P5 L16	the comprehensive education system			CR (schools)
P5 L16	the more authoritarian and puritanical side of his personality			SA
P5 L16	the more authoritarian and puritanical side of his personality	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	P2
P5 L16	the fore			∅
P5 L17	a parent	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	NMDNF2a indefinite article
P5 L17	he	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	P1
P5 L17	uniforms in his sons' school in Sheffield	P5 L15	uniforms	L1a
P5 L17	uniforms in his sons' school in Sheffield	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	P2
P5 L17	uniforms in his sons' school in Sheffield	P5 L15	its schools	NMDNF3a his
P5 L18	yesterday			ETE
P5 L18	he	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	P1

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P5 L18	a Labour government			CR (politics)
P5 L18	parents			CR (schools)
P5 L18	compulsory uniforms	P4 L11	school uniform	L1a
P5 L18	all state primary and secondary schools			CR (schools)
P6 L19	Hillary Clinton			∅
P6 L19	the same ideological journey in America	PT	Previous Text (school uniforms)	NMDNF2a the same
P6 L19	the same ideological journey in America			SA
P6 L19	uniforms	P5 L18	compulsory uniforms	L1a
P6 L20	Most American schools			CR (schools)
P6 L20	dress codes			CR (clothing)
P6 L20	no knives			∅
P6 L20	the pants			CR (clothing)
P6 L20	that kind of thing			NMDNF2a that
P6 L20	she	P6 L19	Hillary Clinton	P1
P6 L20	the Democratic Convention			CR (American politics)
P6 L20	last year			ETE
P6 L20	she	P6 L19	Hillary Clinton	P1
P6 L20	school uniforms	P6 L19	uniforms	L1a
P7 L21	one other good argument in favour of school uniforms	P3 L10	the "flashing trainers" argument	DNF1c one other
P7 L21	one other good argument in favour of school uniforms	P6 L19	uniforms	L1a
P7 L21	one other good argument in favour of school uniforms			SAW
P7 L21	it is that pupils are more recognisable outside schools	P7 L21	one other good argument in favour of school uniforms	ETN "is"
P7 L21	pupils			CR (students)
P7 L21	schools			CR (schools)
P7 L21	a disincentive to truancy			SA

P7 L21	a disincentive to truancy			CR (schools)
P7 L21	teachers			CR (schools)
P7 L21	their charges	P7 L21	teachers	P2
P8 L22	for the rest			AP
P8 L22	arguments for and against	P7 L21	school uniforms	E1 (school uniforms)
P8 L23	A delightfully attractive but not at all compelling reason for having uniform	P8 L22	arguments for and against	∅
P8 L23	uniform	P7 L21	school uniforms	L1a
P8 L23	it	P8 L23	uniform	P1
P8 L23	pupils	P7 L21	pupils	L1a
P8 L23	something relatively harmless to rebel against			Cataphoric expression
P8 L24	breaking up phone boxes			L3
P8 L24	cutting up bus seats			L3
P8 L24	they	P8 L23	pupils	P1
P8 L24	their energies	P8 L23	pupils	P2
P8 L24	the biggest knot			CR (uniform)
P8 L24	the shortest wide bit			CR (uniform)
P8 L24	they	P8 L23	pupils	P1
P8 L24	their skirts	P8 L23	pupils	P2
P8 L24	the waistband			CR (uniform)
P9 L25	Poor arguments	P8 L22	arguments for and against	L1d
P9 L26	Getting rid of school uniforms			CR (uniform)
P9 L26	Getting rid of school uniforms			CR (uniform)
P9 L26	the blimpish right			CR (British politics)
P9 L26	the arrival of permissiveness			∅
P9 L26	casual clothes			CR (clothing)
P9	in school	P7	schools	L1a

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

L26		L21		
P9 L26	the distinction between teacher and pupil		teachers	SA
P9 L26	the distinction between teacher and pupil	P7 L21		L1a
P9 L26	the distinction between teacher and pupil	P8 L23		L1a
P9 L26	learning and sloth			∅
P9 L26	order and anarchy			∅
P9 L27	the marginal effect on pupils		the distinction between teacher and pupil in school	SA
P9 L27	the marginal effect on pupils	P9 L26		L1a
P9 L27	school	P9 L26		L1a
P9 L27	the rest of life	P9 L27	that school is different from the rest of life	ETN "is different from"
P9 L27	none of this			SA
P9 L27	none of this	P9 L25 P9 L26 P9 L27	Previous text	DPR this
P9 L27	scrutiny			∅
P9 L28	the Tory press			CR (British politics)
P9 L28	Mr Blunkett	P5 L14	Mr Blunkett	L1a
P9 L28	the most archaic forms of dress			CR (uniform)
P9 L28	in their nostalgic reverie of blazers and ties, gymslips and tunics	P9 L28	the Tory press	P2
P9 L28	in their nostalgic reverie of blazers and ties, gymslips and tunics			SA
P9 L28	in their nostalgic reverie of blazers and ties, gymslips and tunics			SA
P9 L28	in their nostalgic reverie of blazers and ties, gymslips and tunics			SA
P9 L28	in their nostalgic reverie of blazers and ties, gymslips and tunics			SA
P9 L29	the full Bufton Tufton Memorial kit			CR (uniform)
P9 L29	Blue Bolt			CR (clothing)

P9 L29	Calvin Klein			CR (clothing)
P9 L29	Fila			CR (clothing)
P9 L30	In practice			∅
P9 L30	most schools			L1d
P9 L30	a sensible balance between cost, practicality and smartness		uniform	SA
P9 L30	a sensible balance between cost, practicality and smartness	P8 L23		E1 (of uniforms)
P9 L31	Ties			CR (uniform)
P10 L32	The trouble with the wishy-washies			SA
P10 L32	The trouble with the wishy-washies	P4 L11	The wishiest of washy liberals	NMDNF2a the
P10 L32	they	P10 L32	The trouble with the wishy-washies	P1
P10 L32	a pick 'n' mix approach to uniforms			SA
P10 L32	a pick 'n' mix approach to uniforms	P8 L23	uniform	L1a
P10 L33	They	P10 L32	The trouble with the wishy-washies	P1
P10 L33	soft" uniforms	P10 L32	uniforms	L1a
P10 L33	many of the elements optional	P10 L32	uniforms	E1 (of uniforms)"
P10 L33	a tightened up dress code			CR (uniforms)
P10 L34	That	P10 L33	Previous sentence	DPR that
P10 L34	the point			∅
P10 L34	the obvious			∅
P10 L34	uniformity			CR (uniform)
P10 L35	Whatever			∅
P11 L36	That	P10 L35	Previous sentence	DPR that
P11 L36	our opinion			ER
P11 L36	it	P11 L36	our opinion	P1
P11 L36	Gillian Shephard's	P11 L36	our opinion	E1 (opinion)

Re-entry Patterns in British Broadsheet Editorials

P11 L36	it	P11 L36	our opinion	P1
P11 L36	David Blunkett's	P11 L36	our opinion	E1 (opinion)
P11 L37	the important point			∅
P11 L37	no government			CR (British politics)
P11 L37	these things	PT	Previous text	NMDNF2a these
P11 L38	parents	P5 L18	parents	L1a
P11 L38	staff			CR (school)
P11 L38	some degree			∅
P11 L38	pupils	P9 L27	pupils	L1a
P11 L39	a say			∅
P11 L39	a good way of encouraging responsibility			SA
P11 L39	a good way of encouraging responsibility	P11 L38	pupils	E1 (in pupils)
P11 L39	a uniform imposed by consent after debate	P10 L32	uniforms	DNF1a indefinite article
P11 L39	a uniform imposed by consent after debate			SA
P11 L39	a uniform imposed by consent after debate			SA
P12 L40	dress codes	P10 L33	a tightened up dress code	L1a
P12 L40	school uniforms	P10 L32	uniforms	L1a
P12 L40	flags and prayer in the United States			SA
P12 L40	flags and prayer in the United States			SA
P12 L40	flags and prayer in the United States	P6 L19	America	L5
P12 L40	peripheral matters	P12 L40	flags and prayer in the United States	ETN "are"
P12 L40	their symbolism	P12 L40	flags and prayer in the United States	P2
P12 L40	by politicians of all stripes			CR (politics)
P12 L40	the real issues that matter in education			SA
P12 L40	education			CR (school)
P12 L41	Pupils wearing uniforms	P11 L38	pupils	L1a

P12 L41	better teachers			CR (school)
P12 L41	they	P12 L41	Pupils wearing uniforms	P1
P12 L41	they	P12 L41	Pupils wearing uniforms	P1
P12 L41	a better climate for organising learning			SA
P12 L41	a better climate for organising learning			CR (school)
P12 L42	this	PT	Previous text	DPR this
P12 L42	a Monday morning before the election gets properly under way leading article	P12 L42	this	ETN "is"
P12 L42	the election			CR (politics)
P12 L42	the serious debate	P12 L42	the election	E1 (about the election)
P12 L42	Chris Woodhead			∅
P12 L42	15,000 teachers			CR (school)
P12 L42	Last week			ETE
P12 L42	his own inspectors	P12 L42	Chris Woodhead	P2
P12 L42	4,500 substandard ones	P12 L42	15,000 teachers	S1
P12 L42	he	P12 L42	Chris Woodhead	P1
P12 L42	his staff	P12 L42	Chris Woodhead	P2
P12 L42	their judgments	P12 L42	his staff	P2
P12 L44	all this fuss about school uniforms	PT	Previous text	NMDNF2a this
P12 L44	the Daily Mail			CR (newspapers)
P12 L44	its readers	P12 L44	the Daily Mail	P2
P12 L44	The Independent			CR (newspapers)
P12 L44	its leader writers	P12 L44	The Independent	P2
P12 L44	the crusade to raise standards			SA
P12 L44	the crusade to raise standards	P1 L2	their way in to school	E1 (in schools)



APPENDIX 3

EXCEL TABLES

	1		2		3		4	
	Guard		Tele		Times		Ind	
	Spin on		Backing		Const.		Cook	
	Pay		Boys		Clash		Recipe	
Total	628		513		550		953	
Paragraphs	4		5		7		13	
Word/Para	157		82,6		78		73	
Sentence	22		28		32		51	
Word/Sent	28,5454545		18,3214286		17,1875		18,6862745	
P1	10	1,59235669	8	1,55945419	5	0,90909091	21	2,20356768
	-0,20689655	-0,03113343	-2,20689655	-0,06403593	-5,20689655	-0,71439921	10,7931034	1,3573028
P2	6	0,95541401	7	1,36452242	3	0,54545455	12	1,25918153
	-1,48275862	-0,27298376	-0,48275862	0,13612464	-4,48275862	-0,68294323	4,51724138	0,03078376
P4	3	0,47770701	0	0	0	0	4	0,41972718
	2,68965517	0,43518869	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	3,68965517	0,37720886
L1a	19	3,02547771	18	3,50877193	6	1,09090909	18	1,8887723
	4,5862069	0,64426264	3,5862069	1,12755687	-8,4137931	-1,29030597	3,5862069	-0,49244276
L1b	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628
L2a	3	0,47770701	4	0,7797271	4	0,72727273	1	0,10493179
	-0,86206897	-0,18591128	0,13793103	0,11610881	0,13793103	0,06365444	-2,86206897	-0,55868649
L3	3	0,47770701	0	0	4	0,72727273	14	1,46904512
	-1,37931034	-0,23821164	-4,37931034	-0,71591865	-0,37931034	0,01135408	9,62068966	0,75312647
L5a	0	0	1	0,19493177	0	0	4	0,41972718
	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	0,4137931	0,11040652	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	3,4137931	0,33520192
DNF1a	5	0,79617834	4	0,7797271	5	0,90909091	19	1,99370409
	-0,86206897	-0,16687748	-1,86206897	-0,18332873	-0,86206897	-0,05396491	13,137931	1,03064827
DNF1c	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369
DNF2a	13	2,07006369	9	1,75438596	10	1,81818182	13	1,36411333
	3,82758621	0,48845992	-0,17241379	0,17278219	0,82758621	0,23657804	3,82758621	-0,21749045
DNF2c	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	-0,55172414	-0,09105132
DNF3a	0	0	0	0	2	0,36363636	0	0
	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	1,75862069	0,31998649	-0,24137931	-0,04364988
DNF5a	0	0	1	0,19493177	1	0,18181818	2	0,20986359
	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	0,86206897	0,17470372	0,86206897	0,16159013	1,86206897	0,18963554
PRO	2	0,31847134	0	0	1	0,18181818	1	0,10493179
	1,48275862	0,23283444	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	0,48275862	0,09618128	0,48275862	0,0192949
E1	8	1,27388535	3	0,58479532	9	1,63636364	10	1,04931794
	1,27586207	0,15824194	-3,72413793	-0,53084809	2,27586207	0,52072023	3,27586207	-0,06632546
DPR	0	0	6	1,16959064	2	0,36363636	5	0,52465897
	-2,27586207	-0,3636969	3,72413793	0,80589375	-0,27586207	-6,0534E-05	2,72413793	0,16096207
C1	0	0	1	0,19493177	0	0	1	0,10493179
	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	0,55172414	0,11755938	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	0,55172414	0,0275594
C2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039
S1	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0,10493179
	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	0,68965517	0,05711285
S2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358
Total	72		62		52		126	
Lex. Density	11,4649682		12,08577		9,45454545		13,2214061	
	0,24845336		0,86925519		-1,76196933		2,0048913	

5		6		7		8		9
Guard		Tele		Independ		Times		Guard
Edging		Fight		Pressure		Going,		Guessing
Euro		Battle		Parties		Going		Milosevic
513		519		917		573		498
3		4		10		4		2
171		129		91,7		143,25		249
20		23		42		18		19
25,65		22,5652174		21,83333333		31,83333333		26,2105263
7	1,36452242	10	1,92678227	7	0,76335878	9	1,57068063	14
-3,20689655	-0,2589677	-0,20689655	0,30329215	-3,20689655	-0,86013134	-1,20689655	-0,05280949	3,79310345
2	0,38986355	5	0,96339114	7	0,76335878	7	1,22164049	5
-5,48275862	-0,83853423	-2,48275862	-0,26500664	-0,48275862	-0,465039	-0,48275862	-0,00675729	-2,48275862
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483
17	3,31384016	9	1,73410405	6	0,65430752	12	2,09424084	12
2,5862069	0,93262509	-5,4137931	-0,64711102	-8,4137931	-1,72690754	-2,4137931	-0,28697423	-2,4137931
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207
3	0,58479532	1	0,19267823	2	0,21810251	1	0,17452007	1
-0,86206897	-0,07882297	-2,86206897	-0,47094006	-1,86206897	-0,44551578	-2,86206897	-0,48909822	-2,86206897
3	0,58479532	5	0,96339114	12	1,30861505	3	0,52356021	2
-1,37931034	-0,13112333	0,62068966	0,24747249	7,62068966	0,5926964	-1,37931034	-0,19235844	-2,37931034
1	0,19493177	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
0,4137931	0,11040652	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	-0,5862069
6	1,16959064	5	0,96339114	2	0,21810251	3	0,52356021	3
0,13793103	0,20653482	-0,86206897	0,00033531	-3,86206897	-0,74495331	-2,86206897	-0,43949561	-2,86206897
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276
4	0,7797271	7	1,34874759	13	1,4176663	12	2,09424084	13
-5,17241379	-0,80187668	-2,17241379	-0,23285619	3,82758621	-0,16393747	2,82758621	0,51263706	3,82758621
0	0	0	0	2	0,21810251	1	0,17452007	0
-0,55172414	-0,09105132	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	1,44827586	0,12705119	0,44827586	0,08346875	-0,55172414
0	0	1	0,19267823	0	0	1	0,17452007	0
-0,24137931	-0,04364988	0,75862069	0,14902835	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	0,75862069	0,13087019	-0,24137931
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103
0	0	0	0	1	0,10905125	0	0	1
-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	0,48275862	0,02341436	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	0,48275862
15	2,92397661	4	0,77071291	5	0,54525627	8	1,39616056	5
8,27586207	1,8083332	-2,72413793	-0,3449305	-1,72413793	-0,57038714	1,27586207	0,28051715	-1,72413793
3	0,58479532	2	0,38535645	7	0,76335878	2	0,34904014	0
0,72413793	0,22109842	-0,27586207	0,02165956	4,72413793	0,39966188	-0,27586207	-0,01465676	-2,27586207
0	0	1	0,19267823	1	0,10905125	0	0	0
-0,44827586	-0,07737239	0,55172414	0,11530583	0,55172414	0,03167886	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	-0,44827586
0	0	0	0	1	0,10905125	0	0	0
-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	0,96551724	0,10529087	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276
0	0	0	0	0	0	2	0,34904014	0
-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	1,68965517	0,30122119	-0,31034483
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103
61		50		66		61		56
11,8908382		9,63391137		7,19738277		10,6457243		11,2449799
0,67432342		-1,58260342		-4,01913202		-0,57079053		0,02846513

	10		11		12		13	
	Tele		Guard		Times		Guard	
	Have the		High		Irrivers		Kids	
	Debate		Minded		Opt-in		Alone	
	572		516		567		619	
	6		3		5		4	
	95,3333333		172		113,4		154	
	29		22		22		32	
	19,7241379		23,4545455		25,7727273		19,34375	
2,81124498	17	2,97202797	2	0,3875969	4	0,70546737	8	1,29240711
1,18775486	6,79310345	1,34853785	-8,20689655	-1,23589322	-6,20689655	-0,91802275	-2,20689655	-0,33108301
1,00401606	11	1,92307692	5	0,96899225	9	1,58730159	6	0,96930533
-0,22438171	3,51724138	0,69467915	-2,48275862	-0,25940553	1,51724138	0,35890381	-1,48275862	-0,25909244
0	1	0,17482517	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,04251831	0,68965517	0,13230686	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831
2,40963855	21	3,67132867	12	2,3255814	19	3,35097002	10	1,61550889
0,02842349	6,5862069	1,29011361	-2,4137931	-0,05563367	4,5862069	0,96975495	-4,4137931	-0,76570618
0	0	0	1	0,19379845	0	0	1	0,16155089
-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	0,72413793	0,14601217	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	0,72413793	0,11376461
0,20080321	4	0,6993007	5	0,96899225	5	0,88183422	9	1,453958
-0,46281507	0,13793103	0,03568241	1,13793103	0,30537396	1,13793103	0,21821593	5,13793103	0,79033971
0,40160643	3	0,52447552	8	1,5503876	4	0,70546737	6	0,96930533
-0,31431222	-1,37931034	-0,19144313	3,62068966	0,83446895	-0,37931034	-0,01045128	1,62068966	0,25338668
0	0	0	1	0,19379845	1	0,17636684	0	0
-0,08452525	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	0,4137931	0,1092732	0,4137931	0,09184159	-0,5862069	-0,08452525
0,60240964	0	0	7	1,35658915	11	1,94003527	2	0,32310178
-0,36064618	-5,86206897	-0,96305582	1,13793103	0,39353332	5,13793103	0,97697945	-3,86206897	-0,63995405
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369
2,61044177	9	1,57342657	9	1,74418605	5	0,88183422	7	1,13085622
1,02883799	-0,17241379	-0,0081772	-0,17241379	0,16258227	-4,17241379	-0,69976956	-2,17241379	-0,45074756
0	0	0	0	0	1	0,17636684	0	0
-0,09105132	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	0,44827586	0,08531552	-0,55172414	-0,09105132
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805
0,20080321	1	0,17482517	0	0	0	0	0	0
0,11516631	0,48275862	0,08918828	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369
1,00401606	5	0,87412587	2	0,3875969	3	0,52910053	10	1,61550889
-0,11162734	-1,72413793	-0,24151753	-4,72413793	-0,72804651	-3,72413793	-0,58654288	3,27586207	0,49986548
0	2	0,34965035	3	0,58139535	0	0	1	0,16155089
-0,3636969	-0,27586207	-0,01404655	0,72413793	0,21769845	-2,27586207	-0,3636969	-1,27586207	-0,20214601
0	1	0,17482517	1	0,19379845	0	0	0	0
-0,07737239	0,55172414	0,09745278	0,55172414	0,11642606	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	-0,44827586	-0,07737239
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039
0	0	0	2	0,3875969	0	0	0	0
-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	1,68965517	0,33977795	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358
	75		58		62		60	
	13,1118881		11,2403101		10,9347443		9,69305331	
	1,89537332		0,02379529		-0,28177052		-1,52346148	

14		15		16		17		18
Tele		Times		Tele		Independ		Times
Labour		Labour		Lords		Mental		Milosovic
top		inspector		Target		Illness		& Friends
515		605		433		955		580
6		8		4		11		7
85,8333333		75,625		108,25		86,8181818		82,8571429
26		25		16		42		20
19,8076923		24,2		27,0625		22,7380952		29
13	2,52427184	11	1,81818182	8	1,84757506	15	1,57068063	13
2,79310345	0,90078173	0,79310345	0,1946917	-2,20689655	0,22408494	4,79310345	-0,05280949	2,79310345
8	1,55339806	11	1,81818182	4	0,92378753	6	0,62827225	13
0,51724138	0,32500028	3,51724138	0,58978404	-3,48275862	-0,30461025	-1,48275862	-0,60012552	5,51724138
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483
8	1,55339806	20	3,30578512	2	0,46189376	7	0,73298429	16
-6,4137931	-0,827817	5,5862069	0,92457006	-12,4137931	-1,9193213	-7,4137931	-1,64823077	1,5862069
1	0,19417476	2	0,33057851	1	0,23094688	0	0	0
0,72413793	0,14638848	1,72413793	0,28279224	0,72413793	0,18316061	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207
8	1,55339806	5	0,82644628	4	0,92378753	3	0,31413613	8
4,13793103	0,88977977	1,13793103	0,16282799	0,13793103	0,26016924	-0,86206897	-0,34948216	4,13793103
8	1,55339806	8	1,32231405	2	0,46189376	1	0,10471204	8
3,62068966	0,83747941	3,62068966	0,6063954	-2,37931034	-0,25402489	-3,37931034	-0,61120661	3,62068966
1	0,19417476	1	0,16528926	0	0	2	0,20942408	0
0,4137931	0,1096495	0,4137931	0,080764	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	1,4137931	0,12489883	-0,5862069
2	0,38834951	8	1,32231405	7	1,61662818	12	1,2565445	2
-3,86206897	-0,57470631	2,13793103	0,35925823	1,13793103	0,65357235	6,13793103	0,29348868	-3,86206897
0	0	0	0	1	0,23094688	0	0	0
-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	0,96551724	0,2229832	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276
9	1,74757282	5	0,82644628	10	2,30946882	5	0,52356021	7
-0,17241379	0,16596904	-4,17241379	-0,7551575	0,82758621	0,72786505	-4,17241379	-1,05804357	-2,17241379
1	0,19417476	1	0,16528926	0	0	1	0,10471204	1
0,44827586	0,10312343	0,44827586	0,07423793	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	0,44827586	0,01366072	0,44827586
1	0,19417476	0	0	1	0,23094688	0	0	0
0,75862069	0,15052488	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	0,75862069	0,18729701	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103
1	0,19417476	2	0,33057851	0	0	0	0	0
0,48275862	0,10853786	1,48275862	0,24494161	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138
1	0,19417476	6	0,99173554	6	1,38568129	9	0,94240838	7
-5,72413793	-0,92146865	-0,72413793	-0,12390787	-0,72413793	0,27003789	2,27586207	-0,17323503	0,27586207
5	0,97087379	2	0,33057851	1	0,23094688	5	0,52356021	1
2,72413793	0,60717689	-0,27586207	-0,03311839	-1,27586207	-0,13275002	2,72413793	0,15986331	-1,27586207
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1
-0,44827586	-0,07737239	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	0,55172414
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276
0	0	2	0,33057851	0	0	1	0,10471204	0
-0,31034483	-0,04781895	1,68965517	0,28275956	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	0,68965517	0,05689309	-0,31034483
0	0	0	0	2	0,46189376	0	0	0
-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	1,86206897	0,43433018	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103
67		84		49		67		77
13,0097087		13,8842975		11,3163972		7,01570681		13,2758621
1,79319395		2,66778273		0,09988244		-4,20080798		2,05934728

	19		20		21		22	
	Tele		Guard		Tele		Times	
	Milosovic		Nawaz		Pakistan		Pakistan's	
	at Bay		Sharif		Fails		portunity	
	401		622		486		584	
	5		4		5		6	
	80,2		155,5		97,2		97,3333333	
	13		24		23		22	
	30,8461538		25,9166667		21,1304348		26,5454545	
2,24137931	3	0,74812968	16	2,57234727	3	0,61728395	12	2,05479452
0,61788919	-7,20689655	-0,87536044	5,79310345	0,94885715	-7,20689655	-1,00620617	1,79310345	0,4313044
2,24137931	9	2,24438903	15	2,41157556	4	0,82304527	10	1,71232877
1,01298153	1,51724138	1,01599125	7,51724138	1,18317779	-3,48275862	-0,40535251	2,51724138	0,48393099
0	0	0	1	0,1607717	0	0	0	0
-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	0,68965517	0,11825339	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831
2,75862069	6	1,49625935	21	3,37620579	8	1,64609053	17	2,9109589
0,37740563	-8,4137931	-0,88495571	6,5862069	0,99499072	-6,4137931	-0,73512453	2,5862069	0,52974384
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0,17123288
-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	0,72413793	0,1234466
1,37931034	0	0	1	0,1607717	6	1,2345679	2	0,34246575
0,71569206	-3,86206897	-0,66361829	-2,86206897	-0,50284658	2,13793103	0,57094961	-1,86206897	-0,32115253
1,37931034	2	0,49875312	0	0	11	2,26337449	3	0,51369863
0,6633917	-2,37931034	-0,21716553	-4,37931034	-0,71591865	6,62068966	1,54745584	-1,37931034	-0,20222002
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,08452525	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	-0,5862069	-0,08452525
0,34482759	7	1,74563591	9	1,44694534	4	0,82304527	5	0,85616438
-0,61822824	1,13793103	0,78258009	3,13793103	0,48388952	-1,86206897	-0,14001055	-0,86206897	-0,10689144
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369
1,20689655	10	2,49376559	6	0,96463023	9	1,85185185	10	1,71232877
-0,37470722	0,82758621	0,91216181	-3,17241379	-0,61697355	-0,17241379	0,27024808	0,82758621	0,13072499
0,17241379	0	0	1	0,1607717	0	0	0	0
0,08136247	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	0,44827586	0,06972038	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	-0,55172414	-0,09105132
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0,17123288
-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	0,48275862	0,08559598
1,20689655	3	0,74812968	4	0,64308682	8	1,64609053	14	2,39726027
0,09125314	-3,72413793	-0,36751373	-2,72413793	-0,47255659	1,27586207	0,53044713	7,27586207	1,28161687
0,17241379	1	0,24937656	2	0,32154341	1	0,20576132	3	0,51369863
-0,1912831	-1,27586207	-0,11432034	-0,27586207	-0,04215349	-1,27586207	-0,15793558	0,72413793	0,15000173
0,17241379	1	0,24937656	0	0	0	0	0	0
0,0950414	0,55172414	0,17200417	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	-0,44827586	-0,07737239
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895
0	0	0	1	0,1607717	0	0	0	0
-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	0,86206897	0,13320812	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358
	42		77		54		78	
	10,4738155		12,3794212		11,1111111		13,3561644	
	-0,74269933		1,16290643		-0,10540368		2,13964959	

23		24		25		26		27
Tele		Independ		Times		Times		Guard
Poison		Muffled		Stand by		Cook		Double
Live		& unclear		Rock		Currency		Sword
437		966		566		640		522
4		9		7		8		4
109,25		107,333333		80,8571429		80		130,5
23		45		26		33		22
19		21,4666667		21,7692308		19,3939394		23,7272727
4	0,91533181	24	2,48447205	12	2,12014134	7	1,09375	7
-6,20689655	-0,70815831	13,7931034	0,86098193	1,79310345	0,49665122	-3,20689655	-0,52974012	-3,20689655
6	1,37299771	13	1,34575569	4	0,70671378	6	0,9375	3
-1,48275862	0,14459994	5,51724138	0,11735792	-3,48275862	-0,52168399	-1,48275862	-0,29089778	-4,48275862
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483
6	1,37299771	17	1,75983437	30	5,30035336	34	5,3125	5
-8,4137931	-1,00821735	2,5862069	-0,62138069	15,5862069	2,91913829	19,5862069	2,93128494	-9,4137931
0	0	1	0,10351967	0	0	0	0	0
-0,27586207	-0,04778628	0,72413793	0,05573339	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207
3	0,68649886	5	0,51759834	6	1,06007067	8	1,25	0
-0,86206897	0,02288057	1,13793103	-0,14601994	2,13793103	0,39645238	4,13793103	0,58638171	-3,86206897
1	0,22883295	6	0,62111801	0	0	4	0,625	0
-3,37931034	-0,4870857	1,62068966	-0,09480064	-4,37931034	-0,71591865	-0,37931034	-0,09091865	-4,37931034
0	0	1	0,10351967	1	0,17667845	2	0,3125	0
-0,5862069	-0,08452525	0,4137931	0,01899442	0,4137931	0,09215319	1,4137931	0,22797475	-0,5862069
1	0,22883295	9	0,93167702	9	1,59010601	7	1,09375	7
-4,86206897	-0,73422287	3,13793103	-0,0313788	3,13793103		1,13793103	0,13069418	1,13793103
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	0,62705018	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276
10	2,28832952	11	1,13871636	14	2,47349823	11	1,71875	9
0,82758621	0,70672574	1,82758621	-0,44288742	4,82758621	0,89189446	1,82758621	0,13714622	-0,17241379
3	0,68649886	1	0,10351967	0	0	1	0,15625	0
2,44827586	0,59544753	0,44827586	0,01246835	-0,55172414	-0,09105132	0,44827586	0,06519868	-0,55172414
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	-0,24137931
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103
1	0,22883295	0	0	0	0	3	0,46875	0
0,48275862	0,14319605	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	2,48275862	0,3831131	-0,51724138
6	1,37299771	8	0,82815735	4	0,70671378	15	2,34375	2
-0,72413793	0,2573543	1,27586207	-0,28748606	-2,72413793	-0,40892963	8,27586207	1,22810659	-4,72413793
1	0,22883295	1	0,10351967	0	0	2	0,3125	2
-1,27586207	-0,13486395	-1,27586207	-0,26017723	-2,27586207	-0,3636969	-0,27586207	-0,0511969	-0,27586207
1	0,22883295	1	0,10351967	0	0	0	0	1
0,55172414	0,15146056	0,55172414	0,02614728	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	-0,44827586	-0,07737239	0,55172414
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276
0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	-0,31034483
0	0	0	0	1	0,17667845	0	0	0
-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	0,86206897	0,14911486	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103
43		98		81		100	15,625	36
9,83981693		10,1449275		14,3109541		15,625		6,89655172
-1,37669786		-1,07158725		3,09443927		4,40848521		-4,31996307

	28		29			
	Guard		Independ			
	Role of		Uniforms			
	University		Yes			
	610		910			
	4		12			
	152,5		75,8333333		AVERAGE	AVERAGE
	30		44		NUMBER	LEXICAL
	20,3333333		20,6818182		ITEMS	DENSITY
1,34099617	4	0,6557377	22	2,41758242	10,2068966	1,62349012
-0,28249395	-6,20689655	-0,96775241	11,7931034	0,7940923		
0,57471264	4	0,6557377	16	1,75824176	7,48275862	1,22839778
-0,65368513	-3,48275862	-0,57266007	8,51724138	0,52984398		
0	0	0	0	0	0,31034483	0,04251831
-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831	-0,31034483	-0,04251831		
0,95785441	15	2,45901639	27	2,96703297	14,4137931	2,38121506
-1,42336066	0,5862069	0,07780133	12,5862069	0,5858179		
0	0	0	0	0	0,27586207	0,04778628
-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628	-0,27586207	-0,04778628		
0	8	1,31147541	2	0,21978022	3,86206897	0,66361829
-0,66361829	4,13793103	0,64785712	-1,86206897	-0,44383807		
0	6	0,98360656	0	0	4,37931034	0,71591865
-0,71591865	1,62068966	0,26768791	-4,37931034	-0,71591865		
0	0	0	1	0,10989011	0,5862069	0,08452525
-0,08452525	-0,5862069	-0,08452525	0,4137931	0,02536486		
1,34099617	7	1,14754098	2	0,21978022	5,86206897	0,96305582
	1,13793103	0,18448516	-3,86206897	-0,7432756		
0	0	0	0	0	0,03448276	0,00796369
0,37794035	-0,03448276	-0,00796369	-0,03448276	-0,00796369		
1,72413793	10	1,63934426	6	0,65934066	9,17241379	1,58160378
0,14253415	0,82758621	0,05774049	-3,17241379	-0,92226312		
0	2	0,32786885	0	0	0,55172414	0,09105132
-0,09105132	1,44827586	0,23681753	-0,55172414	-0,09105132		
0	0	0	1	0,10989011	0,24137931	0,04364988
-0,04364988	-0,24137931	-0,04364988	0,75862069	0,06624023		
0	0	0	0	0	0,13793103	0,02022805
-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805	-0,13793103	-0,02022805		
0	0	0	0	0	0,51724138	0,0856369
-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369	-0,51724138	-0,0856369		
0,38314176	6	0,98360656	9	0,98901099	6,72413793	1,11564341
-0,73250165	-0,72413793	-0,13203685	2,27586207	-0,12663242		
0,38314176	2	0,32786885	4	0,43956044	2,27586207	0,3636969
0,01944486	-0,27586207	-0,03582805	1,72413793	0,07586354		
0,19157088	2	0,32786885	0	0	0,44827586	0,07737239
0,11419849	1,55172414	0,25049646	-0,44827586	-0,07737239		
0	0	0	0	0	0,03448276	0,00376039
-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039	-0,03448276	-0,00376039		
0	0	0	1	0,10989011	0,31034483	0,04781895
-0,04781895	-0,31034483	-0,04781895	0,68965517	0,06207116		
0	0	0	0	0	0,13793103	0,02756358
-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358	-0,13793103	-0,02756358		
	66		91		AVERAGE	
	10,8196721		10		11,2165148	
	-0,39684266		-1,21651479			